





Thomas Michael Loome

*[Faint, illegible handwritten text]*







TRACTS FOR THE TIMES.

VOL. III.

LONDON:  
PRINTED BY GILBERT AND RIVINGTON,  
ST. JOHN'S SQUARE.



# TRACTS FOR THE TIMES.

---

BY

MEMBERS OF THE UNIVERSITY OF OXFORD.

---

VOL. III.

FOR

1835-6.

---

“ If the trumpet give an uncertain sound, who shall prepare himself to the battle?”

---

NEW EDITION.

---

LONDON :

PRINTED FOR J. G. F. & J. RIVINGTON,  
ST. PAUL'S CHURCH YARD, AND WATERLOO PLACE, PALL MALL;  
& J. H. PARKER, OXFORD.

---

1840.



## ADVERTISEMENT.

---

THE present Volume will be found to persevere in the change of plan adopted in the latter part of the Second, the substitution of Tracts of considerable extent of subject for the short and incomplete papers with which the publication commenced. The reason of this change is to be found in the altered circumstances under which they now make their appearance. When the series began, the prospects of Catholic Truth were especially gloomy, from the circumstance that irreligious principles and false doctrines, which had hitherto been avowed only in the closet or on paper, had just been admitted into public measures on a large scale, with a probability of that admission becoming a precedent for future. A great proportion of the Irish Sees had been suppressed by the State against the Church's wish, all parties who were concerned to resist the measure, acquiescing either in utter apathy or in despair. Scarcely a protesting voice was heard, and the attempt to remonstrate was treated on all hands with coldness and disapprobation. A sense of the dreariness of such a state of things naturally led to those anxious appeals and abrupt sketches of doc-

trine with which the Tracts opened. They were written with the hope of rousing members of our Church to comprehend her alarming position, of helping them to realize the fact of the gradual growth, allowance, and establishment of unsound principles in the management of her internal concerns; and, having this object, they spontaneously used the language of alarm and complaint. They were written, as a man might give notice of a fire or inundation, to startle all who heard him, with only so much of doctrine and argument as might be necessary to account for their publication, or might answer more obvious objections to the views therein advocated.

This peculiarity in their composition has occasioned them to be censured as intemperate and violent. If this be true in such sense that they discovered any personal feeling, bitterness, wrath, want of candour, unkindness, or reviling, of course nothing can be said in their defence. Or, if they contain an extravagant doctrine, crudely imagined, confusedly or hastily expressed, and unsanctioned by our standard Divines, then, too, they are entitled to very little respect. But if the charge of intemperance simply means that they contain strong expressions upon high and delicate matters, suddenly introduced, unexplained, and therefore obscure and harsh, though not intrinsically erroneous, then by intemperance is meant nothing else than want of judgment. Want of judgment, however, is commonly imputed to proceedings which tend to defeat their object, though allowable in themselves, and based upon true principles; and if so, the style of the Tracts in question is *not*

injudicious, for their object has *not* been defeated. Naked statements, which offend the accurate and cautious, are necessary upon occasions to infuse seriousness into the indifferent.

These are the reasons, whether satisfactory or not in the judgment of others, for the style and manner of the earlier Tracts. When, however, from the circumstances of the times or from other causes, more interest seemed to be excited among Churchmen concerning those doctrines which it was their object to enforce, discussion became more seasonable than the simple statements of doctrine with which the series began; and their character accordingly changed.

It would be unbecoming to go into this detail in this place, were not a prejudice entertained against these Tracts by many who know them only by a few detached sentences, complete indeed in themselves, and on the whole not unfairly selected, but which, so detached, will not be understood in their true sense and bearings by readers unacquainted with the language of our old divinity. Dr. Pusey's valuable Pamphlet in answer to one objector, is, with the kind consent of the Author, appended to this Advertisement.

OXFORD,

*The Feast of All Saints, 1836.*



NOTE TO THE ADVERTISEMENT.

---

The following is Dr. PUSEY's answer to an Anonymous Pamphlet, reflecting on these Tracts, which appeared in the end of March 1836. The Pamphlet professed to be a "Pastoral Epistle from the Pope to some Members of the University of Oxford." Dr. PUSEY's answer was entitled "An Earnest Remonstrance to the Author of the Pope's Letter," &c. Tract 74 was added to it as an Appendix. Two extracts have been added by the Author in the second reprint.

---

SIR,—Two reasons induce me to appeal to you, in reference to your recent Letter: First, that I have escaped your censures: Secondly, that (if report speaks right) you are one from whose straight-forwardness, sincerity, and love of truth, I once anticipated much. In both ways, therefore, I am freed from the risk of personal feelings.

I would, then, regard you as the representative of a certain class (as every one is, more or less); and would direct my observations to an evil prevalent in these times, not to you. That evil (and there could scarcely be a greater) is the use of banter and jest in things serious. It is true that the minds of a large portion of our countrymen seem to have become so inured to this, that persons have even despaired of addressing them, except in a tone even lower than that low tone to which they have sunk. It is true, that even among the better-instructed orders, persons, in their degree serious-minded, have often thought themselves obliged to condescend to the conventional language of the day, as their only

hope to gain a hearing. It is true, also, that the appetite has grown with its unwholesome nourishment; and now, as by a self-created necessity, all seem to be absorbed into the tide; and it is rare to find any cause advocated in the plain, open, straightforward tone which was once the characteristic of our land. Not simply our periodical literature, or our journals, but our courts of law, and that branch of the legislature which is liable to be affected by popular taste, are infected by the mal-aria of this destructive habit. Man's happiness, or God's displeasure, domestic misery or national sin, are continually a jest. Adultery, fornication, theft, drunkenness, lying, are daily matters of sport. If justice is to be perverted, men's minds blinded, sin to escape unpunished, a jest is the refuge; caricatures are the vehicles of public instruction, and "a mock at sin" the source of public amusement.

It is indeed strange, and a lamentable part of this sad merriment, that many right-minded people are so little sickened at it, or so little express their weariness. But so it is with every other prevailing sin; those who live amidst it are, in their several degrees, infected by it: the fineness of our moral perceptions is blunted by the very acquaintance with sin, all mention whereof we at first loathed; our ears become untuned to the chords of Heaven, by listening constantly to the jarring sounds of earth, and are less offended by their discordancy. Most men feel themselves compelled to an over-acquaintance with the things of the day, and so are insensibly inured to its wretchedness, and deem it irremediable. They are indeed mistaken; the more earnest spirit is not fled: it sleeps only, or rather is drugged by these continued poisonous appliances; and brighter days may yet come, when our countrymen shall again be spoken to, not as members of a vast machine, or as the slaves of temporal interests, but as responsible immortal agents, as Christians, as members of Christ the Son of God.

It is one consolation, that if all our outward privileges, yea, every thing except truth, be lost, then the temptation of ap-



pealing to any other principle but truth and holiness, will be removed also.

There however have been, in many cases, worldly things, treated of by men of this world: a pernicious principle was admitted; but the source of truth and holy earnestness was not yet poisoned; banter had not yet been employed upon things Divine. This is now inadvertently commenced, and the more dangerously because inadvertently. Hitherto it had scarcely been found except among Infidels.

I would then, Sir, request you for a while to lay aside the thoughts of the amusement which your Letter has caused to yourself or others, and to consider in earnestness some of the evils into which it has betrayed you, and may and must betray others. I will confine myself to three:—

1. Irreverent treatment of holy things.
2. Sacrifice of truth.
3. False insinuation, and consequently slandering.

And these I impute, not to yourself: on the contrary, I think that, in your natural character, you would be very far from them. I would speak of them only as inseparable consequences of the line which you have taken.

**I. IRREVERENCE.**—It may suffice, Sir, to mention some of the subjects which were necessarily brought into your ill-advised jest.

1. Persons' belief as to our Lord's presence in the Communion.

2. The mode in which the Commission ordained for the preaching and maintenance of the everlasting Gospel has been continued to this day.

3. The maintenance of the form of our public worship, and the doctrines therein contained.

4. The comfort which the dying Christian obtains from the provisions of our Church.

5. The unity of the Church of Christ.

6. The authority of His bishops, or of His Church.

7. The quiet frame of mind of a simple, undisputing Christian.

It is not here the question, whether any of the writers whom you ridicule, over-stated the truth upon any of these points. I am convinced that they have not. But granting that they had, is ridicule a safe, a Christian, a godly, weapon to employ in such matters? Is it possible that those who should have been thereby made ashamed of, or scared from, any of those statements, would approach the consideration of the truth itself with that deep and considerate earnestness and reverence of mind which the subject requires,—if, indeed, you yet hold that there be any truth at all connected even with these subjects? Is it not too probable that the infection of this ridicule will extend to other truths; some of which, I presume, you would not wish to see thus assailed? since the efficacy of Baptism, the strengthening of the believer's soul by the Body and Blood of his Lord in the holy Eucharist, the Divinity of our Redeemer, and His sacrifice for sin, have been, and still are by some, represented as relics of Popery? The Socinians, and, more recently, the Rationalists of Germany, regarded or represented themselves as carrying on the work of the first Reformers, in purging Christianity from Papal corruptions.

Ridicule cannot be employed with impunity as a test of truth: error and truth often lie so closely together, nay, most religious error has so much of truth mingled up with it, that the very love of truth ought to preclude the use of jesting; not to say that the fearfulness of the subject, and the majesty of Almighty God, might well instinctively awe man into sobriety. For, through this close connexion of truth and error, mire cannot be cast at error, without defiling the truth also. To take the most palpable errors,—Could a man jest at Transubstantiation, and not thereby unfit his mind for the reception of the holy mystery of the Communion? or would not a mocking at the false doctrine of the Mediation of the Saints lower

men's notions of their high and holy state? or has not the jesting, even at the most unreal delusions of the imagination, injured men's faith in the influences of God's Blessed Spirit? Throughout, Sir, we are standing upon holy ground; and it besseems us to pull the shoes from off our feet, and tread reverently. Let error be removed as a disease, gently handling those who suffer under it, or repressing those who wilfully propagate it; but let us not sport with the Enemy of men's souls.

This subject, however, has been handled by one to whose talents you would perhaps pay deference,—Bp. Warburton; and to him I would refer you. He has not indeed the earnestness or depth of the writers of the seventeenth century, yet he states facts which it were well for this age to lay to heart. For we are now reaping the harvest which the infidels of his day sowed; only in his times men yet looked to principles—in these they regard only their practical efficiency in carrying a point: then the evil was without, now it is admitted within the Church. I will now, then, request your attention to a few extracts only from his Address to the Freethinkers, to whom he dedicates the first three books of the Divine Legation.

“Your writers offer your considerations to the world, either under the character of petitioners for oppressed and injured truth, or of teachers to ignorant and erring men. These sure are characters that, if any, require seriousness and gravity to support them. But so great strangers are we to decorum on our entry on the stage of life, that, for the most part, we run giddily on, in a mixed and jumbled character; but have most an end, a strong inclination to make a farce of it, and mingle buffoonery with the most serious scenes. Hence, even in religious controversy, while the great cause of eternal happiness is trying, and men and angels, as it were, attending the issue of the conflict, we can find room for a merry story.—

“This quality [of making men laugh] causing the writer to be so well received, yours have been tempted to dispense with the solemnity of their character, as thinking it of much importance to get the laugh on their side. Hence *ridicule* is become their favourite figure of speech.—It is inconceivable what havoc false wit makes in a foolish head. ‘The rabble of mankind,’ as an excellent writer [Addison] well observes, ‘being very apt to think, that every thing which is laughed at, with any mixture of wit, is ridiculous in itself.’ Few reflect on what a great wit [Wycherly] has so ingeniously owned, ‘*that wit is generally false reasoning.*’—

“To see what little good is to be expected in this way of wit and humour, one may go further, and observe, that even the ridicule of false virtue hath been sometimes attended with mischievous effects. The Spaniards have lamented, and I believe truly, that Cervantes’s just and inimitable ridicule of *knight-errantry* rooted up, with that folly, a great deal of their *real honour*. And it was apparent that Butler’s fine satire on *fanaticism* contributed not a little, during the licentious times of Charles II., to bring *sober piety* into disrepute. The reason is evident: there are many lines of resemblance between truth and its counterfeits; and it is the province of *wit* only to find out the *likenesses* in things, and not the talent of the *common admirers of it* to discover the *differences*.”

But if these evils result from ridiculing religious error, what shall be said, if what you have ridiculed be after all the truth? And yet, because ultra-Protestants of the present day think any truth to approximate to Popery, it follows not that it is Popish, or if found in Popery, it follows not that it is untrue, else must all the Catholic verities be untrue also. Whenever you shall be pleased to abandon the ground of ridicule, and to treat questions of religious truth with seriousness, then will we also show, that the positions which you have ridiculed are neither Papistical nor untrue, but that you have been ridiculing the truth. Meanwhile we propose for your consideration a catalogue<sup>1</sup> of writers (which might easily be swelled to any amount), who, upon the subject which you have chosen for your chiefest ridicule, and which ultra-Protestants of this day are most ashamed of, have spoken as strongly as they, whom you on that ground decry as Papists: I mean, Apostolical Succession.

I would only observe by the way, since persons in these days dispense lightly with truths, the value whereof they do not understand, that in jesting at the doctrine of apostolical succession you despise a fact, wherein one of the acutest writers of any age or land saw an evidence for the truth of our holy faith. The apostolical succession of ministers is a fact which satisfies Leslie’s criteria of the truth of the history wherewith it is connected; and the sceptical Middleton in vain attempted, during

<sup>1</sup> See Appendix. Tracts for the Times, No. 74.

above ten years, to find any case, to which Leslie's criteria applied, and which yet was untrue.

I will extract such portion of Leslie's words, as may suffice to explain this. (Short and Easy Method with the Deists, iii. 2.)

“Baptism, and the Lord's Supper, were instituted as perpetual memorials of these things (the matters of fact recorded in the Gospel of our Blessed Saviour); and they were not instituted in after-ages, but at the very time when these things were said to be done, and have been observed without interruption in all ages through the whole Christian world, down all the way, from that time to this. And Christ Himself did ordain apostles, and other ministers of His Gospel, to preach and administer these sacraments, and to govern His Church, and that always, even unto the end of the world. Accordingly, they have continued by regular succession to this day; and no doubt ever shall, while the earth shall last. So that the Christian clergy are as notorious a matter of fact, as the tribe of Levi among the Jews. And the Gospel is as much a law to the Christians as the books of Moses to the Jews; and it being part of the matters of fact related in the Gospel, that such an order of men were appointed by Christ, and to continue to the end of the world, consequently, if the Gospel was a fiction, and invented (as it must be) in some age after Christ, then, at that time, when it was first invented, there could be no such order of clergy, as derived themselves from the institution of Christ; which must give the lie to the Gospel, and demonstrate the whole to be false. And the matters of fact of Christ being pressed to be true, no otherwise than as there was at that time (whenever the Deists will suppose the Gospel to be forged) not only public sacraments of Christ's institution, but an order of clergy, likewise of His appointment, to administer them; and it being impossible there could be any such things before they were invented, it is as impossible that they should be received when invented.”

Of a truth, you know not wherewith you are trifling; and I would mention this rather as an unexpected benefit, derived from adherence to the truth, than as the use of that truth,—an instance how many hidden values every truth contains within it, though but gradually perhaps evolved to us, how much more than we are aware we lose, if we abandon truth.

The progress of error on this head is indeed a warning how men be ashamed of any, even though it seem to them the least portion of the truth committed to their trust; men first suppressed it as invidious, and an obstacle to charity, then were ashamed of it, then disbelieved it, lastly ridicule it. Those

of this generation must look to it, lest the fear of avowing their conviction lead to the same result with regard to the sacraments of their Lord; whether they have not already taken the first steps.

## II. SACRIFICE OF TRUTH.

This again I would regard as the inevitable result of the use of ridicule; and its ill tendency is the more illustrated by its having corrupted your natural love of fairness. It is part of the character which you have adopted, not of your own. For having once resolved on the fiction which was to be the vehicle of your satire, then the laws of composition required that the fiction should be in keeping, however at variance with the laws of truth. The laws of fiction are indeed stern laws, since they require the sacrifice of whatever is at variance with themselves. Having adopted the fiction of a letter from the Pope to certain members of your Church, as being his emissaries, it became necessary, by disguise, or omission, or perversion, to conceal whatever would have disturbed the unity of the drama. For instance, you play not unfrequently upon the words which one of these writers addresses to the Church of Rome,—“*Cum talis sis, utinam noster esses.*” And who would not echo the wish? Who,—bearing in mind the holy truths which Rome, amid her corruptions, yet holds, how much of the highest Christian truth, which many Protestant bodies have lost, or are in jeopardy of losing, on the mystery of the Trinity, of the Incarnation, and its consequences; or considering, again, the extent of her Communion,—would not wish, and long, and pray that she might be freed from her anti-Christian servitude; that she, as ourselves have been, might be restored to her primeval purity, when she was once the guardian of Christian truth; that God would “break the yoke of her burden, the staff on her shoulder, and the rod of her oppressor?” (Is. ix. 4.) Taken then in their obvious sense, the words are the expression of every Christian heart. Your fiction

however, required that they should express a desire for union with Rome AS SHE IS; and in this sense, accordingly, you quote them. The very next words of the writer contradict this. He proceeds (and to prevent the possibility of a mistake, he has printed these words in capitals),—

“But, alas! AN UNION IS IMPOSSIBLE. Their communion is infected with heterodoxy: we are bound to flee it as a pestilence. They have established a lie in the place of God’s truth; and by their claim of immutability in doctrine, cannot undo the sin they have committed. They cannot repent. Popery must be destroyed; it cannot be reformed.”

Honesty required the insertion of these words; but they would have spoiled the jest, and so they are omitted.

Again, as a member, to all appearance, of our Church, and so having no prejudice against her, it is hardly probable that you should believe what a recent author<sup>1</sup> has well termed “The fable of the Nag’s Head consecration.” Bishop Bull calls it “a putid fable;” and even Lingard, who shrinks not from any plausible fable, discards it<sup>2</sup>. It suited, however, your assumed character, and so, in answer to the words—

“As to the fact of Apostolical succession, every link in the chain is known, from St. Peter to our present metropolitans.”

You reply:

<sup>1</sup> Short’s History of the Church of England, chap. viii. § 409.

“Strype has been very particular in recording every thing which was done on this occasion, from the most authentic documents, in order to refute the fable of the Nag’s Head consecration, which was promulgated by the Roman Catholics about forty years after the event had taken place, when it might have been supposed that all direct testimony had been lost. The story is, that the bishops met at a tavern which bore that sign, and that when Oglethorp refused to consecrate them, Scory laid a Bible on each of their heads, and bade them rise up bishops. The tale has been refuted as often as brought forward.”

The following also is the statement of the Calvinist Professor, John Prideaux. “The public acts are still extant in Mason and others, honestly brought forward, and they sufficiently annihilate this *transparent lie* of the calumniators. Archbishop Abbot caused them to be shown to certain priests, to convince them of the impudence of this fiction, that so they might at length cease from seducing so wickedly their credulous Proselytes.” (Controv. de Disciplina Ecclesiæ, p. 248. The Italics are his.)

<sup>2</sup> Hist. of England, Vol. vii. Note I.

“But surely you are aware of all the circumstances of the Nag’s Head consecration. This must at least diminish confidence as to the continuity of your links, and compel every reasonable mind to doubt as to the reality of your succession. Even a doubt on such a point is fatal to all the claims of your Church.”

Yet you, Sir, can have no “doubt upon this point;” and still you are raising a doubt in the minds of the ignorant and unwary; and countenancing the only pretext of the Church of Rome to deny us the character of a true Church. Your jest again imposed hard laws upon you.

Again; a lay writer in the Tracts had said,

“Ordination, or, as it is called in the case of bishops, consecration, though it does not precisely come within our definition of a sacrament, is nevertheless a rite partaking, in a high degree, of the sacramental character, and it is by reference to the proper sacraments that its nature can be most satisfactorily illustrated.”

Now this statement is made, not to exalt the priesthood, (although, if *we* duly “magnified our office,” it were to be hoped, that it would be exercised more earnestly,) but to meet the common-place objection to the transmission of orders by a regular unbroken succession from the Apostles, viz., that some of the bishops, through whom they were transmitted, may have been unholy men. Now the case of the “proper sacraments” does illustrate this; for since we hold that “the effect of Christ’s ordinance is not taken away by the wickedness of evil men,” even though they “have chief authority in the ministration of the word and sacraments,” forasmuch as “the sacraments be effectual, because of Christ’s institution and promise, although they be ministered by evil men,” (Art. xxvi.) we cannot consistently object, *à priori*, to the grace of ordination being conveyed down, by virtue of our Lord’s institution, even through the hands of evil men. In the words of the layman, (shortly following your extract,) p. 10.

“He who receives unworthily, or in an improper state of mind, either ordination or consecration, may probably receive to his own soul no saving health from the hallowed rite; but while we admit, as we do, the validity of sacraments administered by a priest thus unworthily ordained, we cannot consistently deny that of ordination, in any of its grades, when be-



stowed by a bishop as unworthily consecrated. The very question of worth, indeed, with relation to such matters is absurd. Who is worthy? Who is a fit dispenser of the gifts of the Holy Spirit? What are, after all, the petty differences between sinner and sinner, when viewed in relation to Him, whose eyes are too pure to behold iniquity, and who charges His very angels with folly?"

This would have been the question to be considered, had you been in earnest; but it was an earnest question, and so afforded no room for pleasantry. You turn aside, then to lay hold of the expression, "our definition of a sacrament," and make the Pope to say, (p. 13.):

"We do not blame you, beloved brethren, for its not coming perfectly within your Church's definition of a sacrament; but we feel convinced that, when opportunity may serve, you will so alter the definition as to increase the number of your sacraments."

Yet since the "layman" distinguished "orders" from the "proper sacraments," it was an ill pleasantry which would represent him as wishing to include them therein, although you need not have gone as far as Rome for a definition which would have included them. St. Augustine's definition of a sacrament, (with which Calvin wishes to show that his own agrees, *Instit.* iv. 14. I.) had sufficed: "a visible sign of a sacred thing," or "a visible form of invisible grace." The word "sacrament" has namely, (as every one knows,) a larger use, although the "two proper sacraments" have always had their distinct reverence, as not conveying grace only, but directly uniting men with their Redeemer. In this larger sense, however, even foreign reformers have not scrupled to call ordination not merely "a rite, partaking in a high degree of the sacramental character," but "a sacrament." Thus even Calvin says (*Instit.* iv. 14. 20.):

"I am speaking of the sacraments instituted for the use of the *whole* Church. For the imposition of hands, whereby the ministers of the Church are initiated to their office, as on the one hand *I am not unwilling that it should be called a sacrament*, so on the other I do not count it among the *ordinary* sacraments."

And again (iv. 19. 31.):

“There remaineth imposition of hands, which, *as in true and lawful ordinations, I allow to be a sacrament*, so I deny that it has any place in this farce, (those of Rome,) wherein they neither obey Christ’s command, nor regard the end, to which the promise ought to lead us.”

And Melancthon (Apolog. Confess. de numero et usu sacram.):

“If orders be understood of the ‘ministry of the word,’ we should not scruple to call orders a sacrament. For the ministry of the word has the command of God, and magnificent promises, Rom. i. Is. lv. If orders are understood in this sense, neither should I scruple to call imposition of hands a sacrament. For the Church hath the command to appoint ministers, which ought to be most acceptable to us, for we know, that God approves that ministry, *and is present thereat*. And it is of moment, to set forth and extol, as much as may be, the ministry of the word, against fanatical men, who dream that the Holy Spirit is given, not by the word, but for some preparations of their own if they sit idle,” &c.

And again (Loci, de numero sacram.):

“I approve most thoroughly that ordination be added thereto, (to the sacraments,) *i. e.*, the calling to the ministry of the Church, and the public attestation of that calling. For all these are ordained by a command of the Gospel, as Tit. i. 5. and there is added a promise, the greatest of all, which attests that God really worketh effectually by the ministry of those who are chosen by the voice of the Church, as that universal saying beareth record of the apostles, and all who transmit the word delivered through the apostles, ‘The Gospel is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth.’ And Christ saith, John xvii., ‘I pray not for these alone,’ &c. and John xx. 23. Eph. iv. 8—11. Luke x. 16. John xv. 5. 2 Cor. v. 18. 20. 2 Cor. iii. 6. These, and many like sayings, evidently testify that God worketh effectually by this very ministry of those who teach the Gospel, which ministry He wills to preserve in the Church by a continued calling.”

We do not, however, need such authorities; we would rather refer you to the wisdom of our English writers, as Hooker, who speaketh of things as being “*as sacraments*,” or Archbishop Wake, who objects not to its being called “a kind of Particular Sacrament.”

But before you repeat your jest, allow me one earnest question; When one is set apart for the ministry, and the bishop pronounces over him the words,

“Receive the Holy Ghost for the office and work of a priest in the

Church of God, now committed unto thee by the imposition of our hands,"

do you think that he receives no spiritual benefit? or that no spiritual benefit is thereby implied? if not, are not the words blasphemy? but if the Holy Ghost be thereby bestowed, if the ordained person "receive the Holy Ghost for the office of a priest in the Church of God," is not ordination to him a means of grace, and so, although not a sacrament, does it not "possess in a high degree the sacramental character?" and ought this subject to be treated of in merriment?

Again, a writer after having, in a very interesting paper, pointed out the notices of an extensive Christian ritual contained in Scripture itself, adduced two passages, "in further illustration of the subject" from Tertullian, A.D. 200, and St. Basil, A.D. 350, both of whom maintain the binding character of usages, which, though not in Scripture, had come down from the Apostles by a "continuous tradition." And who would not? Is not our argument against the modern Church of Rome, that she has introduced "a *corrupt* following of the Apostles," (Art. 25.) "fond things *vainly invented*" and grounded upon no "warranty of Scripture, but rather *repugnant* to the Word of God" (Art. 22.)? The ground taken by the Church of Rome is that all *her present* traditions are to be received, as of equal validity with the written word, because she holds them; our ground, that they are not to be so received, because they cannot be proved to be apostolic, and some are corrupt and vainly invented. Our controversy then with Rome is not an *à priori* question on the value of tradition in itself, or at an earlier period of the Church, or of such traditions, as, though not contained in Scripture, are primitive, universal, and apostolical, but it is one purely historical, that the Romanist traditions not being such, but, on the contrary, *repugnant* to Scripture, are not to be received. It has manifestly, then, nothing to do with the question between Rome and ourselves, what Tertullian and St. Basil held of traditions

which could be proved to be apostolical; nor does our accepting traditions of the *universal Church in their day*, involve our accepting those of the *particular Church of Rome*, after so many centuries of corruption, *in the present*.

In your Romanist character it is natural to say,

“These are the principles which have ever guided the Catholic Church; by deviating from these the nations of Europe have fallen into anarchy and confusion; and it is only by zealous efforts, such as our children of the University are now making for the restoration of those principles, that peace and harmony and unity can be reproduced.”

But in your real character how will you excuse the fallacy which your assumed one palmed upon your readers? especially when the writer had accompanied his citations with the remark:

“Tertullian is on the one hand, a very early witness for the existence of the general doctrine which this passage contains, while on the other he gives no sanction to the claims of those later customs on our acceptance, which the Church of Rome upholds, but which cannot be clearly traced to primitive times.”

Do you really believe that Tertullian and St. Basil bear out the claims of modern Rome? If not, your assumed character was too hard for your honesty—if you do, I leave you to arrange the question with a really learned divine and Bishop of our day;

“In the passage to which reference has just been made, Tertullian speaks of written and unwritten tradition; but the cases in which he lays any stress upon the authority of the latter, are precisely those which our reformers allowed to be within its province—cases of ceremonies and ritual observances. Of these he enumerates several for which no express warrant can be found in Scripture, and which must consequently have been derived solely from tradition; the forms, for instance, observed in baptism, in the administration of the Lord’s Supper, and in public prayer.”

Bishop Kaye is here referring to the very passage of Tertullian, the quotation of which, together with that of St. Basil, calls forth your reprobation; and we cannot do better than refer you, and ultra-Protestants generally, to the masterly

manner in which he treats this whole subject, (Tertullian, p. 202—307. ed. 2.) and especially his refutation of Mr. Thirlwall, (p. 297. sqq. note.)

Or I may refer you to the learned Dr. Hammond, “Seasonable Exhortations to all true sons of the Church of England, wherein is inserted a discourse of heresy in defence of our Church against the Romanist.” (§ 3.)

I will cite one passage only, but the whole essay is well deserving of study.

“To this also my concession shall be as liberal as any Romanist can wish, that there are two ways of conveying such revelations to us ; one in writing, the other by oral tradition ; the former in the Gospels and other writings of the Apostles, &c. which make up the Sacred Writ, or Canon of the New Testament ; the latter in the Apostles’ preachings to all the Churches of their plantation, which are no where set down for us in the Sacred Writ, but conserved as *deposita* by them to whom they were entrusted.”

“And although in sundry respects the former of these be much the more faithful, steady way of conveyance, and for want thereof many things may possibly have perished, or been changed by their passage through many hands (thus much being on these grounds confessed by Bellarmine himself, that the Scripture is the most certain and safe rule of belief), yet there being no less veracity in the tongues than the hands, in the preachings than the writings, of the apostles ; nay, ‘prior sermo quam liber, prior sensus quam stylus,’ saith Tertullian ; ‘the apostles preached before they writ—planted Churches before they addressed epistles to them ;’ on these grounds, *I make no scruple to grant that apostolical traditions, such as are truly so, as well as apostolical writings, are equally the matter of that Christian’s belief, who is equally secured by the fidelity of the conveyance, that as the one is apostolical writing, so the other is apostolical tradition.*”

In the subsequent chapters, Dr. Hammond illustrates from the rules of Vincentius Lirinensis, “where these qualifications may be found.”

I will add one more writer, the great Hooker (and I may note that Whitaker, whom he quotes, leans in some things over-much to Geneva, and so to ultra-Protestantism, and yet is here on the same side). Truly, if we are herein Papistical we are so in goodly company, and no otherwise than our

whole Church and Hooker were by ultra-Protestants always so accounted.

Hooker then says (Eccl. Pol. i. 14.) :

“ We do not reject them (the Romish traditions) only because they are not in the Scripture, but because they are neither in Scripture, nor can otherwise sufficiently, by any reason, be proved to be of God. That which is of God, and may be evidently proved to be so, we deny not but it hath in his kind, although unwritten, the self-same force and authority with the written laws of God. It is by ours<sup>1</sup> acknowledged ‘ that the apostles did in every Church institute and ordain some rites and customs serving for the seemliness of Church regimen ; which rites and customs they have not committed unto writing.’ Those rites and customs being known to be apostolical, and having the nature of things changeable, were no less to be accounted of in the Church than other things of the like degree, that is to say, capable in like sort of alteration, although set down in the apostles’ writings. *For both being known to be apostolical, it is not the manner of delivering them unto the Church, but the Author from whom they proceed, which doth give them their force and credit.*”

Again, one of these writers, among the dangers of altering the Liturgy, notices the tendency of change itself to produce the love of changing, the appetite growing with what it feeds on. With this view, he instances objections, which men of *opposite* characters might take to the commencement of the service ; as, one might think, “ the introductory sentences not evangelical enough ;” another, “ the form of absolution not strong enough.” Now the very object of the Tract, and the character of the illustrations, showed the writer to be (as he indeed is), content with things as they stand. The jest, however, required that you should represent the contrary as the opinion of the writers of the Tracts, and the Pope feeling for them when they lament concerning the absolution (p. 12), “ that it is a mere declaration, not an announcement of pardon to those who have confessed.”

Yet granting that a writer had thought *this* “ absolution ” not strong enough, this would not make out the writer a Papist, since the absolution in the Communion-service is, (as

<sup>1</sup> Whitaker adv. Bellarm. qu. 6. cap. 6.

is right,) stronger than this ; and that in the Visitation for the Sick stronger still ; so that a person might even wish for a much "stronger" form of absolution, and yet remain within the bounds of our Church. And so little strong did our form appear to the American Episcopalians, that in the Rubric before the absolution, they substituted the words, "*A declaration concerning the Forgiveness of Sins,*" &c. Yet herein we fare better than usual ; for you have equally treated (*ibid.*) as Papistical, words wherein another writer (Tracts, No. xvii. p. 4.) embodies our Church's language in the Visitation for the Sick. If a minister, you must, when called upon, use that same language ; whether then it be Papistical or no, we may leave you to decide.

Again, another writer, now asleep in the Lord, gave an historical statement of the gradual compression of the Church services, and especially that which went on in the Romish Church, "*long before the abolition of the Latin service.*" (Tract ix. p. 2.) This the Reformers carried on ; it is not Papistical, surely, to say, "unadvisedly ;" a person may regret that the Communion and Morning Service are conjoined, and think that, but for this, the Communion would probably have been administered more frequently, and yet not be a Papist. For this compression of services had begun in Papistical times, and the error of the Reformers (if it was one) was compliance with the "spirit of [a Papistical] age." This, however, would have afforded no room for pleasantry ; and so the whole is represented as being, in our eyes, a departure from Rome, and an error of "our misguided Reformers."

One expression of this writer demanded a candid judgment : he said,

"The idea of united worship, with a view to which identity of time and language had been maintained in different nations, was forgotten."

It is plain that what the writer herein lamented was the loss, not of the Latin language as a medium of prayer, but the loss of that feeling of unity, "with a view to which identity of

*time*, as well as language, had been maintained in different nations." He could not, and did not, object to the disuse of a "language not understood by the people." (Art. xxiv.) Accordingly he added, "the identity of time had been abandoned, and the *identity of language could not be preserved.*" This last sentence would have embarrassed the fiction, and so you have omitted it.

These instances may illustrate the almost certain risk of sacrifice of truth, entailed by such a fiction as that upon which you have ventured. I need not adduce more; for I have no thought of refuting your statements: this we will do, if ever you take upon yourself seriously to maintain them; at present I would only show you the danger of such trifling in holy things. Before, however, you venture upon serious controversy, as the champion of ultra-Protestantism, I would recommend you to review your armour;—weapons which you have not proved, however they may make a show in this counterfeit and mockery, will not hold in real earnest. You belong, Sir, to a school which would substitute individual speculation for solid learning and the knowledge of antiquity, and which, consequently, has the reputation of at times reproducing as new, and so giving undue and injurious prominence to, what all divines were before well acquainted with; and at times, also, has fallen into strange unhistorical errors. Now, whether a certain doctrine be Papistical or no, is matter of history, not of speculation; and one not versed in history will be liable, perpetually, to confound the earlier truth, or unobjectionable custom, with the later corruption; especially if he has no very clear idea of Christian theology. Thus you attack—as implying transubstantiation—expressions which convey only the doctrine of the Eucharist, as held in the early Church and our own.

The same want of acquaintance with antiquity, probably, led you to confound the early practice of commemorating God's departed servants at the holy communion, and praying for their increased bliss and fuller admission to the beatific vision, with



the modern abuse of masses for the dead, and the doctrine of purgatory. You found it stated in the account of the ancient liturgies (Tract lxiii.), that "prayers for the dead" occurred in the several ancient liturgies, founded upon those of St. Peter, St. James, St. Mark, and St. John.

Our departed friend, namely, put together an interesting paper, showing "the antiquity of the existing Liturgies." From the tract itself, it would appear that his main object was to direct persons' attention to the view taken in those Liturgies of the consecration and oblation of the Eucharist (p. 16), since the consecration of the Eucharist is now so often regarded as a mere preliminary, instead of being in itself an essential part of the service; and this falls in with a part of the self-exalting rationalism of the day. In giving an account, however, of the points wherein "all the ancient Liturgies now existing, or which can be proved ever to have existed, resemble one another" (p. 7.), he was necessitated to mention "prayers for the dead" (p. 8, 9.), or, as he explains it, "for the rest and peace of all those who have departed this life in God's faith and fear;" and having mentioned that they "all contain (4.) a prayer, answering in substance to ours for the whole state of Christ's Church militant," he added (5.), "and likewise another prayer (which has been excluded from the English Ritual) for the rest and peace," &c.

He carefully guarded, then, against perplexing men's minds; he did not put the question prominently forward; he did not blame the Reformers under Edward VI. for having yielded to the judgment of foreign ultra-reformers, against their own previous judgment; he stated the simple fact, that this prayer had been *excluded*, i.e. whereas it had been *retained* on the first putting together of our Liturgy in "Edward VI.'s 1st book," it was *excluded* from the 2nd, at the instigation of Bucer and Calvin; and Bucer's alteration was adopted. The original unbiassed judgment, then, of our Reformers was to retain the prayer; and it argues no tendency to Popery, if any one wish that our Reformers had, in this and other points,

for which they had the authority of the early Church, adhered to their first judgment. These same Reformers had at that time a clause in the Litany, which has since been *excluded*, praying against “the tyrannye of the Bishop of Rome, and all his detestable enormities;” so that you could hardly accuse them of Papistry<sup>1</sup>.

The following is the part of the prayer omitted:—

“We commend unto Thy mercy, O Lord, all other Thy servants, which are departed hence from us with the sign of faith, and now do rest in the sleep of peace: grant unto them, we beseech Thee, Thy mercy and everlasting peace; and that, at the day of the general resurrection, we, and all they which be of the mystical body of Thy Son, may altogether be set at His right hand, and hear that His most joyful voice, ‘Come unto me, O ye that be blessed of My Father, and possess the kingdom which is prepared for you from the beginning of the world.’ Grant this, O Father, for Jesus Christ’s sake, our only Mediator and Advocate.”

Now to this prayer neither Calvin nor Bucer objected that it was Papistical. On the contrary, Calvin says, in his letter to the Protector (Epp. p. 39. fol.),

“I hear that in the celebration of the Supper there is repeated a prayer for the departed, and I well know that this cannot be construed into an approbation of the Papistical Purgatory. Nor am I ignorant that there can be brought forward an ancient rite of making mention of the departed, that so the communion of all the faithful, being united into one body, might be set forth: but there is this irrefragable argument against it, viz. that the Lord’s Supper is a thing so holy, that it must not be defiled with any human addition.”

Calvin argues further against the practice, 1st, as “not being founded on Scripture;” 2nd, as “not answering the true and lawful use of prayer.”

Bucer, again, says, (Censura in Ordinatio. Eccl. Opp. Angl. p. 467.)

“I know that this custom of praying for departed saints is very old, although there is no mention of it in the description of the Lord’s Supper in Justin Martyr.”

<sup>1</sup> Cranmer had seen and written against the error of Purgatory even under Henry the VIIIth. “The necessary doctrine and erudition of a Christian man,” A.D. 1543, is, *in this respect*, a decided advance beyond “The institution of a Christian man,” A.D. 1537. (Comp. Formularies of Faith in the reign of Henry VIII., p. 210 and 375-7.)

And having gone over the testimonies from St. Cyprian, Tertullian, St. Ambrose, and Dionysius, he subjoins,

“But however old this Dionysius may be, and however great his authority, or that of the other holy fathers, yet we must prefer Divine authority to human, by how much God is greater than man.—Now Holy Scripture teaches neither by word nor example to pray for the dead. And it is forbidden to add or take away from it. Deut. iv. and xii.”

Of Scriptural grounds Bucer adduces John v. 24, only, as opposed to this custom, arguing,

“That *the common people* would think that the departed yet lacked that peace, (and so the full mercy of God, whereby He forgives His servants their sins,) and that our prayers were needed to obtain that mercy. No occasion is to be given to this error, especially when we know with what a sea of more than heathen superstition, and with what plagues Satan has by this false persuasion overwhelmed religion.”

It may have been on this ground, as Mr. Palmer conjectured, (English Ritual, tom. ii. p. 94—97.) that these prayers were omitted, as being so connected in the minds of the common people with the idea of purgatory, that their continuance would have involved the risk of propagating that cruel and pernicious error. If so, the Revisers of the Prayer Book, in abandoning their former ground, did wisely and charitably, and as the necessity of the times demanded; and although neither Calvin nor Bucer thought the practice legitimately connected therewith, yet the *common people* may then well have fallen into the mistake, since yourself, who are said to be a theologian, have now done so: for on this ground alone could you have selected this incidental mention of prayers for God's departed servants, as Papistical.

It may not be amiss to subjoin a few of the remarks of the learned Bp. Collier<sup>1</sup> on this our first reformed liturgy.

“This recommending the dead to the mercy of God is no innovation of the Church of Rome; but a constant usage of the primitive Church. To justify this reformed liturgy in this point I shall produce unexceptionable authority.”

<sup>1</sup> Eccles. Hist. of Great Britain, P. ii. Book iv. p. 257.

And having quoted Tertullian, St. Cyprian, the Apostolical Constitutions, St. Ambrose, St. Chrysostom, St. Augustine, and referred to the ancient liturgies, he subjoins:—

“This custom neither supposes the modern purgatory, nor gives any encouragement to libertinism and vice: not to the latter, for St. Austin, with the apostolical constitutions, affirms, that unless a man dies qualified, he cannot receive any assistance from the prayers of the living. That the ancient Church believed the recommending the dead a serviceable office, we need not question; otherwise, to what purpose was it so generally practised? The custom seems to have gone on this principle, that supreme happiness is not to be expected till the resurrection; and that the interval between death and the end of the world is a state of imperfect bliss. The Church might, therefore, believe her prayers for good people departed might improve their condition, and raise the satisfactions of this period.”

And, again, having considered Bucer’s objections:

“There is another text urged in favour of Bucer’s opinions, ‘Blessed are the dead, which die in the Lord from henceforth: yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labours, and their works do follow them.’ But this place amounts to no censure, either of the primitive practice, or the reformed common prayer-book before us; for ’tis supposed by the ancients and the office last-mentioned, that the dead are discharged from the fatigues of this life, and their works follow them, and that they are happy on the main; however, it does not follow from hence, but that their condition may be improved, and that they may be served in some measure by the assistance of the living.—I have already observed, prayer for the dead does not imply purgatory; whence it follows, that though the Church of England condemns the Romish doctrine of purgatory, (Art. 22) we cannot thence infer her dislike of prayer for the dead.”

With regard to your insinuation that those who approve of the primitive practice of praying for the dead, “will feel a new proof that the Church, which has retained this office, is alone worthy of their regard,” Collier furnishes the answer, 1. That the Church of England no where restrains her children from praying for their departed friends, if this approves itself to their consciences. 2. That the terms of joining with the Church of Rome are so hard, her corruptions so manifold, that “supposing the Church of England was chargeable with the omission of a primitive usage, *which is more* than I affirm: ’tis more eligible to adhere to her, than part with her communion upon so remarkable an exchange.”

Since Rome has blended the cruel invention of purgatory with the primitive custom of prayer for the dead, (not to speak

now of her other corruptions,) it is not in communion with her that any can seek for comfort from this rite.

It would be well for the modern controversialist with Rome to weigh Bishop Bull's language on this subject, (Sermon iii. ed. Burton, and "Corruptions of the Church of Rome, in answer to the Bishop of Meaux' queries," t. ii. p. 260.) lest he involve himself in difficulty for want of making this distinction. Bishop Bull says,

"Prayers for the dead, as founded on the hypothesis of purgatory (*and we no otherwise reject them*), fall together with it:"

And with these he contrasts

"the prayers of the ancient Church, either the common and general commemoration of all the faithful at the oblation of the holy eucharist, or the particular prayers used at the funerals of any of the faithful lately deceased. The former respected their final absolution, and the consummation of their bliss at the resurrection, like as that our Church useth both in the office for the Communion, and in that for the burial of the dead, which indeed seems to be no more than that we daily pray for in that petition of the Lord's Prayer (if we rightly understand it), 'Thy kingdom come,' " &c.

Indeed, as Bishop Bull here implies, the very idea of an intermediate state involves in it a degree of prayer for God's departed servants; since, knowing them to be in a state of imperfect bliss until the resurrection, whenever we pray for the final "coming of God's kingdom," we do in fact (if we have any thought for the departed) pray at the same time for the perfecting of their bliss. And thus, in the service of the burial for the dead, when we pray God

"of His gracious goodness shortly to accomplish the number of His elect, and to hasten His kingdom; that we, *with all those that are departed in the true faith of His Holy Name*, may have our perfect consummation and bliss both in body and soul;"

this undoubtedly implies a prayer for the consummation of the bliss of the departed. And we, who so lose out of mind God's departed servants, have also almost lost the notion of the intermediate state. On the other hand, as Bishop Bull also points out, these prayers for the departed servants of God

exclude the false invention of purgatory. Bishop Bull writes—

“ In a word, let any understanding and unprejudiced person attentively observe the prayers for the dead in the most undoubtedly ancient liturgies, and he will be so far from believing the Romish purgatory on the account of those prayers, that he will be found to confess that they make directly against it. For (to omit other arguments) they all run (as even that prayer for the dead, which is unadvisedly left by the Romanists in their own canon of the mass as a testimony against themselves) in this form :— ‘ For all that are in peace or at rest in the Lord.’ Now how can they be said to be ‘ at peace or at rest in the Lord,’ who are supposed to be in a state of misery and torment ?”

I may add the following extract from the “ Ancient Liturgy of the Church of Jerusalem,” which formed part of the devotions of Bishop Andrews<sup>1</sup>. As being an ancient liturgy, it of course expresses all which could be meant in this reference to “ Ancient Liturgies.”

“ Grant that we may all find mercy and favour with all thy saints, who, from the beginning of the world, have pleased Thee in their several generations, Patriarchs, Prophets, Apostles, Martyrs, and every just spirit made perfect in the faith of Thy Christ, from righteous Abel even unto this day ; do thou give *them* and us rest in the region of the living in the bosom of our holy Fathers, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, whence sorrow, grief, and lamentation are banished away, where the light of Thy countenance shines continually ; and vouchsafe to bring *them* and us to the full enjoyment of Thy heavenly kingdom.”

I have dwelt the longer upon this subject, as being aware that you have reputed it a vulnerable point, and you have served your purpose well, by giving it a prominence, which it did not occupy in our Tracts, nor even in that one of our departed friend, wherein alone it was mentioned, and that but incidentally and of necessity. The object of his tract (and it was a very laudable one) being to point out the agreement as well as the antiquity of the existing liturgies, it would have been dishonest, wilfully to have suppressed any one point, wherein they so agreed. This, therefore, he stated ; meanwhile he expressed no opinion on it, attracted no attention to it, but

<sup>1</sup> See Dean Stanhope’s translation, p. 47, ed. Christian Knowledge Society.

simply set it down, as he found it, a matter of fact; and but for your acute sense of a weak part, it might have remained unnoticed. No evil could have arisen from his simple statement of the fact. You, indeed, may possibly perplex men's minds, little prepared as they are for the discussion of the point, by confounding it with a popish superstition (which Calvin did not do), and thereby giving arms to opponents of our Church: it is ours to vindicate the early Church and our reformers.

It is, meanwhile, not a little remarkable that the main position of this tract which you have selected for censure, is precisely that incidentally maintained by the learned Archbishop Wake, of whose soundness never was any doubt in the Church. The position was :

“that although the several liturgies have been much interpolated and in parts corrupted, much likewise has been handed down from the first uninterpolated, and that means exist for ascertaining what parts are interpolated and what pure and genuine; *the pure and genuine parts being those wherein all agree.*”

Archbishop Wake says in like manner (Dissert. on the Apostolical Fathers, c. ix. § 20.):—

“However, since it can hardly be doubted but that those holy Apostles and Evangelists [St. Peter, St. Mark, and St. James,] did give some directions for the administration of the blessed eucharist in those Churches; it may reasonably be presumed that some of those orders are still remaining in those liturgies which have been brought down to us under their names; and *that those prayers wherein they all agree, (in sense, at least, if not in words,) were first prescribed in the same, or like terms, by those Apostles and Evangelists*; nor would it be difficult to make a farther proof of this conjecture from the writings of the ancient fathers, if it were needful, in this place, to insist upon it.”

Nor even in these last days has “prayer for God's departed servants” been by well-instructed writers confounded with purgatory. The following passage evidently proceeds from the heart of one, whom no one will accuse of a blind adherence to the ancient Church (Short's History of the English Church, § 15):

“To pray for the dead was the dictate of human nature, and the

practice of the early Church, and no reasonable Christian will blame Dr. Johnson for the cautious manner in which he mentions his mother in his prayers; but in the hands of the Church of Rome this feeling was soon directed to the unscriptural object of delivering the souls of departed friends from purgatory, and the practice converted into a source of profit to the priesthood.—There is no necessary connection between praying for the dead and the belief in purgatory. The Greek Church for instance prays for the dead, without admitting any idea of purgatory. Prayers and oblations for the dead were probably established in England from the first, and a short form of prayer to that effect is inserted in the Canons of Cloveshoo; with regard to the latter doctrine, the Saxon homilists generally refer to the awards of a final judgement, though traditional notices exist, in which there appears to be at first an indistinct, but afterwards more clear reference to purgatory.—*Later* writers, and among the rest Alfred, adopted the popular notions of purgatory, which were still very different from the opinions on that subject established as articles of Faith by the councils of Florence and Trent.”

Take again the following full statement of another writer, who seems, certainly, over-anxious to vindicate the purity of the foreign ultra-Protestants, against Romish assailants, and so is obviously free from bias. It is from the vindication of the learned Dr. Field<sup>1</sup>, against a Romish controversialist, who it seems had set you an example which you have faithfully followed, “drawing me,” Dr. F. says, “into the defence of that he knoweth I impugn.”

“In the fourth place he saith: I accept the rule of St. Augustine, that whatsoever is frequented by the universal Church, and was not instituted by Councils, but was always holden, that is believed most rightly to be an Apostolical tradition. And that liberally I add, that whatsoever all, or the most famous or renowned in all ages (or at least in divers ages) have constantly delivered, as received from them that went before them, no man doubting or contradicting it, may be thought to be an apostolical tradition. Whence he thinketh he may conclude inevitably by my allowance that prayer for the dead may be thought to be an Apostolical tradition, many famous and renowned Fathers in divers ages mentioning Prayer for the Dead, and none disliking or reproving it. For answer whereunto I say; that prayer for the resurrection, public acquittal in the day of judgement, and bliss of them that are fallen asleep, in the sleep of death, is an Apostolical tradition, and so proved by the rule of St. Augustine, and that other added by me; as likewise prayer made respectively to the passage hence, and entrance into the other world: and hereof there is

<sup>1</sup> Of the Church, App. p. 1, § 4, p. 750, sqq., where is much more on this subject.



no controversy between us and our adversaries ; but prayer to ease, mitigate, suspend, or wholly take away the pains of any of them that are in hell, or to deliver men out of the supposed purgatory of Papists, hath no proof from either of these rules, as shall appear by that which followeth : and, therefore, this poor novice hath not yet learned his lesson aright, nor knoweth what it is he is to prove. But if he will be content to be informed by me, the thing he must prove (if he desire to gratify his new masters, and to maintain the Romish cause) is, that all the Fathers, or the most famous among them, from the beginning of Christianity, did in the several ages wherein they lived, teach men to pray for the deliverance of their friends and brethren, out of the pains of Purgatory ; which, if he will undertake to do, he must bring some better proofs, than such as are taken from the mutual dependence and conjunction of Purgatory, and prayer for the dead, which yet principally he seemeth to urge. For many Catholic Christians (whom this gentleman must not condemn) made prayers for such as they never deemed to be in Purgatory. Neither did the ancient Catholic Church (as he fondly imagineth) in her prayers and oblations for the dead, intend to relieve souls temporarily afflicted in a penal estate ; but in her general intention (whatsoever private conceits particular men had) desired only the resurrection, public acquittal, and perfect consummation and blessedness of the departed, and respectively to the passage hence, and entrance into the other world, the utter deletion, and full remission of their sins, the perfect purging out of sin, being in, or immediately upon the dissolution in the last instant of this life, and the first of the next, and not while the soul and body remain conjoined. This is strongly proved, because the most ancient amongst the Fathers, make but two sorts of men dying, and departing out of this world, the one sinners, the other righteous ; the one profane, the other holy : so Dionysius in his Hierarchy ; so Epiphanius against Arius ; so Ambrose in his Book de Bono Mortis ; and Cyril of Jerusalem in his Catechism ; and all of them teach, that the souls of the just are in a joyful, happy, and good estate, and present with God in an excellent sort, immediately upon their dissolution, and departure hence. ‘The falling asleep of the holy ones,’ saith Dionysius, ‘is in joy and gladness, and immoveable hope, because they are come to the end of their combats ; and again, they know they shall altogether be partakers of the rest of Christ, being come to the end and bound of this life : so that they are filled with holy joy and gladness, and with great delight and pleasure, enter the way of the most happy regeneration.’ ”

And now I would venture to ask any Clergyman, I would even appeal to yourself, if a Parochial Minister, whether, when you have heard of the death of one of your flock, of whom you hoped well, your first impulse has not been to pray to God to make up to the departed whatever had been deficient in your ministrations ? whether (as Luther did) you have not prayed

for the perfecting and increased blessedness of a departed friend or relation, even though you have subsequently checked yourself? whether you did not find a comfort from that prayer? and whether this dictate of human nature, warranted as it is by the early Church, and distinct from the Romish error, *may* not after all be implanted by the God of nature—may not be the voice of God within us? If this be but possible, is this a subject to be treated lightly? Are “prayer” and “the souls of God’s departed saints” fit topics for a jest?

One word more on a connected subject; you represent the writers as dissatisfied with the changes formerly made in the services, and wishing to introduce others more conformable to the ritual of Rome. (p. 12.)

This (as I have already in part shown) is not so; for, first, you have (as is your wont) confounded the primitive with the Romish ritual: secondly, we never have, nor do we wish for any alteration in the liturgy of our Church; we bless God that our lot has fallen in her bosom,—that He has preserved in her the essentials of primitive doctrine and a liturgy so holy; and although I cannot but think its first form preferable, alteration is out of the question: THERE CANNOT BE REAL ALTERATION, WITHOUT A SCHISM: and as we claim to have our own consciences respected, and not to have any doctrines suppressed which the formularies of our Church now express, so, even if we had the power of change, would we respect the consciences of others, and not to urge upon our superiors, or seek for support in behalf of the restitution of that more ancient form, which we hold abstractedly the better.

The whole course of the Tracts has, as you know, and yourself reproach us with, been against innovation; how, then, is it honest in your assumed character, to give us the following advice;—

“You cannot be certain that those in authority would consent to those alterations which you regard as improvements; and you must not be hasty in urging them too far;”

as if we had ever had any such wish?

I may yet add another instance of the risk, which (for want of better acquaintance with our old divines) you run of involving unawares in your censures those giants of old times, against whom, for very shame, a modern should not open his mouth, while you think you are only attacking men of modern days like yourself, *οἱ τοὶ νῦν βροτοὶ εἰσι*.

Every system of theology, as indeed every tendency of mind, every good disposition, every performance of religious duty, has its dangers, the danger of degenerating; and so, of necessity, has Protestantism. One of the writers of the Tracts brought forward some of these in warning, especially the tendency to require too rigid argumentation, explicit proof, and not to yield to conviction until compelled. The Romanist is too easy of belief, believes on false grounds; the *tendency* of the Protestant is, to be over-difficult of belief, not to believe on sufficient and true grounds. This was illustrated by reference to the prevailing feelings in some quarters with regard to episcopacy; and it was shown, that the same principle would consistently extend not only to infant baptism, but to a case of "*doctrine, of necessary doctrine, doctrine the very highest and most sacred, where the argument lies as little upon the surface of Scripture,—where the proof, though most conclusive, is as indirect and circuitous as that for episcopacy, viz., the doctrine of the Trinity. Where is this solemn and comfortable mystery formally stated in Scripture, as we find it in the Creed? Why is it not? Let a man consider whether all the objections which he urges against the Scripture argument for Episcopacy may not be turned against his own belief in the Trinity. It is a happy thing for themselves that men are inconsistent; yet it is miserable to advocate and establish a principle, which, not in their own case indeed, but in the case of others who learn it of them, leads to Socinianism. This being considered, can we any longer wonder at the awful fact, that the descendants of Calvin, the first Presbyterian, are at the present day in the number of those who have denied the Lord who bought them?*"

It certainly was not any common mind, which saw how a principle, now so commonly avowed in the instance of episcopacy, will, when carried out, ultimately affect men's belief in the highest doctrines of the faith: it was also popular ground to take, and a great temptation, to represent these writers, as weakening the evidence for the doctrine of the Trinity—and

you have fallen into it. I must own that I do not understand all which your words would insinuate; but the tone of triumph in which it is announced, implies that you have found, in your opinion, a weak point. You call it (p. 37, 38.)

“a noble passage, which we can never sufficiently admire;”

you tell us,

“you can always triumphantly appeal to your own writings to prove that you have always maintained on abstract grounds, even when you were not assailing individuals, that the doctrine of the Trinity is not explicitly revealed in Scripture. We shall cite the passage we allude to, because we delight in transcribing truth, and because we would recommend our beloved children to have it engraven on the doors of their houses, as a public announcement of the orthodoxy of their faith, and the righteousness of their conduct.”

But what, then, if this statement, for which its author is thus assailed, occur in the writings of those who have been ever regarded as great lights of our Church, and that, in relation to the same subjects? Your irony will reach rather further than you intended.

I will cite two only, Hooker and Bp. Beveridge.

Hooker then says (Eccl. Pol. i. 41.),

“There hath been some doubt, likewise, whether *containing in Scripture*, do import express setting down in plain terms, or else *comprehending* in such sort, that by reason we may from thence conclude all things which are necessary. Against the former of these two constructions, instance hath sundry ways been given. For our belief in the Trinity, the co-eter-nity of the Son of God with his Father, the Proceeding of the Spirit from the Father and the Son, the duty of baptizing infants; these, with such other principal points, the necessity whereof is by none denied, are notwithstanding in Scripture no where to be found by express literal mention; only deduced they are out of Scripture by collection.”

Bp. Beveridge is much fuller, speaks upon the whole subject, and yet it would be difficult to point out any difference between his statements and those of the Tracts. The passage is part of the preface to his learned Essay on the Canons of the Primitive Church:

“Yet, indeed, this holy Scripture, although in those precepts which are absolutely necessary to the salvation of every man, it be very clear and plain to all; yet in things relating to doctrine and the outward discipline

of the Church, it is not, on account of its very depth, understood in the same way by all; but 'different people interpret its divine sayings differently, so that it would seem as if as many meanings almost might be extracted from it, as there are men,' as Vincentius Lirinensis of old observed, and it abundantly appears from heretics and schismatics, who each obtain their own perverse opinions and practice from holy Scripture, interpreted after their own way. In matters, then, of this sort, if we would be secure against erring or stumbling, first of all, beyond question, we must beware of adhering too pertinaciously to the private opinions or conjectures, whether of ourselves or others; rather should we review what the whole Church, or at least the majority of Christians thought thereon, and acquiesce in that opinion, in which Christians of all ages agreed. For as 'in all things the agreement of all is the voice of nature,' as Cicero saith, so in things of this nature, 'the agreement of all Christians may well be accounted the voice of the Gospel.' But there are many things, which, although they are not read expressly and definitely in holy Scripture, yet by the common consent of all Christians are obtained from it. For instance. '*That<sup>1</sup> in the Ever Blessed Trinity Three distinct Persons are to be worshipped, Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, and that each of these is very God, and yet that there is only one God: that Christ is Θεάνθρωπος, very God and very man is one and the same Person.*' These and the like truths, although they are not delivered in so many words and syllables, either in the Old or New Testament, yet all Christians have been agreed upon them, as being founded in both; excepting only some few heretics, of whom in religion no greater account is to be had, than, in nature, of monsters. So, also, '*that infants are to be cleansed by holy baptism, and sponsors to be employed in that Sacrament; that the Lord's Day or the first in each week is to be religiously kept; that the Passion, Resurrection, and Ascension of the Lord into heaven, and the coming of the Holy Ghost, are to be commemorated every year; that the Church is to be every where governed by Bishops, distinct from the Presbyters, and set over them.*' These and other things of the like nature are no where directed in holy Scripture, expressly and by name; nevertheless, for fourteen hundred years from the apostles, they were everywhere publicly received by this Church; nor can, within that period, any Church be found which does not agree therein. So that they are, as it were, *universal notions*, implanted in the minds of all Christians from the first, not so much from any particular passages of Scripture as from all; from the general scope and tenor of the entire Gospel; from the nature and design of the religion therein established; and from the uniform tradition of the apostles, who, together with the faith, delivered down Church-rites of this sort, and (so to speak) general interpretations of the Gospel, throughout the whole world; otherwise it were incredible, yea, it were altogether impossible, that they should be received with such universal consent, everywhere and always."

<sup>1</sup> The Italics are Bp. Beveridge's.

### III. IMPUTATION OF FALSE MOTIVES, AND SO SLANDERING.

There is, however, another class of desertions of the truth, which, in your natural character, as we are persuaded, you would most abhor, but which your assumed one has forced upon you; I mean, imputation of dishonesty to men whom, in your conscience, you believe and know to be honest. This was indeed a necessary part of the fiction; for an agreement with the Church of Rome in things indifferent, or upon which our Church has not deemed it necessary to pronounce, would even to ultra-Protestants appear to involve no very serious charge. It became requisite, then, to insinuate that they agreed with Rome further than was expressed, although prudential or other motives kept them from avowing it. This the fiction enabled you to do covertly, since such dishonesty has ever been part of the corrupt policy of modern Rome. Hence such phrases as—

“We make allowance of those difficulties which impede your perception or *your avowal* of the truth.” (p. 6.)

Further, you know that these authors had written also against Popery, and republished older writings against it: their very tracts are known by the name of “Tracts against Popery and Dissent,” although, when they were commenced, Dissent was every where a pressing evil: Popery had scarcely begun to bestir itself, and was therefore the less noticed<sup>1</sup>. You know that all occasions of guarding against the corruptions of Rome had been used in the very tracts corrective of dissent. Such writers, however, would have been but bad allies to the Pope, and therefore this proceeding must, by the laws of fiction, be represented as insincere. Hence such passages as—

“We pardon some expressions towards us; compelled, no doubt, partly by the unhappy circumstances of your country. You have indeed sometimes employed terms which we well know our adversaries use in derision of us; but, we repeat, we can pardon these, whether they are the result of prejudices still entertained by you, or *are employed for some other*

<sup>1</sup> A new series of “Tracts against Romanism” had meanwhile been actually commenced, although not then published.

*reason.* (p. 6, 7.) That communion, of which the present circumstances of your country have made you, *almost unavoidably*, members. (p. 11.) While we perceive with delight that you have always spoken, in your own person, in accordance with our sentiments on this head, you have, at the same time, selected some tracts from early writers of your communion, in which our sentiments are impugned. These old tracts will not be read with much attention, compared, at least, with your own more lively productions: they can too be readily withdrawn when it is expedient: for they are not a pledge of your opinions as strong as your own writings. In the mean time, you may appeal to your republication of them as a proof that you have not leagued yourselves with us."

Now of all this, Sir, you do not believe one syllable; you do *not* think that, either in the republication of the older, or the protests of the more modern tracts against Popery, their editors or authors were actuated by any such motives; <sup>1</sup> while you impute insincerity, you have reason to believe them as sincere as yourself. It is an ill tree which brings forth fruit thus corrupt.

But is it then a duty to forget that Rome was our mother. through whom we were born to Christ; that she was the instrument chosen by God's good providence to bring the Gospel to the wild Heathen tribes from which most of us are sprung? Are we to be so engrossed with modern controversies, and modern corruptions, as to forget ancient heresies, and those the most deadly, those of Arius and Pelagius, against which she maintained the faith once delivered to the Saints?—are we to forget all past gratitude, all bowels of mercy towards her who was our mother? So to pray *against* her corruptions as not to pray *for* her, to cherish no memory of what she was, to Europe and to ourselves? and in her present guilt, to forget our own gratitude? What should we think, if in some future age, New Zealand and Taheite were to cast out our name as evil? She

<sup>1</sup> Meanwhile, however, the calumny is spread in real earnest. The anonymous compiler of the "Specimens of Theological Teaching," &c. among the very few statements on which he ventures, echoes it, "Indeed, while these writers profess their love and reverence for the Church of Rome, [as it is?], they take care to *protest* against it, as all Protestants *of course must do.*" (p. 37.)

has been an unnatural mother, but are we therefore to be unnatural children? Should we glory in a mother's shame?

Let me quote the warm language of a modern writer<sup>1</sup>, whose bias lay in an opposite direction, and whose words come fresh from a conscience freeing itself from such ingratitude.

“The aboriginal Briton may dispute the gratitude which he owes to the church of Rome for his conversion; the Englishman, who derives his blood from Saxon veins, will be ungrateful if he be not ready to confess the debt which Christian Europe owes to Rome; and to profess, that whenever she shall cast off those inventions of men, which now cause a separation between us, we shall gladly pay her such honours as are due to the country which was instrumental in bringing us within the pale of the universal church of Jesus Christ.”

There is one more evil desertion of truth, which I fear cannot be ascribed to any wish to “adorn your tale,” although you have thereby been enabled to convey it in a form less manifestly offensive. You say,

“Another piece of advice which we shall give to you, (as we give it to all our Missionaries,) is, that you should adopt every means to undermine the influence of those whose writings hold out no hope that they may be won over to the true Church. They are, in truth, dangerous men, and you should represent them as such. Be not deceived by their apparent amiability, by their virtuous conduct, or by their extent of learning. These very circumstances render them the more to be dreaded. Suffer not such men to be the instructors of youth. Do not permit them to occupy those places which public spirit alone ought to make you anxious to occupy, even independently of any desire for your individual advancement.” (p. 34.)

I can the less lay this to the account of the fiction, because it is manifestly the one object of your whole attack upon these writers; whether out of private friendship to Dr. Hampden, or of alarm for yourself, as a member of the same school—*nam tua res agitur, cum proximus ardet Ucalegon*—it is notorious that you imagined these writers to be the principal authors of the measures taken in consequence of that unhappy appointment, and that your avowed object was, to “effect a diversion<sup>2</sup>.” Herein you were mistaken; since there prevailed

<sup>1</sup> Short's Sketch of the History of the Church of England, sec. 14.

<sup>2</sup> The object, thus covertly conveyed in this first essay, is now boldly



throughout Oxford one universal feeling of alarm, (which under the name of "panic," the heathen, more religiously than we, would have ascribed to "the gods,") as soon as the appointment was known. These individuals but joined what already existed. But I would now speak of the truth of the imputation only; you have known, or have been aided (we have ground to think) by others acquainted with those of whom you speak; and you dare not, in your own person, avow your belief, or even your suspicion, of the truth of the allegation, which, under your assumed character, you have insinuated. You know and believe it to be untrue; and thus there is another evil of these unhappy disguises, that they furnish men the temptation of half saying, what they would shrink from speaking openly, as knowing or suspecting it to be untrue: but now, if untrue, it is to pass as part of the jest, and so they take courage, and stifle their consciences.

For ourselves, you will have done us good service; your attack will fall harmless alike on those who are now with the Lord, or upon those who remain; but your revival of the old Presbyterian cry against "Prelacy and Popery," will show the

avowed in the "Specimens of Theological Teaching," and in the Edinburgh Review. To any one acquainted with Oxford, the notion is altogether absurd: there is in Oxford, happily, far too much thoughtfulness and scrupulousness to be influenced by any party, however powerful: men here form their individual convictions, according to their own consciences; party-feeling neither existed, nor had it existed, would it have had any influence; but, in truth, individuals of every shade of religious opinion within the latitude left free by our Articles, were united by one feeling of common danger impending over the Church, and that, independently of each other; they met and acted together spontaneously, actuated only by one common apprehension. The opinions, then, of a certain number of the "Corpus Committee," is, in reality, nihil ad rem; but will any one say that the charges against Dr. Hampden were confined to *undervaluing* antiquity, or the sacraments, or the authority of the Church, or that the prominent charges were not rather his vague and Sabellian notions on the doctrine of the Trinity, the rationalizing of the Atonement, and generally, a system opposed to the Articles? The Articles of our Church, not the teaching of any set of men, were made our standard; and to this standard and primitive antiquity would we appeal for ourselves.

members of our Church what is really censured under the name of Popery: they will see the necessity of striking back into the old paths, and manfully avowing truths, which many of late have shrunk from, as invidious. You, Sir, have been consistent: it is, if we are rightly informed, a favourite maxim with you that the bishops have been the great hinderers of the development of the Reformation for the last 300 years; *i. e.*, of such development as Germany has suffered under for the last half century, and from which she is now in part recovering. The Rationalists, it is known, ever maintained the same; they also complained that our bishops were the great hindrances to the extension of their theories among us. Therein they saw, indeed, but a portion of the truth; since our bishops were produced by the system, which under God's blessing they contributed to perpetuate; but still they saw that our system possessed a principle of stability, or as they deemed it, stationariness, foreign to their own. Those who wish well to our Church will now see who, under Almighty God, are the real upholders of sound doctrine among us; they who respect the office of a bishop, even antecedently to any consideration of individual merit in the person consecrated thereto, or they who, as yourself, (p. 16.) ridicule such respect; they will see that the cry of Popery is but a feint devised by the arch-enemy of the Church, whereby to hurry men down the steep descent of ultra-Protestantism to its uniform end, the "denial of the Lord who bought them." And knowing that that Church alone is safe who guards the deposit of sound doctrine committed unto her, they will not be scared by shadows to abandon the reality, or shrinking from the reproach which our forefathers bore faithfully, fall into the toils, on either side spread for them, whether of the Socinian or the Papal anti-Christianism.

*Christ Church, St. Mark's<sup>1</sup> Day.*

<sup>1</sup> See Collect for the Day.

# CONTENTS.

---

## No. 71.

### ON THE CONTROVERSY WITH THE ROMANISTS.

	PAGE
Against Romanism, No. 1.....	1

## No. 72.

### ARCHBISHOP USSHER ON PRAYERS FOR THE DEAD.

Against Romanism, No. 2.....	1
§ 1. Of the Persons for whom after death Prayers were offered in the early Church .....	3
§ 2. Of the Primary Intention of Prayers for the Dead .....	9
§ 3. Of the Place and Condition of Souls departed .....	25
§ 4. Of the Opinion of the Heretic Aerius, touching Prayers for the Dead .....	40
§ 5. Of the Profit of Prayers for the Dead to the Persons prayed for .....	49
Remarks .....	54

## No. 73.

### ON THE INTRODUCTION OF RATIONALISTIC PRINCIPLES INTO RELIGION.

§ 1. The Rationalistic and the Catholic spirit compared to- gether .....	2
§ 2. Remarks on Mr. Erskine's "Internal Evidence".....	15
§ 3. Remarks on Mr. Abbott's "Corner Stone" .....	34
Postscript .....	54

## No. 74.

## CATENA PATRUM. No. I.

TESTIMONY OF WRITERS IN THE LATER ENGLISH CHURCH,  
TO THE DOCTRINE OF THE APOSTOLICAL SUCCESSION.

List of Authors cited :—	PAGE
Bilson.—Perpetual Government of Christ's Church . . . . .	3
Hooker —Ecclesiastical Polity . . . . .	4
Bancroft.—Sermon preached at St. Paul's Cross . . . . .	5
Andrews.—Sermon on Whitsunday . . . . .	6, 7
Hall.—On Episcopacy . . . . .	10
Laud.—Conference with Fisher . . . . .	11
Bramhall.—Vindication of the Church of England . . . . .	12
Ibid.—Vindication of Grotius . . . . .	14
Mede.—Sermon on Urim and Thummim . . . . .	16
Mason.—Vindiciæ Ecclesiæ Anglicanæ . . . . .	17
Sanderson.—Divine Right of Episcopacy . . . . .	18
Hammond.—On the Power of the Keys. . . . .	ib.
Taylor.—On Episcopacy . . . . .	20
Heylin.—On Episcopacy . . . . .	21
Allestrie.—Sermons . . . . .	22
Pearson.—On the Creed . . . . .	23
Fell.—On Ephesians, v. 9. . . . .	24
Bull.—Vindication of the English Church . . . . .	25
Stillingfleet.—Unreasonableness of Separation . . . . .	ib.
Ken.—Exposition of the Church Catechism . . . . .	26
Beveridge.—Sermon on Christ's Presence with His Ministers. .	27
Sharp.—Sermons, Vol. vii. Of the Church . . . . .	28
Scott.—Christian Life . . . . .	29
Wake.—Exposition of the Doctrine of the English Church. . .	30
Potter.—On Church Government . . . . .	31
Nelson.—Festivals and Fasts . . . . .	32
Kettleworth.—Practical Believer . . . . .	33
Hickes.—Treatise on the Episcopal Order. . . . .	ib.
Law.—Second Letter to the Bishop of Bangor . . . . .	34
Johnson.—Unbloody Sacrifice. . . . .	35
Dodwell.—Discourse on the one Priesthood, one Altar . . . . .	37
Collier.—Moral Essays . . . . .	39
Leslie.—Case of the Regale and Pontificale . . . . .	40
Wilson.—Private Thoughts . . . . .	41
Bingham.—Sermons on Absolution . . . . .	42
Skelton.—Discourse 71 . . . . .	44

	PAGE
Samuel Johnson .....	45
Horne.—Charge and Primary Visitation of his Diocese .....	46
Jones of Nayland.—Lectures on Hebrews iii. ....	50
Horsley.—Sermon on Matt. xvi. 18, 19. ....	51
Heber.—Sermons in England .....	52
Jebb.—Pastoral Instructions .....	54
Van Mildert.—Bampton Lectures .....	ib.
Mant.—Parochial Sermons .....	56

## No. 75.

ON THE ROMAN BREVIARY AS EMBODYING THE SUB-  
STANCE OF THE DEVOTIONAL SERVICES OF THE CHURCH  
CATHOLIC.

History of the Breviary.....	1
§ 1. Analysis of the Seven Daily Services of the Church Catholic, as preserved in the Breviary.....	17
§ 2. Service for Sunday, June 21, 1801.....	26
§ 3. Week-day Service.....	87
§ 4. Part of the Service for August 6th.....	97
§ 5. Part of the Service for August 10th .....	117
§ 6. Service for March 21st .....	135
§ 7. Service in Commemoration of the Dead in Christ .....	146
§ 8. Service for the Sundays in Advent.....	158
§ 9. Service for Week-days in Advent .....	184

## No. 76.

## CATENA PATRUM. No. II.

TESTIMONY OF WRITERS IN THE LATER ENGLISH CHURCH,  
TO THE DOCTRINE OF BAPTISMAL REGENERATION.

## List of Authors cited :—

Jewel.—Treatise on the Sacrament .....	4
Ibid.—Reply to Mr. Harding's Censure.....	6
Hooker.—On Ecclesiastical Polity .....	7
Andrews.—On the Holy Ghost .....	9
Donn.—Sermon.....	11
Field.—Of the Church .....	13
Jackson.—On Christ's Exercise of his everlasting Priesthood..	ib.
Ibid.—Of Christ's Session at the right-hand of God .....	17
Laud.—Conference with Fisher .....	18

	PAGE
Bramhall.—Of Persons dying without Baptism .....	19
Hammond.—Sermon xv. A New Creature .....	20
Taylor.—Life of Christ.—On Baptism .....	24
Heylin.—On the Apostles' Creed .....	26
Allestrie.—Sermon .....	28
Barrow.—Of the Holy Ghost .....	29
Thorndike.—Book iii. chap. viii. ....	31
Pearson.—Exposition of the Creed .....	32
Bull.—Sermon vii. ....	33
Comber.—Part iii. sect. iii. ....	ib.
Ken.—Exposition of Church Catechism .....	36
Patrick.—On Baptism ..	ib.
Beveridge.—On Admission into the Church by Baptism ....	37
Sharp.—Vol. v. Sermon v. ....	40
Scott.—Christian Life .....	41
Jenkin.—On Christian Religion .....	43
Sherlock.—Vol. ii. Discourse vii. ....	ib.
Wall.—On Infant Baptism ..	44
Potter.—Of Church Government .....	45
Nelson.—Festivals and Fasts .....	46
Waterland.—On Regeneration .....	ib.
Kettlewell.—On the Creed.— <i>Article</i> , Forgiveness of Sins ....	47
Hickes.—Christian Priesthood .....	ib.
Johnson.—Unbloody Sacrifice .....	48
Leslie.—On Water Baptism .....	ib.
Wilson.—Maxims of Piety .....	49
Bingham.—On Lay Baptism .....	ib.
Skelton.—Vol. ii. Discourse xxi. ....	51
Horne.—Vol. ii. Discourse xviii. ....	52
Jones.—On the figurative Language of the Holy Scriptures ..	53
Heber.—Sermons in England .....	54
Jebb.—Pastoral Instructions .....	ib.
Van Mildert.—Bampton Lectures .....	ib.
Mant.—Bampton Lectures ....	55

## TRACTS FOR THE TIMES.

ON THE CONTROVERSY WITH THE  
ROMANISTS.*(Against Romanism.—No. 1.)*

THE controversy with the Romanists has overtaken us “like a summer’s cloud.” We find ourselves in various parts of the country preparing for it, yet, when we look back, we cannot trace the steps by which we arrived at our present position. We do not recollect what our feelings were this time last year on the subject,—what was the state of our apprehensions and anticipations. All we know is, that here we are, from long security, ignorant why we are not Roman Catholics, and they on the other hand are said to be spreading and strengthening on all sides of us, vaunting of their success, real or apparent, and taunting us with our inability to argue with them.

The Gospel of CHRIST is not a matter of mere argument; it does not follow that we are wrong, and they are right, because we cannot defend ourselves. But we cannot claim to direct the faith of others, we cannot check the progress of what we account error, we cannot be secure (humanly speaking) against the weakness of our own hearts some future day, unless we have learned to analyse and to state formally our own reasons for believing what we do believe, and thus have fixed our creed in our memories and our judgments. This is the especial duty of Christian Ministers, who, as St. Paul in the Acts of the Apostles, must be ready to dispute, whether with Jews or Greeks. That we are at present very ill practised in this branch of our duty, (a point it is scarcely necessary to prove) is owing in a very great measure to the protection and favour which have long been extended to the English clergy by the state. Statesmen have felt that it was their interest to maintain a Church, which, absorbing into itself a great portion of the religious feeling of the

country, sobers and chastens what it has so attracted, and suppresses by its weight the intractable elements which it cannot persuade; and, while preventing the political mischiefs resulting whether from fanaticism or selfwill, is altogether free from those formidable qualities which distinguish the ecclesiastical genius of Rome. Thus the clergy have been in that peaceful condition in which the civil magistrate supersedes the necessity of struggling for life and ascendancy; and amid their privileges it is not wonderful that they should have grown secure, and have neglected to inform themselves on subjects on which they were not called to dispute. It must be added, too, that a feeling of the untenable nature of the Roman doctrines, a contempt for their arguments, and a notion that they could never prevail in an educated country, have not a little contributed to expose us to our present surprise.

In saying all this, it is not forgotten that there is still scattered about the Church much learning upon the subject of Romanism, and much intelligent opposition to it; nor, on the other hand, does the present series of Tracts pretend to be more than an attempt towards a suitable consideration of it on the part of persons who feel in themselves, and see in others a deficiency of information.

It will be the object, then, of these Tracts, should it be allowed the editor to fulfil his present intention, to consider variously, the *one* question, with which we are likely to be attacked,—why, in matter of fact, we remain separate from Rome. Some general remarks on the line of argument hence resulting, will be the subject of this paper.

Our position is this. We are seated at our own posts, engaged in our own work, secular or religious, interfering with no one, and anticipating no harm, when we hear of the encroachments of Romanism around us. We can but honour all good Romanists for such aggression; it marks their earnestness, their confidence in their own cause, and their charity towards those whom they consider in error. We need not be bitter against them; moderation, and candour, are virtues under all circumstances. Yet for all that, we may resist them manfully, when they assail us. This



then, I say, is our position, a defensive one ; we are assailed, and we defend ourselves and our flocks. There is no plea for calling on us in England to do more than this,—to defend ourselves. We are under no constraint to go out of our way spontaneously to prove charges against the Romanists ; but when asked about our faith, we give a reason why we are this way of thinking, and not that. This makes our task in the controversy incomparably easier, than if we were forced to exhibit an offensive front, or volunteer articles of impeachment against the rival communion. “ Let every man abide in the same calling wherein he was called,” is St. Paul’s direction. We find ourselves under the Anglican regimen ; let every one of us, cleric and layman, remain in it, till our opponents have shown cause why we should change, till we have reason to suspect we are wrong. The *onus probandi* plainly lies with them. This, I say, simplifies our argument, as allowing us to content ourselves with less of controversy than otherwise would be incumbent on us. We have the strength of possession and prescription. We are not *obliged* to prove them incurably corrupt and heretical ; no, nor our own system unexceptionable. It is in our power, if we will, to take very low ground ; it is quite enough to ascertain that reasons cannot be brought why we should go over from our side to theirs.

But besides this, there are the Apostle’s injunctions against disorder. Did we go over to the Roman Catholics, we should be fomenting divisions among ourselves, which would be a *primâ facie* case against us. Of course there are cases where division is justifiable. Did we believe, for instance, the English Church to be absolutely heretical, and Romanism to be pure and Catholic, it would be a duty, as the lesser evil, to take part in a division which truth demanded. Else it would be a sin. Those dissenters who consider union with the state to be apostasy, or the doctrine of baptismal regeneration a heresy, are wrong, not in that they separate from us, but in that they so think.

And further, a debt of gratitude to that particular branch of the Church Catholic through which God made us Christians, through which we were new born, instructed, and (if so be) ordained to the ministerial office ; a debt of reverence and affection towards the

saints of that Church ; the tie of that invisible communion with the dead as well as the living, into which the Sacraments introduce us ; the memory of our great teachers, champions, and confessors, now in Paradise, especially of those of the seventeenth century,—Hammond's name alone, were there no other, or Hooker's, or Ken's,—bind us to the English Church, by cords of love, except something very serious can be proved against it. But this surely is impossible. The only conceivable causes for leaving its communion are, I suppose, the two following ; first, that it is involved in some damnable heresy ; or secondly, that it is not in possession of the sacraments : and so far we join issue with the Romanist, for these are among the chief points which he attempts to prove against us.

However plain and satisfactory as is this account of our position, it is not sufficient, for various reasons, to meet the need of the multitude of men. The really pious and sober among our flocks will be contented with it. They will naturally express their suspicion and dislike of any doctrine new to them, and it will require some considerable body of proof to convince them that they ought even to open their ears to it. But it must be recollected, that there is a mass of persons, easily caught by novelty, who will be too impetuous to be restrained by such advice as has been suggested. Curiosity and feverishness of mind do not wait to decide on which side of a dispute the *onus probandi* lies. The same feelings which carry men now to dissent, will carry them to Romanism ; novelty being an essential stimulant of popular devotion, and the Roman system, to say nothing of the intrinsic majesty and truth which remain in it amid its corruptions, abounding in this and other stimulants of a most potent and effective character. And further, there will ever be a number of refined and affectionate minds, who, disappointed in finding full matter for their devotional feelings in the English system, as at present conducted, betake themselves, through human frailty, to Rome. Besides, *ex parte* statements may easily suggest scruples even to the more sensible and sober portion of the community ; and though they will not at all be moved ultimately from the principle above laid down, *viz.* not to change unless

clear reason for change is assigned, yet they may fairly demand of their teachers and guides what they have to say in answer to these statements, which do seem to justify a change, not indeed at once, but in the event of their not being refuted.

Thus then we stand as regards Romanism. Strictly speaking, and in the eyes of soberly religious men, it ought not to be embraced, even could it be made appear in some points superior to (what is now practically) the Anglican system; St. Paul even advising a slave to remain a slave, though he had the option of liberty. If all men were rational, little indeed would be necessary in the way of argument, only so much as would be enough to set right the misconceptions which might arise on the subject in dispute. But the state of things being otherwise, we must consult for men as they are; and in order to meet their necessities, we are obliged to take a more energetic and striking line in the controversy than can in strict logic be required of us, to defend ourselves by an offensive warfare, and to expose our opponents' argument with a view of recommending our own.

This being the state of the case, the arguments to be urged against Romanism ought to be taken from such parts of the general controversy as bear most upon *practice*, and at the same time kept clear of what is more especially sacred, and painful to dispute about. Its adherents' assault on us will turn (it is to be presumed) on strictly practical considerations. They will admit that the English Church approaches in many points very near to themselves, and for that very reason was wrong in separating from them:—that it is in danger far more as being schismatical than as heretical:—that our LORD commanded and predicted that His Church should be one; therefore, that the Roman and the Anglican communions cannot both be His Church, but that one must be external to it;—that the question to be considered by us is, what our *chance* is of being the true Church; and, in consequence, of possessing the sacraments:—that we confess Rome to be a branch of CHRIST'S Church, and admit her orders, but that Rome does not acknowledge us; hence that it is safer for us to unite to Rome:—that we are, in matter of fact, cut off from the great body of the Church Catholic, and stand by our-

selves :—that we suffer all manner of schism and heresy to exist, and to propagate itself among us, which it is inconceivable that the true Church, guided by the HOLY SPIRIT, should ever do :—that this circumstance, if there were no other, being an inconsistency, involves a *primâ facie* case against us, for the consideration of those who are not competent to decide in the matter of doctrine :—that if our creed were *true*, GOD would prosper us in *maintaining* it, according to the promise :—moreover, were there no other reason, that our forms of administering the sacraments are not such as to make us sure that we receive GOD's grace in them. These and the like arguments, we may suppose, will be urged upon the attention of our members, being not of a technical and scholastic, but of a powerfully practical character ; and such must be ours to oppose them. Much might be said on this part of the subject. There are a number of arguments which are scarcely more than ingenious exhibitions, such as would be admired in any game where skill is every thing, but which as arguments tell only with those on our own side, while an adversary thinks them unfair. Their use is not here denied in matter of fact, *viz.* in confirming those in an opinion, who already hold it, and wish reasons for it. When a man is (rightly or wrongly) of one particular way of thinking, he needs, and (it may be added) allowably needs very little argument to support him in it to himself. Still it is right that that argument should be substantially sound ; substantially, because for many reasons, certain accidental peculiarities in the form of it may be necessary for the peculiarities of his mind, which has been accustomed to move in some one line and not in another. If the argument is radically unreal, or (what may be called) rhetorical or sophistical, it may serve the purpose of encouraging those who are already convinced, though scarcely without doing mischief to them, but certainly it will offend and alienate the more acute and sensible ; while those who are in doubt, and who desire some real and substantial ground for their faith, will not bear to be put off with such shadows. Thus, for instance, to meet the Romanists' charge against us of scepticism, because we do not believe this or that portion of their doctrine, an

argument has been sustained by Protestants, in proof of the scepticism of the Roman system. Who does not see that, Romanism erring on the whole in superstition not in scepticism, this is an unreal argument, which will but offend doubting and distressed minds, as if they were played with; however plausibly and successfully it might be sustained in a trial of strength, and whatever justice there really may be in it? Nor is it becoming, over and above its inexpediency, to dispute for victory not for truth, and to be careless of the manner in which we urge conclusions, however sound and important. Again, when it is said that the saints cannot hear our prayers, unless God reveal them to them; so that Almighty God, upon the Roman theory, conveys from us to them those requests which they are to ask back again of Him for us, we are certainly using an unreal, because an unscriptural argument, Moses on the Mount having the sin of his people first revealed to him by God, that he in turn might intercede with God for them. Indeed, it is through Him "in whom we live, and move, and have our being," that we are able in *this* life to hear the requests of each other, and to present them to Him in prayer. Such an argument then, while shocking and profane to the feelings of a Romanist, is shallow even in the judgment of a philosopher. Here may be mentioned the unwarrantable application of texts, such as that of John v. 39. "Search the Scriptures," in disproof of the Roman doctrine that the Apostles have handed down some necessary truths by Catholic Tradition; or again, Eccles. xi. 3. "If the tree fall towards the south, or towards the north, in the place where the tree falleth, there it shall be," as a palmary objection to Purgatory.

The arguments, then, which we use, must be such as are likely to convince serious and earnest minds, which are really seeking for the truth, not amusing themselves with intellectual combats, or desiring to support an existing opinion any how. However popular these latter methods may be, of however long standing, however easy both to find and to use, they are a scandal; and, while they lower our religious standard from the first, they are sure of hurting our cause in the end. But again, our arguments must not only be true and practical, they must not be abstract arguments and on abstract points. For instance, it will do

us little good with the common run of men, in the question of the Pope's power, to draw the distinction, true though it is, between his primacy in honour and authority, and his sovereignty or his universal jurisdiction. The force of the distinction is not here questioned, but it will be unintelligible to minds unpractised in ecclesiastical history. Either the Bishop of Rome has really a claim upon our deference, or he has not; so it will be urged; and our safe argument at the present day will lie in waiving the question altogether, and saying that, even if he has, according to the primitive rule, ever so much authority, (and that he has some, e. g. the precedence of other bishops, need not be denied,) that it is in matter of fact altogether suspended, and under abeyance, while he upholds a corrupt system, against which it is our duty to protest. At present all will see he ought to have no "jurisdiction, power, superiority, preeminence, or authority, within this realm." It will be time enough to settle his legitimate claims, and make distinctions, when he removes all existing impediments to our acknowledging him; it will be time enough to argue on this subject, after first deciding the other points of the controversy. Again, the question of the Rule of Faith is an abstract one to men in general, till the progress of the controversy opens its bearings upon them. True, the intelligible argument of ultra-Protestantism may be taken, and we may say, "the Bible, and nothing but the Bible," but this is an unthankful rejection of another great gift, equally from God, such as no true Anglican can tolerate. If, on the other hand, we proceed to take the sounder view, that the Bible is the *record* of necessary truth, or of matters of faith, and the Church Catholic's tradition is the *interpreter* of it, then we are in danger of refined and intricate questions, which are uninteresting and uninfluential with the many. It is not till they are made to see that certain notable tenets of Romanism depend solely on the Apocrypha, or on Tradition, not on Scripture, that they will understand why the question of the Rule of Faith is an important one.

It has been already said that our arguments must also keep clear, as much as possible, of the subjects more especially sacred. This is our privilege in these latter days, if we understand it, that with all that is painful in our controversies, we are spared that distressing necessity which lay upon the early Church, of discuss-

ing questions relative to the divine nature. The doctrines of the Trinity and Incarnation form a most distressing subject of discussion, for two reasons; first, as involving the direct contemplation of heavenly things, when one should wish to bow the head and be silent; next, as leading to arguments about things possible and impossible with God, that is (practically) to a rationalistic line of thought. How He is Three and yet One, how He could become man, what were the peculiarities of that union, how He could be every where as God, yet locally present as man, in what sense God could be said to suffer, die, and rise again,—all these questions were endured as a burden by the early Christians for our sake, who come after; and with the benefit of their victories over error, as if we had borne the burden and heat of the day, it were perverse indeed in us, to plunge into needless discussions of the same character. This consideration will lead us to put into the back ground the controversy about the Holy Eucharist, which is almost certain to lead to profane and rationalistic thoughts in the minds of the many, and cannot well be discussed in words at all, without the sacrifice of “godly fear,” while it is well nigh anticipated by the ancient statements, and the determinations of the Church concerning the Incarnation<sup>1</sup>. It is true that learned men, such as Stillingfleet, have drawn lines of distinction between the doctrine of transubstantiation, and that high mystery; but the question is, whether they are so level to the intelligence of the many, as to secure the Anglican disputant from fostering irreverence, whether in himself or his hearers, if he ventures on such an argument. If transubstantiation must be opposed, it is in another way; by showing, as may well be done, and as Stillingfleet himself has done, that, in matter of fact, it was not the doctrine of the early Church, but an innovation at such or such a time; a line of discussion which requires learning both to receive and to appreciate.

In order to illustrate the above view, the following are selected by way of specimen of those *practical grievances*, to which Christians are subjected in the Roman Communion, and which should be put into the foreground in the controversy.

<sup>1</sup> e.g. Chrysost. ep. ad Cæsar. vid. Hooker's remarks on the subject, Eccl. Pol. v.

1. The denial of the cup to the laity. Considering the great importance of the Holy Eucharist to our salvation, this seems a very serious consideration for those who seek to be saved. Our LORD says, "Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink His blood, ye have no life in you." If it be recriminated, as it sometimes is, that we think it no risk to sprinkle instead of immersing in baptism, it is obvious to answer that we not only do not forbid, we enjoin immersion; we only do not forbid sprinkling in the case of infants, and that the laity are defrauded, if defrauded, by their own fault, or the fault of the age, not the fault of the Church.

2. The necessity of the priest's intention to the validity of the Sacraments. The Church of Rome has determined, that a Sacrament does not confer grace unless the priest means it to do so; so that if he be an unbeliever, nay, if he, from malice or other cause, withholds his intention, it is not a means of salvation. Now, considering what the Romanists themselves will admit, the great practical corruption of the Church at various times,—considering that infidels and profligates have been in the Papal Chair, and in other high stations,—who can answer, on the Church of Rome's own ground, that there is still preserved to it the Apostolical succession as conveyed in its sacrament of Orders? what individual can answer that he himself really receives in the consecrated wafer, even that moiety of the great Christian blessing which alone remains to him in the Roman Communion? *We* indeed, believe, (and with comfort) that the administration of the Sacrament is effectual in those Churches, in spite of their undermining their own claim to the gift. Still let it be recollected, no one can become a Romanist without professing that the Church he has joined has no truer certainty of possessing it than that Communion has, which, probably on the very account of its uncertainty in this matter, he has deemed it right to abandon.

3. The necessity of Confession. By the council of Trent, every member of the Church must confess himself to a priest once a year at least. This confession extends to all mortal sins, that is, to all sins which either are done willingly or are of any magnitude. Without this confession, which must be accompanied by hearty sorrow for the things confessed, no one can be partaker of



the Holy Communion. Here is a third obstacle in the way of our receiving the grace of the Sacraments in the Roman Church, which surely requires our diligent examination, before it be passed over. That there is no such impediment sanctioned in Scripture, is plain, yet to believe in it is a point of faith with the Romanist. The practice is grievous enough; but it is not enough to submit to it: you must believe that it is part of the Gospel doctrine, or you are committing one of those mortal sins which are to be confessed; and you must believe, moreover, that every one who does not believe it, is excluded from the hope of salvation. But, not to dwell on the belief in the necessity of confession itself, consider the number of points of faith which the Church of Rome has set up. You must believe every one of them; if you have allowed yourself to doubt any one of them, you must repent of it, and confess it to the priest. If you knowingly omit any one such doubts which you have entertained, and much more if you still cherish it, your confession is worse than useless; nay, such conduct is considered sacrilege, or the sin against the HOLY GHOST. Further, if under such circumstances, you partake of the Communion, it is a partaking of it unworthily to your condemnation.

4. The unwarranted anathemas of the Roman Church is a subject to which the last head has led us. Here let us put aside, at present, the prejudice which has been excited in the minds of Protestants, against the principle itself of anathematizing, by the variety and comparative unimportance of the subjects upon which the Roman Church has applied it in practice. Let us consider merely the state of the case in that Church. Every Romanist is, by the creed of his Church, in mortal sin, unless he believes every one else excluded from Christian salvation, who with means of knowing, yet declines any one of those points which have been ruled to be points of faith. If a man, for instance, who has had the means of instruction, doubts the Church's power of granting indulgences, he is exposed, according to the Romanists, to eternal ruin. Now this consideration, one would think, ought to weigh with those of our own Church who may be half converts to the Roman; not that our own salvation is not our first concern, but

that such cruelty as this is, such narrowing the Scripture terms of salvation, (for no one can say this doctrine is found in Scripture,) is a presumption against the purity of that Church's teaching. But a further reflection may be added to the above. Such as have not had an opportunity of knowing the truth, are, it must be observed, *not* exposed to this condemnation. This at first sight would seem a comfort to those whose relations and friends have died in Protestantism. But observe, the Church of Rome, we know, retains the practice of praying for the dead. It will be natural for a convert from Protestantism, first of all, to turn his thoughts towards those dearest relations, say his parents, who have lived and died in involuntary ignorance of Catholicism. He is not allowed to do so, he can only pray for the souls in *Purgatory*; none have the privilege of being in *Purgatory* but such as have died in the communion of the Roman Church, and his parents died in Protestantism.

5. *Purgatory* may be mentioned as another grievous doctrine of Romanism. Here again, if Scripture, as interpreted by tradition, taught it, we should be bound to receive it; but, knowing as we do, that even St. Austin questioned the doctrine in the fifth century, we may well suspect the evidence for it. The doctrine is this; that a certain definite punishment is exacted by Almighty GOD for all sins committed after baptism; and that they who have not by sufferings in this life, whether trouble, penance, and the like, run through it, must complete it during the intermediate state in a place called *Purgatory*. Again, all who die in venial sin, that is in sins of infirmity, such as are short of mortal, go to *Purgatory* also. Now what a light does this throw upon the death of beloved and revered friends! Instead of their "resting from their labours," as Scripture says, there are (ordinarily speaking) none who have not to pass a time of trial and purification, and, as Romanists are authoritatively taught, in fire, or a torment analogous to fire. There is no one who can for himself look forward to death with hope and humble thankfulness. Tell the sufferer upon a sick bed that his earthly pangs are to terminate in *Purgatory*, what comfort can he draw from religion? If it be said, that it is a comfort in the case of bad men, who have

begun to repent on their death-bed; this is true, I do not deny it; still the doctrine, in accordance, be it observed, with the ultra-Protestantism of this age, evidently sacrifices the better part of the community to the less deserving. Should the foregoing reasoning seem to dwell too much on the question of comfortable-ness and uncomfortable-ness, not of truth, I reply, first, that I have already stated that Scripture, as interpreted by tradition, does not teach the doctrine: next, that I am arguing against the Romanists, who are accustomed to recommend their communion on the very ground of its being safer, more satisfactory, and more comfortable.

6. The Invocation of Saints. Here again the *practice* should be considered, not the *theory*. Scripture speaks clearly and solemnly about CHRIST as the sole Mediator. When prayer to the Saints is recommended *at all times and places*, as ever present guardians, and their good works pleaded in GOD's sight, is not this such an infringement upon the plain word of GOD, such a violation of our allegiance to our only Saviour, as must needs be an insult to Him? His honour He will not give to another. Can we with a safe conscience do it? Should we act thus in a parallel case even with an earthly friend? Does not St. John's example warn us against falling down before angels? Does not St. Paul warn us against a voluntary humility and worshipping of angels? And are not these texts *indications* of GOD's will, which ought to guide our conduct? Is it not *safest* not to pay them this extraordinary honour? As an illustration of what I mean, I will quote the blessing pronounced by the Pope on the assembled people at Easter:—

“The holy Apostles Peter and Paul, from whom has been derived our power and authority, themselves intercede for us to the LORD. Amen.”

“For the prayers and righteous deeds of the blessed Mary, ever Virgin, of the blessed Michael the Archangel, of the blessed John the Baptist, of the holy Apostles Peter and Paul, and of all the Saints, Almighty God have mercy upon you, and JESUS CHRIST absolve you from all your sins, and bring you to life everlasting. Amen.”

“The Almighty and merciful LORD, grant to you pardon, absolution, and remission of all your sins, time for true and fruitful penitence, an ever

penitent heart, and amendment of life, the grace and comfort of the HOLY GHOST, and final perseverance in good works. Amen."

"And the blessing of GOD Almighty, the FATHER, the SON, and the HOLY GHOST, come down upon you and remain with you always. Amen."

7. The Worship of Images might here be added to these instances of grievances which Christians endure in the Communion of Rome, were it not that in England its rulers seem, at present, to have suspended the practice out of policy, though it is expressly recommended by the Council of Trent, as if an edifying usage. In consequence of this decree of the Church, no one can become a Romanist, without implying his belief that the usage is edifying and right; and this itself is a grievance, even though the usage be in this or that place dispensed with.

Such and such-like are the *subjects* which, it is conceived, should be brought into controversy, in disputing with Romanists at the present day. An equally important question remains to be discussed; *viz.*, What the *sources* are, whence we are to gather our opinions of Popery? Here the Romanists complain of their opponents, that, instead of referring to the authoritative documents of their Church, Protestants avail themselves of any errors or excesses of individuals in it, as if the Church were responsible for acts and opinions which it does not enjoin. Thus the legends of relics, superstitions about images, the cruelty of particular prelates or kings, or the accidental fury of a populace, are unfairly imputed to the Church itself. Again, the profligacy of the Popes, at various periods, is made an argument against their religious pretensions as successors to St. Peter; whereas Caiaphas himself had the gift of prophecy, and it is, as they consider, a memorable and instructive circumstance, that in matter of fact, among their worst popes are found the instruments, in God's hand, of some of the most important and salutary acts of the Church. Accordingly they claim to be judged by their formal documents, especially by the decrees of the Council of Trent.

Now here we shall find the truth to lie between the two contending parties. Candour will oblige us to grant that the mere acts of individuals should not be imputed to the body; certainly

no member of the English Church can in common prudence, as well as propriety, do otherwise, since he is exposed to an immediate retort, in consequence of the errors and irregularities which have in Protestant times occurred among ourselves. King Henry the VIIIth, the first promoter of the Reformation, is surely no representative of our faith or feelings; nor Hoadly, in a later age, who was suffered to enjoy his episcopate for 46 years; to say nothing of the various parties and schools which have existed, and do exist among us.

So much then must be granted to the Romanists; yet not so much as they themselves desire. For though the acts of individuals are not the acts of the Church, yet they may be the results, and therefore illustrations of its principles. We cannot consent then to confine ourselves to a mere reference to the text of the Tridentine decrees, as Romanists would have us, apart from the teaching of their doctors, and the practice of the Church, which are surely the legitimate comment upon them. The case stands as follows. A certain system of teaching and practice has existed in the churches of the Roman communion for many centuries; this system was discriminated and fixed in all its outlines at the Council of Trent. It is therefore not unnatural, or rather it is the procedure we adopt in any historical research, to take the general opinions and conduct of the Church in elucidation of their Synodal decrees; just as we take the tradition of the Church Catholic and Apostolic as the legitimate interpreter of Scripture, or of the Apostles' Creed. On the other hand, it is as natural that these decrees, being necessarily concise and guarded, should be much less objectionable than the actual system they represent. It is not wonderful, then, yet it is unreasonable, that Romanists should protest against our going beyond these decrees in adducing evidence of their Church's doctrine, on the ground that nothing more than an assent to them is requisite for communion with her. *E. g.* the Creed of Pópe Pius, which is framed upon the Tridentine decrees, and is the Roman Creed of Communion, only says "I firmly hold there is a Purgatory, and that souls therein detained are aided by the prayers of the faithful," nothing being said of its being a place of punish-

ment, nothing, or all but nothing, which does not admit of being explained of merely an intermediate state. Now supposing we found ourselves in the Roman Communion, of course it would be a great relief to find that we were not bound to believe more than this vague statement, nor should we (I conceive) on account of the received interpretation about Purgatory super-added to it, be obliged to leave our Church. But it is another matter entirely, whether we who are external to that Church, are not bound to consider it as one whole system, written and unwritten, defined indeed and adjusted by general statements, but not limited to them or coincident with them.

The conduct of the Catholics during the troubles of Arianism affords us a parallel case, and a direction in this question. The Arian Creeds were often quite unexceptionable, differing from the orthodox only in this, that they omitted the celebrated word *ὁμοούσιον*, and in consequence did not obviate the possibility of that perverse explanation of them, which in fact their framers adopted. Why then did the Catholics refuse to subscribe them? Why did they rather submit to banishment from one end of the Roman world to the other? Why did they become confessors and martyrs? The answer is ready. They interpreted the language of the creeds by the professed opinions of their framers. They would not allow error to be introduced into the Church by an artifice. On the other hand, when at Ariminum they were seduced into a subscription of one of these creeds, though unobjectionable in its wording, their opponents instantly triumphed, and circulated the news that the Catholic world had come over to their opinion. It may be added that, in consequence, ever since that era, phrases have been banished from the language of theology which heretofore had been innocently used by orthodox teachers.

Apply this to the case of Romanism. We are not indeed allowed to take at random the accidental doctrine or practice of this or that age, as an explanation of the decrees of the Latin Church; but when we see clearly that certain of these decrees have a natural tendency to produce certain evils, when we see those evils actually existing far and wide in that Church, in different nations

and ages, existing especially where the system is allowed to act most freely, and only absent where external checks are present, sanctioned moreover by its celebrated teachers and expositors, and advocated by its controversialists with the tacit consent of the whole body, under such circumstances surely it is not unfair to consider our case parallel to that of the Catholics during the ascendancy of Arianism. Surely it is not unfair in such a case to interpret the formal document of belief by the realized form of it in the Church, and to apprehend that, did we express our assent to the creed of Pope Pius, we should find ourselves bound hand and foot, as the fathers at Ariminum, to the corruptions of those who profess it.

To take the instances of the Adoration of Images and the Invocation of Saints. The Tridentine Decree declares that it is good and useful suppliantly to invoke the Saints, and that the Images of CHRIST, and the Blessed Virgin, and the other Saints should "receive due honour and veneration;" words, which themselves go to the very verge of what could be received by the cautious Christian, though possibly admitting of a honest interpretation. Now we know in matter of fact that in various parts of the Roman Church, a worship approaching to idolatrous is actually paid to Saints and Images, in countries very different from each other, as, for instance, Italy and the Netherlands, and has been countenanced by eminent men and doctors, and that without any serious or successful protest from any quarter: further that, though there may be countries where no scandal of the kind exists, yet these are such as have, in their neighbourhood to Protestantism, a practical restraint upon the natural tendency of their system.

Moreover, the silence which has been observed, age after age, by the Roman Church, as regards these excesses, is a point deserving of serious attention;—for two reasons; first, because of the very solemn warnings pronounced by our LORD and his Apostle, against those who introduce scandals into the Church, warnings, which seem almost prophetic of such as exist in the Latin branches of it. Next it must be considered that the Roman Church has had the power to denounce and extirpate them. Not to mention

its use of its Apostolical powers in other matters, it has had the civil power at its command, as it has shown in the case of errors which less called for its interference ; all of which shows it has not felt sensitively on the subject of this particular evil.

This may be suitably illustrated by an example. Wake, in his controversy on the subject of Bossuet's Exposition, observes that a Jesuit named Crasset had published an account of the worship due to the Virgin Mary, quite opposed to that which Bossuet had expounded as the doctrine of the Roman Church. Bossuet replies, "I have not read the book, but neither did I ever hear it mentioned there was any thing in it contrary to mine, and that Father would be much troubled if I should think there was." Wake, in answer, expresses his great surprise that Bossuet should not have heard any mention of a fact so notorious.

Bossuet replies, "I still continue to say that I have never read Father Crasset's book which they bring against me." "I will only add here," he continues, "that Father Crasset himself, troubled and offended that any one should report his doctrine to be different from mine, has made complaints to me ; and in a preface to the second edition of his book, has declared, that he varied in nothing from me, unless perhaps in the manner of expression ; which, whether it be so or no, I leave them to examine, who will please to give themselves the trouble." Bossuet is known as the special champion of a more moderate exposition of the doctrines of Romanism than that which has generally been put upon them. Now he either did agree with the Jesuit or he did not. If he did, not a word more need be said against the Roman doctrine, as will appear when I proceed to quote his words ; if he did not, let the reader judge of the peculiar sensitiveness of a faith, (as illustrated in a prelate, who for his high qualities is a very fair representative of his church,) which can anathematize a denial of Purgatory, or a disapproval of the Invocation of Saints, yet can pass *sub silentio* a class of blasphemies, of which the following extracts are an instance.

It must be first observed that Father Crasset's book is an answer to a Cologne tract entitled, "Salutary Advertisements of the Blessed Virgin to her indiscreet Adorers ;" which is said, by



Wake, truly or not, (for this is nothing to the purpose,) to agree with Bossuet in its exposition of doctrine. This tract was sent into the world with the approbation of the Suffragan Bishop of Cologne, of the Vicar-general, the Censure of Ghent, the Canons and Divines of Mechlin, the University of Louvain, and the Bishop of Tournay. Father Crasset's answer was printed at Paris, licensed by the Provincial, approved by three fathers of the Jesuits' body appointed to examine it, and authorized by the King. I mention these circumstances to show that this controversy was not conducted in a corner; to which I may add that, according to Crasset, learned men of various nations had also written against the Tract, that the Holy See had condemned the author, and that Spain had prohibited him and his work from its dominions. We have nothing to do with the doctrine of this Tract, good or bad, but let us see what this Crasset's doctrine is on the other hand, thus put forth by the Jesuits in a notorious controversy, and accepted on hearsay by Bossuet, with a studious abstinence from the sight of it after the matter of it had been brought before him.

“Whether a Christian that is devout towards the blessed Virgin can be damned? *Answer.* The servants of the blessed Virgin have an assurance, morally infallible, that they shall be saved.

“Whether God ever refuses anything to the blessed Virgin? *Answer.*  
 I. The Prayers of a Mother so humble and respectful are esteemed a command by a Son so sweet and so obedient. 2. Being truly our Saviour's mother, as well in heaven as she was on earth, she still retains a kind of natural authority over His person, over His goods, and over His omnipotence; so that, as Albertus Magnus says, she can not only entreat Him for the salvation of her servants, but by her motherly authority can command Him; and as another expresses it, the power of the Mother and of the Son is all one, she being by her omnipotent Son made herself omnipotent.

“Whether the blessed Virgin has ever fetched any out of hell? *Answer.*  
 I. As to purgatory, it is certain that the Virgin has brought several souls from thence, as well as refreshed them whilst they were there. 2. It is certain she has fetched many out of hell: *i. e.* from a state of damnation before they were dead. 3. The Virgin can, and has fetched men that were dead in mortal sin out of hell, by restoring them to life again, that they might repent. . . . .

“The practice of devotion towards her. 1. To wear her scapulary; which whoso does shall not be damned, but this habit shall be for them a mark of salvation, a safeguard in dangers, and a sign of peace and eternal alliance.

They that wear this habit, shall be moreover delivered out of Purgatory the Saturday after their death. 2. To enter her congregation. And if any man be minded to save himself, it is impossible for him to find out any more advantageous means, than to enrol himself into these companies. 3. To devote oneself more immediately to her service," &c. &c.

"Woe unto the world because of offences! for it must needs be that offences come, but woe to that man by whom the offence cometh! Wherefore if thy hand or thy foot offend thee, cut them off and cast them from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather than having two hands or two feet to be cast into everlasting fire. And if thine eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire."

Bossuet's name has been mentioned in evidence of the really existing connection between the decrees of Trent and the popular opinions and practices in the Roman Church, as regards the matters they treat of. But the labours of that celebrated divine in the cause of his Church introduce us to very varied and extensive illustrations of another remark which has been incidentally made in the course of our discussion.

It was observed that the legitimate meaning of the Tridentine decrees might be fairly ascertained by comparing together those of the Latin Churches, where the system was allowed to operate freely, and those in which the presence of Protestantism acted as a check upon it. This has been remarkably exemplified in the history of the controversy during the last one hundred and fifty years, that is, since the time of Bossuet, who seems to have been nearly<sup>1</sup> the first who put on the Tridentine decrees a meaning more consonant with Primitive Christianity, distinguishing between the doctrines of the Church, and of the Schools. This new interpretation has been widely adopted by the Romanists, and, as far as our own islands are concerned, may be considered to be the received version of their creed; and one should rejoice in any appearance of amelioration in their system, were not the pre-

<sup>1</sup> Vernon had preceded him in France, and an exposition on the same basis is said to have been published in England in Queen Mary's time.

sent state of Italy and Spain, where no check exists, an evidence what that system still is, and what, in course of time, it would, in all probability, be among ourselves, did an universal reception of it put an end to the restraint which controversy at present imposes on them.

Bossuet's Exposition, which contains the modified doctrine above spoken of, was looked at with great suspicion at Rome, on its first appearance, and was with difficulty acknowledged by the Pope. It is said to have been written originally with the purpose of satisfying Marshal Turenne, who became, in consequence, a convert to Romanism. It was circulated in manuscript several years, and was considered to be of so liberal a complexion, according to the doctrine of that day, as to scandalize persons of his own communion, and to lead Protestants to doubt whether the author dare ever own it. In the year 1671, it was, with considerable alterations, committed to the press with the formal approbation of the Archbishop of Rheims and nine other Bishops, but on objections being urged against it by the Sorbonne the press was stopped, and not till after various alterations was it resumed, with the suppression of the copies which had already been struck off. It is affirmed by Wake, without contradiction (I believe) from his opponents, that even with these corrections it was of so novel an appearance to the Romanists of that day, that an answer from one of Bossuet's own communion was written to it, before the Protestants began to move, though the publication was suppressed. The Roman See at last accorded its approbation, but not before the conversions which it effected had recommended it to its favour <sup>1</sup>.

It may be instructive to specify some instances of this change of doctrine, or of interpretation of doctrine (if it must be so called), which Bossuet is accused of introducing.

1. In the private impression of his Exposition, as the suppressed portion of the edition may be called, Bossuet says,

<sup>1</sup> Nine years intervened between its publication and the Pope's approval of it. Clement X. refused it absolutely. Several priests were rigorously treated for preaching the doctrine contained in it; the university of Louvain formally condemned it in 1685. Vid. Mosheim, Hist. vol. v. p. 126, note.

“ Furthermore, there is nothing so unjust as to accuse the Church of placing all her piety in these devotions to the Saints : *since on the contrary she lays no obligation at all on particular persons to join in this practice. . . .* By which it appears clearly that the Church condemns only those who refuse it *out of contempt, or by a spirit of dissension and revolt.*”

In the second or published edition, the words printed in italics were omitted, the first clause altogether, and the second with the substitution of “ *out of disrespect or error.*”

2. Again, in the private impression he had said,

“ So that it (the Mass) *may very reasonably be called a sacrifice.*”

He raised his doctrine in the second as follows ;

“ So that *there is nothing wanting to make it a true sacrifice.*”

In giving these instances, I am far from insinuating that there is any unfairness in such alterations. Earnestly desiring the conversion of Protestants, Bossuet did but attempt to place the doctrines of his Church in the light most acceptable to them. But they seem to show thus much : first, that he was engaged in a novel experiment, which circumstances rendered necessary, and was trying how far he might safely go ; secondly, that he did not carry with him the body of the Gallican divines. In other words, we have no security that this new form of Romanism is more stable than one of the many forms of Protestantism which rise and fall around us in our own country, which are matters of opinion, and depend upon individuals<sup>1</sup>.

3. But again, after all the care bestowed on his work, Bossuet says in his Exposition as ultimately published :

“ When the Church pays an honour to the Image of an Apostle or Martyr, the intention is not so much to honour the image, as to honour the apostle or martyr in the presence of the image. . . . Nor do we attribute to them *any other virtue* but that of *exciting in us the remembrance* of those they represent,” p. 8.

To this Vindicator adds,

“ The use we make of images or pictures is purely as *representatives*, or *memorative signs*, which call the originals to our remembrance,” p. 35.

Now with these passages contrast the words of Bellarmine,

<sup>1</sup> Mosheim observes (supra) that none of the attempts to reconcile Protestants to the Church, from Richelieu downwards, were avowed by the Church itself, or much more than the acts of individuals.

who, if any one, might be supposed a trustworthy interpreter of the Roman doctrine.

“ The images of Christ and of the saints are to be venerated *not only by accident and improperly, but properly and by themselves*, so that *they themselves are the end of the veneration* [ut ipsæ terminent venerationem] as considered in themselves, and *not only as they are copies.*” De Imagin. lib. ii. c. 21.

Again, in the Pontifical we are instructed that to the wood of the Cross “divine worship (*latria*) is due ;” and that saving virtues for soul and body proceed from it ; which surely agrees with the doctrine of Bellarmine as contained in the above extract, not with that of Bossuet.

4. The Vindicator of Bossuet speaks of the Mass to the following effect :

“ The council tells us it was instituted *only to represent* that which was accomplished on the Cross, to perpetuate the memory of it to the end of the world, and apply to us the saving virtue of it, for those sins which we commit every day. . . . . When we say that CHRIST is offered in the Mass, we do not understand the word *offer* in the strictest sense, but *as we are said to offer to God what we present before Him.* And thus the Church does not doubt to say, that she offers up our Blessed JESUS to His Father in the Eucharist, in which He vouchsafes to render Himself present before Him.”

But the Tridentine Fathers say in their Canons that,

“ the Mass is a true and proper sacrifice ; a sacrifice *not only commemorative of that of the Cross*, but also truly and properly propitiatory for the dead and the living.”

And Bellarmine says,

“ A true and real sacrifice requires a true and real death or destruction of the thing sacrificed.” De Missâ, lib. i. c. 27.

And then he proceeds to show how this condition of the notion of a sacrifice is variously fulfilled in the Mass.

Leaving Bossuet, let us now turn to the history of the controversy in our own country, whether in former or recent times ; and here I avail myself of an article of a late lamented Prelate of our Church, in a periodical work ten years since<sup>1</sup>. As to the particular instances adduced, it must be recollected that they are not dwelt on as a sufficient evidence by themselves of that difference of view between members of the Roman Church at various times and places, which is under consideration, but as mere illustrations of what is presumed to be an historical fact.

<sup>1</sup> British Critic, Oct. 1825.

The following extract is from Dr. Doyle's Evidence before the Committee of the House of Commons on the subject of the Roman Catholic doctrine :

"The Committee find, in a treatise called 'A Vindication of the Roman Catholics,' the following curse; 'Cursed is every goddess worshipper, that believes the Virgin Mary to be any more than a creature, that honours her, worships her, or puts his trust in her more than in GOD; that honours her above her Son, or believes that she can in any way command Him.' Is that acknowledged? *Ans.* That is acknowledged; and every Roman Catholic in the world would say with Gother, Accursed be such person."

Such is the received Romanism of the English Papists at this day; and accordingly Dr. Challoner has translated the famous words in the office of the blessed Virgin :

"Monstra te esse Matrem,  
Sumat per te preces,"

by

"Exert the *Mother's* care,  
And us *thy children* own,  
To Him convey our prayer," &c.

On the other hand consider the following passage in the controversy between Jewell and Harding. Jewell accused the Roman Church with teaching that the blessed Virgin could command her Son. Harding replies as follows,

"If now any spiritual man, such as St. Bernard was, deeply considering the great honour and dignity of Christ's mother, do in excess of mind spiritually sport with her, bidding her to remember that she is a Mother, and that *thereby she has a certain right to command* her Son, and require, in a most sweet manner, that she use her right; is this either impiously or impudently spoken? Is not he, rather, most impious and impudent that findeth fault therewith?"

Again, we find in Peter Damiani, a celebrated divine of the eleventh century, the following words :

"She approaches to that golden tribunal of divine Majesty, not asking, but commanding, not a handmaid, but a Mistress<sup>1</sup>."

<sup>1</sup> Prosa, quam Dallæus allegat, ut invidiam faciat Catholicis, quasi B. Virginem Filio imperare putemus ad Patris dexteram sedenti, non est ab Ecclesiâ probata, et quibusdam tantum Missalibus olim inserta fuit; quamvis innoxius esset iste loquendi modus, "Jure Matris impera Redemptori," quemadmodum . . . Scriptura ait, "Deum obedisse voci hominis," quando orante Josue sol stet. . . . Hoc sensu B. Petrus Damiani, &c. Natal. Alex. Hist. Sæc. v. Diss. 25. Art. 2. Prop. 2.

Albertus Magnus in like manner,

“ Mary prays as a daughter, requests as a sister, commands as a mother.”

Another writer says,

“ The blessed Virgin, for the salvation of her supplicants, can not only supplicate her Son, as other saints do, but also by her maternal authority command her Son. Therefore the Church prays, ‘ Monstra te esse Matrem ;’ as if saying to the Virgin, Supplicate for us after the manner of a command, and with a mother’s authority.”

After these instances, the article from which I cite asks, not unreasonably, “ Upon whom does the anathema of Gother fall ?”

Another instance of this unsteady, and (if it may so be called) untrustworthy conduct of the Roman Church, occurs in respect to their doctrine of Repentance ; which is well pointed out by a recent writer in the British Magazine. His account is as follows.

“ The Romish tenet most pregnant with moral mischief is, probably, that which promises salvation to mere Attrition [i. e. sorrow for sin arising from a view of its turpitude, or fear of punishment] . . . . Now it should be generally known that a Romish divine pressed in argument is very likely to pronounce salvability from Attrition only, as nothing more than a *Scholastic* doctrine, to which his Church does not stand committed. He might be reminded of the Trentine Catechism, which declares real Contrition [i. e. hearty sorrow for sin proceeding immediately from the love of God above all things, and joined with a firm purpose of amendment,] to be found in very few ; and hence deduces the necessity of an *easier way* for the salvation of men in general. His answer would be, that the Catechism is *not a decree of the Council*, and, therefore, *not like one binding as an article of faith*. It is indeed true, that the Council here has spoken more vaguely and guardedly than the Catechism. Pallavicino represents the Trentine Fathers accordingly as intending merely to condemn an opinion of their adversaries, which branded the fear of punishment with baseness. . . . However a nice scrutiny may dispose of this doctrine, it is in fact broadly asserted in the manual drawn up for instructing ordinary clergymen, under authority of the Trentine Council, though not completed till that body was dissolved. This manual too was promulgated under papal sanction, expressly conferred upon the Roman see for that very purpose by the Council. The *Catechismus ad Parochos* has been accordingly ever since, what it was intended to be, a text book for the Romish clergy. . . . Nor is it doubtful that it speaks the feeling and intention of this council upon the question of Attrition ; only the Trentine Fathers here knew themselves to be upon treacherous ground, and therefore they discreetly left a vague outline which might be filled up by better, because less responsible hands <sup>1</sup>.”

<sup>1</sup> British Mag. Feb. 1836.

The following are further illustrations of the distinction observed in the Roman Church between Catholic verities and the opinions of the schools. In presenting them to the reader, I have no purpose of denying that there is a distinction really, and that it may properly be insisted on, but I deny it exists in the particular cases; in which what is professed to be but an *opinion*, is more or less the genuine practical meaning of the Tridentine decrees.

“ It is *de fide* to believe that there is a purgatory; it is not *de fide* to believe that the fire of purgatory is true and proper, or of the same species as the material element,—or that it is in this or that place, or that it lasts for this or that period. It is *de fide* that the saints may well and profitably be invoked; it is not *de fide* that they hear our prayers, though it be certain and true. It is *de fide* that the relics of the saints should be venerated; it is not *de fide* that these or those relics are genuine. It is *de fide* that man is justified by inherent righteousness; it is not *de fide* that justifying righteousness is a habit or quality<sup>1</sup>.”

Enough, perhaps, has now been said on the mode in which it is expedient at the present day to carry on the controversy with Romanism,—which of its doctrines are to be selected for attack, what authorities are to be used in ascertaining them, and what arguments are to be employed against them. Some remarks shall be added before concluding, as to the best mode of conducting the defence of our own Church.

Let it be observed that, in our argument with the Romanists, we might, if needful, be very liberal in our confessions about ourselves, without at all embarrassing our position in consequence. While we are able to maintain the claim of our clergy to the ministration of the Sacraments, and our freedom from any deadly heresy, we have nothing to fear from any historical disclosures which the envy of adversaries might contrive against our Church, or from any external appearances which it may present at this day to the superficial observer. Whatever may be the past mistakes of individual members of it, or the tyranny of aliens over it, or its accidental connexion with Protestant persuasions, still these hinder not its having “ the ministration of the Word and Sacraments;” and having them, it has sufficient claims on our filial devotion and love. This being understood then, the fol-

<sup>1</sup> *Vid.* Annati's *Apparatus ad Theologiam*, i. 4.



lowing remarks are made with a view of showing *how far*, if necessary, we may safely go in our admissions.

1. We may grant in the argument that the English Church has committed mistakes in the practical working of its system ; nay, is *incomplete*, even in its formal doctrine and discipline. We require no enemy to show us the probability of this, seeing that her own Article expressly states that the primitive Churches of Antioch and Alexandria, as well as that of Rome, have erred, “not only in their living and manner of ceremonies, but also in matters of faith.” Much more is a Church exposed to imperfection, which embraces but a narrow portion of the Catholic territory, has been at the distance of 1500 to 1800 years from the pure fountains of tradition, and is surrounded by political influences of a highly malignant character.

2. Again, the remark may seem paradoxical at first sight, yet surely it is just, that the English Church is for certain deficient in particulars, because it does not profess itself infallible. I mean as follows. Every thoughtful mind must at times have been beset by the following doubt : “*How is it* that the particular Christian body to which I belong *happens* to be the right one ? I hear every one about me saying *his own* society is alone right, and others wrong : is not every one as much justified in saying so as every one else ? is not any one as much justified as I am ? In other words, the truth is surely no where to be found pure, unadulterate and entire, but is shared through the world, each Christian body having a portion of it, none the whole of it.” A certain liberalism is commonly the fruit of this perplexity. Men are led on to gratify the pride of human nature, by standing aloof from all systems, forming a truth for themselves, and countenancing this or that denomination of Christians according as each maintains portions of that which they have already assumed to be the truth. Now the primitive Church answered this question, by appealing to the simple fact that all the Apostolic Churches all over the world did agree together. True there were sects in every country, but they bore their own refutation on their forehead, in that they were of recent origin ; but all those societies in every country, which the Apostles had founded, did agree together in

one, and no time short of the Apostles' could be assigned, with any show of argument, for the rise of their existing doctrine. This doctrine in which they agreed was accordingly called *Catholic* truth, and there was plainly no room at all for asking, "Why should my own Church be more true than another's?"—But at this day, it need not be said, such an evidence is lost, except as regards the articles of the Creeds. It is a very great mercy that the Church Catholic over the world, as descended from the Apostles, does at this day speak one and the same doctrine about the Trinity and Incarnation, as it has always spoken it, excepting in one single point, which rather *probat regulam* than interferes with it, viz., as to the procession of the HOLY GHOST from the SON. With this solitary exception, we have the certainty of possessing the entire truth as regards the high theological doctrines, by an argument which supersedes the necessity of arguing from Scripture against those who oppose them. It is quite impossible that all countries should have agreed to that which was not Apostolic. They are a number of concordant witnesses to certain definite truths, and while their testimony is one and the same from the very first moment they publicly utter it, so on the other hand, if there be bodies which speak otherwise, we can show historically that they rose later than the Apostles. This majestic evidence, however, does not extend to any but to the articles of the Creed, especially those relating to the Trinity and Incarnation<sup>1</sup>. The primitive Church was never called upon, whether in Council or by its divines, to pronounce upon other points of faith, and the later Church has differed about them; especially about those on which the contest turns between Romanism and ourselves. Here neither Rome nor England can in the same sense appeal to *Catholic* testimony; and, this being the case, a member of the one or the other Church *might* fairly have the antecedent scruple rise in his mind, why his own communion should have the *whole* truth, why on the contrary the

<sup>1</sup> By a great misapprehension, the word "Incarnation" here used has been understood by some readers as if it *excluded* the Atonement; whereas, in its more Catholic sense, it includes the whole dispensation or *oikonomia* of Christ's taking flesh.

rival communion should not have a share of it, and the truth itself lie midway between them. This is the question of a philosophical mind, and the Church of Rome meets it with a theory, perfectly satisfactory, *provided only* it be established as a fact, viz., the theory of infallibility. The actual promise made, as they contend, to St. Peter's chair, as the centre of unity, would undoubtedly *account* for truth being wholly in the Roman Communion, not in the English, and solve the antecedent perplexity in question. But the English Church, taking no such high ground as this, certainly is open to the force, such as it is, of the objection, or (as it was just now expressed) on the *primâ facie* view of the case is unlikely to have embraced the *whole* counsel of God, because she does not assume infallibility; and consequently no surprise or distress should be felt by her dutiful sons, should that turn out to be the fact, which her own principles, rightly understood, would lead them to anticipate. At the same time it must carefully be remembered, that this admission involves no doubt or scepticism as regards the more sacred subjects of theology, of which the Creed is the summary; these having been witnessed from the first by the whole Church,—being witnessed too at this moment, in spite of later corruptions, both by the Latin and Greek Communions.

A consideration has been suggested in the last paragraph, on which much might be said on a fitting occasion; it is (what may be called) a great Canon of the Gospel, that purity of faith depends on the *Sacramentum Unitatis*. Unity in the whole body of the Church, as it is the divinely blessed symbol and pledge of the true faith, so also it is the obvious means (even humanly speaking, of securing it. The *Sacramentum* was first infringed during the quarrels of the Greeks and Latins; it was shattered in that great schism of the sixteenth century which issued in some parts of Europe in the Reformation, in others in the Tridentine Decrees, our own Church keeping the nearest of any to the complete truth. Since that era, at least, Truth has not dwelt simply and securely in any visible Tabernacle. This view of the subject will illustrate for us the last words of Bishop Ken as contained in his will:—“As for my religion, I die in the

Holy Catholic and Apostolic faith, *professed by the whole Church before the disunion of East and West*; more particularly I die in the communion of the Church of England, *as it stands distinguished from all Papal and Puritan innovations, and as it adheres to the doctrine of the Cross.*"

3. Another antecedent ground for anticipating wants and imperfections in the English Church lies in the circumstances under which the reformation of its doctrine and worship was effected. It is now universally admitted as an axiom in ecclesiastical and political matters that sudden and violent changes must be injurious; and though our own revolution of opinion and practice was happily slower and more carefully considered than those of our neighbours, yet it was too much influenced by secular interests, sudden external events, and the will of individuals, to carry with it any vouchers for the perfection and entireness of the religious system thence emerging. The proceedings, for instance, of 1536, remind us at once of the dangers to which the Church was exposed, and of its providential deliverance from the worst part of them: the articles then framed being, according to Burnet, "in several places corrected and tempered by the King's" (Henry's) "own hand." Again, the precise *structure* of our present Liturgy, so primitive and beautiful in its *matter*, is confessedly owing to the successive and counteracting influences exerted on it, among others, by Bucer and Queen Elizabeth. The Church did not make the circumstances under which it found itself, and therefore is free from the responsibility of imperfections to which these gave rise. These imperfections followed in two ways. First, the hurry and confusion of the times led, as has been said, to a settlement of religion incomplete and defective: secondly, the people, not duly apprehending even what was soundly propounded, as being new to them, and unable to digest healthy food after long desuetude, gave a false meaning to it, went into opposite extremes, and fashioned into unseemly habits and practices those principles which in themselves conveyed a wholesome and edifying doctrine. These considerations cannot fairly be taken in disparagement of the celebrated men who were the instruments

of Providence in the work, and who doubtless felt far more keenly than is here expressed the perplexities of their situation : but they will serve perhaps to reconcile our minds to our circumstances in these latter ages of the Church, and will cherish in us a sobriety of mind, salutary in itself, and calculated more than any thing else to arm us against the arguments of Rome, and turn us in affection and sympathy towards the afflicted Church, which has been the "Mother of our new-birth." They will but lead us to confess that she is in a measure in that position which we fully ascribe to her Latin sister <sup>1</sup>, *in captivity*; and they will make us understand and duly use the prayers of our wisest doctors and rulers, such as Bishop Andrews, that God would please to "look down upon His holy Catholic and Apostolic Church, *in her captivity*; to visit her once more with His salvation, and to bring her out to serve Him in the beauty of holiness <sup>2</sup>."

4. A further antecedent reason for anticipating practical imperfections in the Anglican system, (and to those mainly allusion is here made,) arises from the circumstance that our Articles, so far as distinct from the ancient creeds, are scarcely more than protests against specific existing errors of the 16th century, and neither are nor profess to be a system of doctrine. It is not unnatural however that they should have practically superseded that previous Catholic teaching altogether, which they were but modifying in parts, and though but corrections, should be mistaken for the system corrected.

These reasonings *prepare* us to acquiesce in much of plausible objection being admissible against our Church, even in the

<sup>1</sup> At Rome she wears it, as of old,  
Upon the accursed hill;  
By Monarchs clad in gems and gold,  
She goes a mourner still, &c. &c.

\* \* \*

Speak gently of our sister's fall.  
Who knows but gentle love  
May win her, at our patient call,  
The surer way to prove.—*Christian Year.*

<sup>2</sup> Devotions. Liturgy of Jerusalem.

judgment of those who love and defend it. When, however, we proceed to examine what its defects really are, we shall find them to differ from those of Rome in this all-important respect, which indeed has already been in part hinted, that they are but *omissions*. Rome maintains positive errors, and that under the sanction of an anathema; but nothing can be pointed out in the English Church which is not true, as far as it goes, and even when it opposes Rome, with a truly Apostolical toleration, it utters no ban or condemnation against her adherents. On the other hand, the omissions, such as they are, or rather obscurities of Anglican doctrine, may be supplied for the most part by each of us for himself, and thus do not interfere with the perfect development of the Christian temper in the hearts of individuals, which is the charge fairly adducible against Romanism. Such, for instance, is the phraseology used in speaking of the Holy Eucharist, which though protected safe through a dangerous time by the cautious Ridley, yet in one or two places was at best in intention defaced by the interpolations of Bucer, through an anxiety in some quarters to unite all the reformed Churches under episcopal government against Rome. And such is the omission of any direct safeguard in the Articles, against disbelief of the doctrine of the Apostolical Succession.

And again, for specimens of the perverse reception by the nation, as above alluded to, of what was piously intended, reference may be made to the popular sense put upon the eleventh article, which, though clearly and soundly explained in the Homily on Justification or Salvation, has been erroneously taken to countenance the wildest Antinomian doctrine, and is now so associated in the minds of many with this wrong interpretation, as to render almost hopeless the recovery of the true meaning.

And such again is the mischievous error, in which the Church in her formal documents certainly has no share, that we are but one among many *Protestant* bodies, and that the differences between Protestants are of little consequence; whereas the English Church, as such, is *not* Protestant, only politically, that is, externally, or so far as it has been made an establishment, and subjected to national and foreign influences. It claims to

be merely *Reformed*, not Protestant, and it repudiates any fellowship with the mixed multitude which crowd together, whether at home or abroad, under a mere political banner. That this is no novel doctrine, is plain from the emphatic omission of the word Protestant in all our Services, even in that for the fifth of November, as remodelled in the reign of King William; and again from the protest of the Lower House of Convocation at that date, on this very subject, which would have had no force, except as proceeding upon recognised usages. The circumstance here alluded to was as follows. In 1689 the Upper House of Convocation agreed on an address to King William, to thank him "for the grace and goodness expressed in his message, and the zeal shown in it for the *Protestant Religion in general*, and the Church of England in particular." To this phrase the Lower House objected, as importing, as Birch in his *Life of Tillotson* says, "*their owning common union with the foreign Protestants.*" A conference between the two Houses ensued, when the Bishops supported their wording of the address, on the ground that the Protestant Religion was the known denomination of the *common doctrine* of such parts of the West as had separated from Rome. The Lower House proposed, with other alterations of the passage, the words "Protestant Churches," for "Protestant Religion," being unwilling to acknowledge religion as separate from the Church. The Upper House in turn amended thus,— "the interest of the Protestant Religion in *this and all other Protestant Churches*;" but the Lower House, still jealous of any diminution of the English Church by this comparison with foreign Protestants, persisted in their opposition, and gained at length that the address, after thanking the King for his zeal for the Church of England, should proceed to anticipate, that thereby "the interest of the Protestant Religion in" [not "this and" but] "all other Protestant Churches would be better secured." Birch adds, "the King well understood why this address omitted the thanks which the Bishops had recommended, for . . . the zeal which he had shown for the Protestant Religion; and *why there was no expression of tenderness to the Dissenters, and but a cool regard to the Protestant Churches.*"

Another great *practical* error of members of our Church, has been their mode of defending its doctrines ; and this has arisen, not from any direction of the Church itself, but, as it would appear, from mistaking, as already mentioned, the specific protests contained in its Articles for that Catholic system, which is the rightful inheritance of it as well as other branches of the Church. We have indeed too often fought the Romanists on wrong grounds, and given up to them the high principles maintained by the early Church. We have indirectly opposed the major premise of our opponents' argument, when we should have denied the fact expressed in the minor. For instance ; they have maintained that Transubstantiation was an Apostolical doctrine, as having been ever taught every where in the Church. We instead of denying this fact as regards Transubstantiation, have acted as if it mattered very little whether it were true or not, (whereas the principle is most true and valuable,) and have proceeded to oppose Transubstantiation on supposed grounds of *reason*. Again, we have argued for the sole Canonicity of the Bible to the exclusion of tradition, not on the ground that the Fathers so held it, (which would be an irrefragable argument,) but on some supposed internal witness of Scripture to the fact, or some abstract and antecedent reasons against the Canonicity of unwritten teaching. Once more, we have argued the *unscripturalness* of image worship as its only condemnation ; a mode of argument, which one would be very far indeed from pronouncing untenable, but which opens the door to a multitude of refined distinctions and pleas ; whereas the way lay clear before us to appeal to *history*, to appeal to the usage of the early Church Catholic, to review the circumstances of the introduction of image worship, the Iconoclast controversy, the Council of Frankfort, and the late reception of the corruption in the West.

So much, then, on the objections which may be urged against the English Church, which relate either to mere *omissions*, not positive errors, or again to faults in the *practical working* of the system, and are in these respects dissimilar from those which lie against the Church of Rome, and which relate to clear and direct perversions and corruptions of divine truth. Should it, however, be asked, *whence* our knowledge of the truth should be



derived, since there is so much of meagreness and mistake in our more popular expounders of it, it may be replied, first, that the writings of the Fathers contain abundant directions how to ascertain it; next, that their directions are distinctly propounded and supported by our Divines of the seventeenth century, though little comparatively at present is known concerning those great authors. Nor could a more acceptable or important service be done to our Church at this present moment, than the publication of some systematic introduction to theology, embodying and illustrating the great and concordant principles and doctrines set forth by Hammond, Taylor, and their brethren before and after them.

Lastly, Should it be inquired whether this admission of incompleteness in our own system does not lead to projects of change and reform, on the part of individuals; it must be answered plainly in the negative. Such an admission has but reference to the question of *abstract* perfection; as a practical matter, it will be our wisdom, as individuals, to enjoy what God's good providence has left us, lest, striving to obtain more, we lose what we still possess.

OXFORD,

*The Feast of the Circumcision.*

[NEW EDITION.]

---

*These Tracts are continued in Numbers, and sold at the price of 2d. for each sheet, or 7s. for 50 copies.*

LONDON: PRINTED FOR J. G. F. & J. RIVINGTON,  
ST. PAUL'S CHURCH YARD, AND WATERLOO PLACE.

1839.

---

GILBERT & RIVINGTON, Printers, St. John's Square, London.

*The following Works, all in single volumes, or pamphlets, and recently published, will be found more or less to uphold or elucidate the general doctrines inculcated in these Tracts :—*

- Bp. Taylor on Repentance, by Hale.—*Rivingtons*.  
Bp. Taylor's Golden Grove.—*Parker, Oxford*.  
Vincentii Lirinensis Commonitorium, with translation.—*Parker, Oxford*.  
Pusey on Cathedrals and Clerical Education.—*Roake and Varty*.  
Hook's University Sermons.—*Talboys, Oxford*.  
Pusey on Baptism (*published separately*).—*Rivingtons*.  
Newman's Sermons, 4 vols.—*Rivingtons*.  
Newman on Romanism, &c.—*Rivingtons*.  
The Christian Year.—*Parker, Oxford*.  
Lyra Apostolica.—*Rivingtons*.  
Perceval on the Roman Schism.—*Leslie*.  
Bishop Jebb's Pastoral Instructions.—*Duncan*.  
Dodsworth's Lectures on the Church.—*Burns*.  
Newman on Suffragan Bishops.—*Rivingtons*.  
Keble's Sermon on Tradition.—*Rivingtons*.  
Memoir of Ambrose Bonwick.—*Parker, Oxford*.  
Hymns for Children on the Lord's Prayer.—*Rivingtons*.  
Law's first and second Letters to Hoadly.—*Rivingtons*.  
Bp. Andrews' Devotions. Latin and Greek.—*Pickering*.  
Hook's Family Prayers.—*Rivingtons*.  
Herbert's Poems and Country Pastor.  
Evans's Scripture Biography.—*Rivingtons*.  
Le Bas' Life of Archbishop Laud.—*Rivingtons*.  
Jones (of Nayland) on the Church.  
Bp. Bethell on Baptismal Regeneration.—*Rivingtons*.  
Bp. Beveridge's Sermons on the Ministry and Ordinances.—*Parker, Oxford*.  
Bp. Jolly on the Eucharist.  
Fulford's Sermons on the Ministry, &c.—*Rivingtons*.  
Rose's Sermons on the Ministry.—*Rivingtons*.  
A Catechism on the Church.—*Parker, Oxford*.  
Russell's Judgment of the Anglican Church.—*Baily*.  
Poole's Sermons on the Creed.—*Grant, Edinburgh*.  
Sutton on the Eucharist.—*Parker, Oxford*.  
Leslie on the Regale and Pontificate.—*Leslie*.  
Pusey's Sermon on November 5.—*Rivingtons*.  
Bishop Wilson's Sacra Privata.—*Parker, Oxford*.  
The Cathedral, a Poem.—*Parker, Oxford*.

*Larger Works which may be profitably studied.*

- Bishop Bull's Sermons.—*Parker, Oxford*.  
Bishop Bull's Works.—*University Press*.  
Waterland's Works.—*Do*.  
Wall on Infant Baptism.—*Do*.  
Pearson on the Creed.—*Do*.  
Leslie's Works.—*Do*.  
Bingham's Works.—*Straker, London*.  
Palmer on the Liturgy.—*University Press*.  
Palmer on the Church.—*Rivingtons*.  
Hooker, ed. Keble.—*Do*.

## TRACTS FOR THE TIMES.

ARCHBISHOP USSHER ON PRAYERS FOR THE  
DEAD.*(Against Romanism.—No. 2.)*

## ADVERTISEMENT.

ONE great unfairness practised by Roman controversialists, has been to adduce, in behalf of their own peculiarities, doctrines or customs, of the Primitive Church, which, resembling them in appearance, are really of a different character. Thus, because the early Fathers spoke of the Holy Communion in such reverent and glowing terms, as became those who understood its real nature and virtue, they have tried to make it appear that they believe in their own theory of Transubstantiation. Whereas they spoke of it as a *commemorative* sacrifice, they have thence taken occasion to make it a *real* and *proper* sacrifice. The doctrine of ecclesiastical penances, they have converted into the theory of *satisfactions* to ALMIGHTY GOD for sins committed. The existence of *Apostolic Tradition*, in the early Church, in behalf of the doctrines of the Trinity, Incarnation and the like, has been made a pretence for introducing *so called* Apostolical Traditions concerning various unfounded opinions in faith and practice.

But in no instance is this fallacious procedure more strikingly seen than as regards their doctrine of *Purgatory*, which they defend by notions and usages in the early Church, quite foreign to the distressing tenet which we challenge them to prove. This is shown with great learning and ability by the celebrated Archbishop Ussher in his Controversy with a Jesuit. At a time like the present, when many persons are in doubt whether they are not driven to an alternative of either giving up the primitive Fathers or embracing Popery, it may be useful to reprint the chapter on this subject from Ussher's work in a separate form.

## OF PRAYER FOR THE DEAD.

## INTRODUCTION.

PRAYER for the dead, as it is used in the Church of Rome, doth necessarily suppose Purgatory ; and therefore whatsoever hath been alleged out of the Scriptures and Fathers against the one, doth stand in full force against the other : so that here we need not *actum agere*, and make a new work of overthrowing that which hath been sufficiently beaten down already. But on the other side, the admittal of purgatory doth not necessarily infer Prayer for the dead : nay if we shall suppose, with our adversaries, that purgatory is the prison from whence none shall *come out until they have paid the utmost farthing*, their own paying, and not other men's praying, must be the thing they are to trust unto, if ever they look to be delivered out of that jail. Our Romanists indeed do commonly take it for granted, that

“ Purgatory and Prayer for the dead be so closely linked together, that the one doth necessarily follow the other ;”

but in so doing they reckon without their host, and greatly mistake the matter. For howsoever they may deal with their own devices as they please, and link their prayers with their Purgatory as closely as they list ; yet shall they never be able to show, that the Commemoration and prayers for the dead, used by the ancient Church, had any relation with their Purgatory ; and therefore, whatsoever they were, Popish prayers we are sure they were not. I easily foresee, that the full opening of the judgment of the Fathers in this point will hardly stand with that brevity which I intended to use in treating of these questions ; the particulars be so many, that necessarily do incur into the handling of this argument. But I suppose the reader will be content rather to dispense with me in that behalf, than be sent away unsatisfied in a matter wherein the adversary beareth himself confident beyond measure, that the whole stream of anti-quity runneth clearly upon his side.

- § 1. OF THE PERSONS FOR WHOM AFTER DEATH PRAYERS WERE OFFERED IN THE EARLY CHURCH.
- § 2. OF THE PRIMARY INTENTION OF PRAYERS FOR THE DEAD.
- § 3. OF THE PLACE AND CONDITION OF SOULS DEPARTED.
- § 4. OF THE OPINION OF THE HERETIC AERIUS TOUCHING PRAYERS FOR THE DEAD.
- § 5. OF THE PROFIT OF PRAYERS FOR THE DEAD TO THE PERSONS PRAYED FOR.

§ 1. *Of the Persons for whom after death Prayers were offered in the early Church.*

THAT the truth, then, of things may the better appear, we are here prudently to distinguish the original institution of the Church from the private opinions of particular doctors, which waded further herein than the general intendment of the Church did give them warrant; and diligently to consider, that the memorials, oblations, and prayers made for the dead at the beginning, had reference to such as rested from their labours, and not unto any souls which were thought to be tormented in that Utopian purgatory, whereof there was no news stirring in those days. This may be gathered,

First, by the practice of the ancient Christians, laid down by the author of the Commentaries upon Job, which are wrongly ascribed unto Origen, in this manner:

“ We observe the memorials of the saints, and devoutly keep the remembrance of our parents or friends which die in the faith; as well rejoicing for their refreshing, as requesting also for ourselves a godly consummation in the faith. Thus therefore do we celebrate the *death*, not the day of the birth: because they which die shall live for ever. And we celebrate it, calling together religious persons with the priest, the faithful with the clergy; inviting moreover the needy and the poor, feeding the orphans and widows, that our festivity may be for a memorial of rest to the souls departed, whose remembrance we celebrate, and to us may become a sweet savour in the sight of the eternal God.”

Secondly, by that which St. Cyprian writeth of Laurentius and Ignatius, whom he acknowledgeth to have received of the LORD

palms and crowns for their famous martyrdom, and yet presently addeth :

“ We offer sacrifices always for them, when we celebrate the passions and days of the martyrs with an anniversary commemoration.”

Thirdly, by that which we read in the author of the Ecclesiastical Hierarchy, set out under the name of Dionysius the Areopagite: for where the party deceased is described by him to have departed out of this life,

“ replenish with divine joy, as now not fearing any change to worse,”

being come unto the end of all his labours, and to have been both privately acknowledged by his friends, and publicly pronounced by the ministers of the Church, to be a happy man, and to be verily admitted into the

“ society of the saints that have been from the beginning of the world;”

yet doth he declare, that the Bishop made prayer for him, (upon what ground, we shall afterward hear,) that

“ GOD would forgive him all the sins that he had committed through human infirmity, and bring him into the light and the land of the living, into the bosoms of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, into the place from whence pain and sorrow and sighing flieth.”

Fourthly, by the funeral ordinances of the Church related by St. Chrysostom, which were appointed to admonish the living that the parties deceased were in a state of joy, and not of grief:

“ For tell me,” saith he, “ what do the bright lamps mean? do we not accompany them therewith as champions? What mean the hymns?” “ Consider what thou dost sing at that time, *Return, my soul, unto thy rest; for the LORD hath dealt bountifully with thee.* And again: *I will fear no evil, because thou art with me.* Again: *Thou art my refuge from the affliction that compasseth me.* Consider what these Psalms mean.”

Fifthly, by the forms of prayers that are found in the ancient liturgies. As in that of the Churches of Assyria, attributed unto St. Basil:

“ Be mindful, O LORD, of them which are dead, and are departed out of this life,” and of the orthodox Bishops, which from Peter and James the Apostles until this day, have clearly professed the right word of faith; and namely, of Ignatius, Dionysius, Julius, and the rest of the saints of worthy memory. “ Be mindful, O LORD, of them also which have stood unto blood for religion, and by righteousness and holiness have fed thy holy flock.”

And in the Liturgy fathered upon the Apostles :

“ We offer unto thee, for all the saints which have pleased thee from the beginning of the world, patriarchs, prophets, just men, apostles, martyrs, confessors, bishops, priests, deacons,” &c.

And in the Liturgies of the Churches of Egypt, which carry the title of St. Basil, Gregory Nazianzen, and Cyril of Alexandria :

“ Be mindful, O LORD, of thy saints ; vouchsafe to remember all thy saints which have pleased thee from the beginning, our holy fathers, the patriarchs, prophets, apostles, martyrs, confessors, preachers, evangelists, and all the souls of the just which have died in the faith ; and especially the holy, glorious, the evermore Virgin Mary, the Mother of GOD ; and St. John the forerunner, the Baptist and Martyr ; St. Stephen, the first deacon and martyr ; St. Mark the apostle, evangelist and martyr,” &c.

And in the Liturgy of the Church of Constantinople, ascribed to St. Chrysostom :

“ We offer unto thee this reasonable service for those who are at rest in the faith, our forefathers, fathers, patriarchs, prophets, and apostles, preachers, evangelists, martyrs, confessors, religious persons, and every spirit perfected in the faith, but especially for our most holy, immaculate, most blessed Lady, the Mother of GOD, and aye Virgin Mary.”

Which kind of oblation for the saints, sounding somewhat harshly in the ears of the Latins, Leo Thuscus, in his translation, thought best to express it to their better liking, after this manner :

“ We offer unto thee this reasonable service for the faithfully deceased, for our fathers, and forefathers, the patriarchs, prophets, apostles, martyrs, confessors, and all the Saints interceding” for them.

As if the phrase of “ offering for the martyrs,” were not to be found in St. Chrysostom’s own works ; and more universally

“ for the just, both the fathers, and the patriarchs, the prophets, and apostles, and evangelists, and martyrs, and confessors, the bishops, and such as led a solitary life, and the whole order,”

in the suffrages of the Church rehearsed by Epiphanius. Yea, and in the Western Church itself :

“ for the spirits of those that are at rest, Hilary, Athanasius, Martin, Ambrose, Augustine, Fulgentius, Leander, Isidorus,” &c.

as may be seen in the Muzarabical Office, used in Spain.

Sixthly, this may be confirmed out of the funeral orations of

St. Ambrose ; in one whereof, touching the Emperor Valentinian, and his brother Gratian, thus he speaketh :—

“ Let us believe that Valentinian is ascended from the desert, that is to say, from this dry and unmanured (*inculto*) place, unto those flowery delights, where being conjoined with his brother, he enjoyeth the pleasure of everlasting life. Blessed are you both, if my orisons shall prevail anything, no day shall overslip you in silence ; no oration (*oratio*) of mine shall pass you ever unhonoured ; no night shall run by, wherein I will not bestow upon you some portion of my prayers. With all oblations will I frequent you.”

In another, he prayeth thus unto GOD :

“ Give rest to thy perfect servant Theodosius, that rest which thou hast prepared for thy saints.”

And yet he had said before of him :

“ Theodosius, of honourable memory, being freed from doubtful fight, doth now enjoy everlasting light, and continual tranquillity ; and for the things which he did in this body, he rejoiceth in the fruits of GOD'S reward ; because he loved the LORD his GOD, he hath obtained the society of the saints.”

And afterward also,

“ Theodosius remaineth in light, and glorieth in the company of the saints.”

In a third, he prayeth thus, for his brother Satyrus :

“ ALMIGHTY GOD, I now commend unto thee his harmless soul ; to thee do I make my oblation ; accept mercifully, and graciously, the office of a brother, the sacrifice of a priest :”

although he had directly pronounced of him before, that

“ he had entered into the kingdom of heaven, because he had believed the word of GOD,”

and excelled in many notable virtues.

Lastly, in one of his epistles, he comforteth Faustinus, for the death of his sister, after this manner :

“ Do not the carcasses of so many half-ruined cities, and the funerals of so much land exposed under one view, admonish thee that the departure of one woman, although a holy and admirable one, should be borne with great consolation ? especially, seeing they are cast down and overthrown for ever ; but she being taken from us but for a time, doth pass a better life there. I, therefore, think that she is not so much to be lamented as to be followed with prayers, and am of the mind, that she is not to be made sad with thy tears, but rather that her soul should be commended with oblations unto the LORD.”

Thus far St. Ambrose, unto whom we may adjoin Gregory Nazianzen also ; who, in the funeral oration that he made upon his brother Cæsarius, having acknowledged that he had



“received those honours that did befit a new created soul, which the SPIRIT had reformed by water,”

(for he had been but lately baptized, before his departure out of this life,) doth, notwithstanding, pray that the LORD will be pleased to receive him.

Divers instances of like practice in the ages following, I have produced in another place; to which I will add some few more, to the end that the reader may, from thence, observe how long the primitive institution of the Church did hold up head among the tares that grew up with it, and in the end did quite choke and extinguish it. Our English Saxons had learned of Gregory, to pray for relief of those souls that were supposed to suffer pain in Purgatory; and yet the introducing of that novelty was not able to jostle out the ancient usage of making prayers and oblations for them, which were not doubted to have been at rest in God's kingdom. And, therefore, the brethren of the Church of Hexham, in the anniversary commemoration of the obit of Oswald, King of Northumberland, used

“to keep their vigils, for the health of his soul;”

and having spent the night in praising God with Psalms,

“to offer for him, in the morning, the sacrifice of the sacred oblation,”

as Bede writeth; who telleth us yet withal, that he “reigned with God, in heaven,” and by his prayers procured many miracles to be wrought on earth. So likewise doth the same Bede report, that when it was discovered, by two several visions, that Hilda, the Abbess of Streamsheale, or Whitby, in Yorkshire, was carried up by the angels into heaven, they, which heard thereof, presently caused prayers to be said for her soul. And Osberne relateth the like of Dunstan; that being at Bath, and beholding in such another vision, the soul of one that had been his scholar, at Glastonbury, to be carried up into “the palace of heaven,” he “straightway commended the same into the hands of the divine piety,”

and entreated the lords of the place, where he was, to do so likewise.

Other narrations, of the same kind, may be found among them that have written of the saints' lives; and particularly in the tome published by Mosander, p. 69, touching the disease of

Bathildis, Queen of France, and p. 25, concerning the departure of Godfrey, Earl of Cappenberg, who is said there to have appeared unto a certain abness, called Gerbergis, and to have acquainted her,

“ that he was now, without all delay, and without all danger of any more severe trial, gone unto the palace of the highest King ; and as the Son of the immortal King, was clothed with blessed immortality.”

And the monk, that writ the legend, added that she presently, thereupon

“ caused the sacrifice of the Mass to be offered for him.”

Which, how fabulous soever it may be for the matter of the vision, yet doth it strongly prove, that within these five hundred years, (for no longer since is it that this is accounted to have been done,) the use of offerings for the souls of those that were believed to be in heaven, was still retained in the Church. The letters of Charles the Great, unto Offa, King of Mercia, are yet extant ; wherein he wished, that “ intercession” should be made “ for the soul of” Pope Adrian, then lately deceased :

“ not having any doubt at all,” saith he, “ that his blessed soul is at rest : but, that we may show faithfulness and love unto our most dear friend. Even as St. Augustine also giveth directions, that intercessions ought to be made for all men of ecclesiastical piety ; affirming, that to intercede for a good man, doth profit him that doeth it.”

Where the two ends of this kind of intercession are to be observed ; the one, to show their love to their friend ; the other, to get profit to themselves thereby, rather than to the party deceased.

Lastly, Pope Innocent the Third, or the Second rather, being inquired of by the Bishop of Cremona, concerning the state of a certain priest, that died without baptism, resolveth him out of St. Augustine, and St. Ambrose, that

“ because he continued in the faith of the holy mother the Church, and the confession of the name of CHRIST, he was assoiled from original sin, and had attained the joy of the heavenly country.”

Upon which ground, at last, he maketh this conclusion ;

“ Ceasing, therefore, all questions, hold the sentences of the learned Fathers ; and command continual prayers, and sacrifices, to be offered unto GOD, in the Church for the foresaid priest ”

§ 2. *Of the primary intention of Prayers for the Dead.*

Now, having thus declared, unto what kind of persons the Commemorations ordained by the ancient Church did extend, the next thing that cometh to consideration is, what we are to conceive of the primary intention of those prayers, that were appointed to be made therein. And here we are to understand, that first, prayers of praise and thanksgiving were presented unto God, for the blessed estate that the party deceased was now entered upon: whereunto were afterwards added, prayers of deprecation and petition, that God would be pleased to forgive him his sins, to keep him from hell, and to place him in the kingdom of heaven. Which kind of intercessions, however at first they were well meant, as we shall hear, yet, in process of time, they proved an occasion of confirming men in divers errors; especially when they began once to be applied, not only to the good, but to evil livers also, unto whom, by the first institution, they never were intended.

The term of *εὐχαριστήριος εὐχή*, a *thanksgiving prayer*, I borrow from the writer of the Ecclesiastical Hierarchy; who, in the description of the funeral observances, used of old in the Church, informeth us, first, that the friends of the dead

“accounted him to be, as he was, blessed, because that, according to his wish, he had obtained a victorious end,” and thereupon, “sent forth hymns of thanksgiving to the Author of that victory; desiring withal that they, themselves, might come unto the like end.”

And then that the Bishop likewise offered up a prayer of thanksgiving unto God, when the dead was afterward brought unto him, to receive, as it were, at his hands a sacred coronation. Thus at the funeral of Fabiola, the praising of God by singing of Psalms and resounding of Hallelujah, is specially mentioned by St. Jerome; and the general practice and intention of the Church therein is expressed and earnestly urged by St. Chrysostom in this manner:

“Do not we praise GOD and give thanks unto him, for that he hath now crowned him that is departed, for that he hath freed him from his labours, for that quitting him from fear, he keepeth him with himself? Are not the hymns for this end? Is not the singing of Psalms for this purpose? All these be tokens of rejoicing.”

Whereupon he thus presseth them that used immoderate mourning for the dead :

“Thou sayest, *Return, O my soul, unto thy rest, for the LORD hath dealt bountifully with thee*; and dost thou weep? is not this a stage play? is it not mere simulation? For if thou dost indeed believe the things that thou sayest, thou lamentest idly; but if thou playest, and dissemblest, and thinkest these things to be fables, why dost thou then sing? why dost thou suffer those things that are done? Wherefore dost thou not drive away them that sing?”

And in the end he concludeth somewhat prophetically, that he “very much feared lest by this means some grievous disease should creep in upon the Church.”

Whether the doctrine now maintained in the Church of Rome, that the children of GOD, presently after their departure out of this life, are cast into a lake that burneth with fire and brimstone, be not a spice of this disease, and whether their practice in chanting of Psalms, appointed for the expression of joy and thankfulness, over them whom they esteem to be tormented in so lamentable a fashion, be not a part of that scene and pageant at which St. Chrysostom doth so take on, I leave it unto others to judge. That his fear was not altogether vain, the event itself doth show. For howsoever in his days the fire of the Romish purgatory was not yet kindled, yet were there certain sticks then a-gathering, which ministered fuel afterwards unto that flame. Good St. Augustine, who was then alive, and lived three and twenty years after St. Chrysostom's death, declared himself to be of this mind; that the oblations and alms usually offered in the Church

“for all the dead that received baptism, were thanksgivings for such as were very good, propitiations for such as were not very bad; but as for such as were very evil, although they were no helps of the dead, yet were they some kind of consolations of the living.”

Which, although it were but a private exposition of the Church's meaning in her prayers and oblations for the dead, and the opinion of a doctor too that did not hold purgatory to be any article of his creed, yet did the Romanists in times following

greedily take hold thereof, and make it the main foundation upon which they laid the hay and stubble of their devised Purgatory.

A private exposition I call this ; not only because it is not to be found in the writings of the former Fathers, but also because it suiteth not well with the general practice of the Church, which it intendeth to interpret. It may indeed fit in some sort that part of the Church service, wherein there was made a several commemoration, first of the patriarchs, prophets, apostles, and martyrs, after one manner ; and then of the other dead, after another ; which together with the conceit, that

“ an injury was offered to a martyr, by praying for him,”

was it that first occasioned St. Augustine to think of the former distinction. But in the

“ supplications for the spirits of the dead, which the Church, under a general commemoration, was accustomed to make for all that were deceased in the Christian and Catholic communion.”

to imagine that one and the same act of praying should be a petition for some, and for others a thanksgiving only, is somewhat too harsh an interpretation : especially where we find it propounded by way of petition, and the intention thereof directly expressed, as in the Greek Liturgy attributed to St. James, the brother of our LORD :

“ Be mindful, O LORD GOD, of the spirits and of all flesh, of such as we have remembered, and of such as we have not remembered, being of right belief, from Abel the just, until this present day. Do thou cause them to rest in the land of the living, in thy kingdom, in the delight of paradise, in the bosoms of Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, our holy fathers ; whence grief, and sorrow, and sighing, are fled ; where the light of thy countenance doth visit them, and shine for ever.”

And in the offices compiled by Alcuinus :

“ O LORD, holy FATHER, Almighty and everlasting GOD, we humbly make request unto thee for the spirits of thy servants and handmaids, which from the beginning of this world thou hast called unto thee ; that thou wouldest vouchsafe, O LORD, to give unto them a lightsome place, a place of refreshing and ease, and that they may pass by the gates of hell and the ways of darkness, and may abide in the mansions of the saints, and in the holy light which thou didst promise of old unto Abraham and his seed.”

So the “ commemoration of the faithful departed,” retained as yet in the Roman missal, is begun with this orison :

“ Eternal rest grant unto them, O LORD, and let everlasting light shine unto them.”

Whereunto we may add these two prayers, to omit a great number more of the like kind, used of old in the same Church :

“ Receive, O holy Trinity, this oblation, which we offer unto thee for all that are departed in the confession of thy name ; that thou reaching unto them the right hand of thy help, they may have the rest of everlasting life ; and being separated from the punishment of the wicked, they may always persevere in the joy of thy praise.” And “ this oblation, which we humbly offer unto thee for the commemoration of the souls that sleep in peace, we beseech thee, O LORD, receive graciously ; and of thy goodness, grant that both the affection of this piety may profit us, and obtain for them everlasting bliss.”

Where you may observe, that the souls unto which “ everlasting bliss” was wished for, were yet acknowledged to rest “ in peace,” and, consequently, not to be disquieted with any purgatory torment. Even as in the canon of the mass itself, the priest, in the commemoration for the dead, prayeth thus :

“ Remember, O LORD, thy servants and handmaids, which have gone before us with the ensign of faith, and sleep in the sleep of peace. To them, O LORD, and to all that are at rest in CHRIST, we beseech thee that thou wouldst grant a place of refreshing, light, and peace.”

Nay, the Armenians, in their Liturgy, entreat God to “ give eternal peace,” not only in general “ unto all that have gone before us in the faith of CHRIST ;” but also in particular to the “ patriarchs, apostles, prophets, and martyrs.” Which maketh directly for the opinion of those, against whom Nicōlas Cabasilas both dispute, who held that these “ commemorations” contained “ a supplication for the saints unto God,” and not a “ thanksgiving” only. As also do those forms of prayer, which were used in the Roman liturgy in the days of Pope Innocent the Third :

“ Let such an oblation profit such or such a saint unto glory.”

And especially that for St. Leo, which is found in the elder copies of the Grecian Sacramentary :

“ Grant unto us, O Lord, that this oblation may profit the soul of thy servant Leo.”

For which the latter books have chopped in this prayer :

“ Grant unto us, O LORD, that by the intercession of thy servant Leo, this oblation may profit us.”

Concerning which alteration, when the Archbishop of Lyons propounded such another question unto Pope Innocent, as our challenger at the beginning did unto us,

“ Who it was that did change it, and when it was changed, or why ?”  
the Pope returneth him for answer.

“ That who did change it, or when it was changed, he was ignorant of; yet he knew upon what occasion it was changed: because that where the authority of the Holy Scripture doth say, that he doeth injury unto a martyr, who prayeth for a martyr,”

(which is a new text of Holy Scripture, of the Pope’s own canonization,)

“ the same by the like reason is to be held of the other saints.”

The gloss upon this decretal, layeth down the reason of this mutation a little more roundly :

“ Of old they prayed for him, and now at this day he prayeth for us; and so was the change made.”

And Alphonsus Mendoza telleth us, that the old prayer was “ deservedly ” disused, and this other substituted in the room thereof:

“ Grant unto us, we beseech thee, O LORD, that by the intercession of thy servant Leo, this oblation may profit us.”

Which prayer, indeed, was to be found, heretofore in *modernioribus sacramentariis*, as Pope Innocent speaketh, and in the Roman missals that were published before the Council of Trent, as, namely, in that which was printed at Paris, Anno 1529; but in the newly reformed missal, therewith, it seemeth, Mendoza was not so well acquainted as with his scholastical controversies, it is put out again, and another prayer for Leo put in: that by the celebration of those

“ offices of atonement a blessed retribution might accompany him.”

Neither is there any more wrong done unto St. Leo, in praying for him after this manner, than unto all the rest of his fellows in that other prayer of the Roman Liturgy :

We have received, O LORD, the divine mysteries; which as they do profit thy saints unto glory, so we do beseech thee that they may profit us for our healing:”

and nothing so much as is done unto all the faithful deceased, when, in their masses for the dead, they say daily,

“ LORD JESUS CHRIST, King of Glory, deliver the souls of all the faithful that are departed from the pains of hell, and from the deep lake; deliver them from the mouth of the lion, that hell do not swallow them up, that they fall not into darkness.”

So that, whatsoever commodious expositions our adversaries can bring for the justifying of the Roman service, the same may we make use of to show, that the ancient Church might pray for the dead, and yet in so doing have no relation at all unto Purgatory ; yea, and pray for the martyrs and other saints that were in the state of bliss, without offering unto them any injury thereby.

For the clearing of the meaning of those prayers which are made for Leo and the other saints, to the two expositions brought in by Pope Innocent, Cardinal Bellarmine addeth this for the third :

“ that peradventure therein the glory of the body is petitioned for, which they shall have in the day of the resurrection. For although,” saith he, “ they shall certainly obtain that glory, and it be due unto their merits ; yet it is not absurd to desire and ask this for them.”

Where, laying aside those unsavoury terms of *debt* and *merits*, whereof we shall have occasion to treat in their proper place, the answer is otherwise true in part, but not full enough to give satisfaction unto that which was objected. For the primary intention of the Church indeed, in her prayers for the dead, had reference unto the day of the resurrection ; which also in divers places we find to have been expressly prayed for. As in the Egyptian Liturgy, attributed unto St. Cyril, Bishop of Alexandria :

“ Raise up their bodies in the day which thou hast appointed, according to thy promises, which are true and cannot lie ; grant unto them according to thy promises, that which eye hath not seen, and ear hath not heard, and which hath not ascended into the heart of man, which thou hast prepared, O LORD, for them that love thy holy name, that thy servants may not remain in death, but may get out from thence, although slothfulness and negligence have followed them.”

And in that which is used by the Christians of St. Thomas, as they are commonly called, in the East Indies :

“ Let the HOLY GHOST give resurrection to your dead at the last day, and make them worthy of the incorruptible kingdom.”

Such is the prayer of St. Ambrose, for Gratian and Valentinian the emperors :

“ I do beseech thee, most high GOD, that thou wouldst raise up again those dear young men with a speedy resurrection, that thou mayest recompense this untimely course of this present life, with a timely resurrection.”



And that in Alcuinus :

“ Let their souls sustain no hurt ; but when that great day of the resurrection and remuneration shall come, vouchsafe to raise them up, O LORD, together with thy saints and thine elect.”

And that in Grimoldus’s Sacramentary :

“ Almighty and everlasting GOD, vouchsafe to place the body and the soul and the spirit of thy servant N., in the bosoms of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, that when the day of thy acknowledgment shall come, thou mayest command them to be raised up among thy saints and thine elect.”

And that which the Syrians do use :

“ Cause, LORD GOD, their souls and their spirits and their bodies to rest ; and sprinkle the dew of mercy upon their bones.”

But yet the Cardinal’s answer, that the glory of the body may be prayed for, which the saints shall have at the day of the resurrection, cometh somewhat short of that which the Church used to request in the behalf of St. Leo : for in that prayer express mention is made of his soul, and so it is wished that profit may redound by the present oblation. And, therefore, this defect must be supplied out of his answer unto that other prayer, which is made for the souls of the faithful departed, that they may be delivered out of the mouth of the lion, and that hell may not swallow them up. To this he saith, that,

“ the Church doth pray for these souls, that they may not be condemned unto the everlasting pains of hell ; not as if it were not certain, that they should not be condemned unto those pains, but because it is GOD’s pleasure that we should pray, even for those things which we are certain to receive.”

The same answer did Alphonsus de Castro give before him, that

“ very often those things are prayed for which are certainly known shall come to pass as they are prayed for ; and that of this there be very many testimonies.”

And Johannes Medina, that

“ GOD delighteth to be prayed unto for those things which otherwise he purposed to do. For GOD had decreed,” saith he, “ after the sin of Adam to take our flesh, and he decreed the time wherein he meant to come ; and yet the prayers of the saints, that prayed for his incarnation and for his coming, were acceptable unto him. GOD hath also decreed to grant pardon unto every repentant sinner ; and yet the prayer is grateful unto him, wherein either the penitent doth pray for himself, or another for him, that GOD would be pleased to accept his repentance. GOD hath decreed also and promised not to forsake his Church

and to be present with councils lawfully assembled; yet the prayer notwithstanding is grateful unto GOD, and the hymns, whereby his presence and favour and grace are implored both for the council and the Church."

And whereas it might be objected, that howsoever the Church may sometimes pray for those things which she shall certainly receive, yet she doth not pray for those things which she hath already received; and this she hath received, that those souls shall not be damned, seeing they have received their sentence, and are most secure from damnation; the Cardinal replieth, that this objection may easily be avoided:

"For although those souls," saith he, "have received already their first sentence in the particular judgment, and by that sentence are freed from hell, yet doth there yet remain the general judgment, in which they are to receive the second sentence. Wherefore the Church, praying that those souls in the last judgment may not fall into darkness, nor be swallowed up in hell, doth not pray for the thing which the soul hath, but which it shall receive."

Thus, these men, labouring to show how the prayers for the dead used in their Church may stand with their conceits of Purgatory, do thereby inform us how the Prayers for the dead used by the ancient Church may stand well enough without the supposal of any purgatory at all. For if we pray for those things which we are most sure will come to pass, and the Church, by the adversary's own confession, did pray accordingly that the souls of the faithful might escape the pains of hell at the general judgment, notwithstanding they had certainly been freed from them already by the sentence of the particular judgment: by the same reason, when the Church in times past besought GOD to "remember all those that slept in the hope of the resurrection of everlasting life," which is the form of prayer used in the Greek Liturgies, and to give unto them rest, and to bring them unto the place where the light of His countenance should shine upon them for evermore, why should not we think that it desired these things should be granted unto them by the last sentence at the day of the resurrection, notwithstanding they were formerly adjudged unto them by the particular sentence at the time of their dissolution?

For, as

"that which shall befall unto all at the day of judgment is accomplished in every one at the day of his death;"

so, on the other side, whatsoever befalleth the soul of every one at the day of his death, the same is fully accomplished upon the whole man at the day of the general judgment. Whereupon we find that the Scriptures every where do point out that great day unto us, as the time wherein mercy and forgiveness, rest and refreshing, joy and gladness, redemption and salvation, rewards and crowns, shall be bestowed upon all God's children. As in 2 Tim. i. 16. 18. "The LORD give mercy unto the house of Onesiphorus: the LORD grant unto him that he may find mercy of the LORD in that day." 1 Cor. i. 8. "Who shall also confirm you unto the end, that ye may be blameless in the day of our LORD JESUS CHRIST." Acts iii. 19. "Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the LORD." 2 Thess. i. 6. 7. "It is a righteous thing with GOD to recompense unto you which are troubled rest with us, when the LORD JESUS shall be revealed from heaven with His mighty angels." Philip. ii. 16. "That I may rejoice in the day of CHRIST, that I have not run in vain, neither laboured in vain." 1 Thess. ii. 19. "For what is our hope, or joy, or crown of rejoicing? are not even ye in the presence of our LORD JESUS CHRIST at His coming?" 1 Pet. i. 5. "Who are kept by the power of GOD through faith unto salvation, ready to be revealed in the last time." 1 Cor. v. 5. "That the spirit may be saved in the day of the LORD JESUS." Ephes. iv. 30. "Grieve not the holy SPIRIT of GOD, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption." Luke xxi. 28. "When these things begin to come to pass, then look up, and lift up your heads; for your redemption draweth nigh." 2 Tim. iv. 8. "Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the LORD, the righteous Judge, shall give me at that day;" and Luke xiv. 14. "Thou shalt be recompensed at the resurrection of the just."

And that the Church, in her offices for the dead, had special respect unto this time of the resurrection, appeareth plainly, both by the portions of Scripture appointed to be read therein, and by divers particulars in the prayers themselves, that manifestly dis-

cover this intention. For there "the ministers," as the writer of the Ecclesiastical Hierarchy reporteth,

"read those undoubted promises which are recorded in the divine Scriptures of our divine resurrection, and then devoutly sang such of the sacred Psalms as were of the same subject and argument."

And so accordingly in the Roman Missal, the lessons ordained to be read for that time are taken from 1 Cor. xv. "Behold, I tell you a mystery; we shall all rise again," &c. John v. "The hour cometh wherein all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, and they that have done good shall come forth unto the resurrection of life," &c. 1 Thess. iv. "Brethren, we would not have you ignorant concerning them that sleep, that ye sorrow not, as others which have no hope." John xi. "I am the resurrection and the life: he that believeth in me, although he were dead, shall live." 2 Maccab. xii. "Judas caused a sacrifice to be offered for the sins of the dead, justly and religiously thinking of the resurrection." John vi. "This is the will of my FATHER that sent me, that every one that seeth the SON and believeth in him, may have life everlasting: and I will raise him up at the last day." And, "he that eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath life everlasting: and I will raise him up at the last day." And, lastly, Apocal. xiv. "I heard a voice from heaven, saying unto me, Write, blessed are the dead which die in the LORD, from henceforth now, saith the SPIRIT, that they may rest from their labours; for their works follow them." Wherewith the sequence also doth agree, beginning,

"Dies iræ, dies illa  
Solvat seclum in favilla  
Teste David cum Sibylla:"

and ending,

"Lacrymosa dies illa,  
Qua resurget ex favilla  
Judicandus homo reus;  
Huic ergo parce, Deus.  
Pie Jesu Domine,  
Dona eis requiem."

Tertullian, in his book de Monogamia, which he wrote after he had been infected with the heresy of the Montanists, speaking

of a prayer of a widow for the soul of her deceased husband, saith, that

“ she requesteth refreshing for him, and a portion in the first resurrection.”

Which seemeth to have some twang of the error of the Millenaries (whereunto not Tertullian only with his prophet Montanus, but Nepos also, and Lactantius, and divers other doctors of the Church did fall), who, misunderstanding the prophecy in the 20th of the Revelation, imagined that there should be a *first resurrection* of the just, that should reign here a thousand years upon earth ; and after that a *second resurrection* of the wicked at the day of the general judgment.

“ They that come not to the first resurrection, but are reserved to the second, shall be burned until they fulfil the times betwixt the first and the second resurrection : or if they have not fulfilled them, they shall remain longer in punishment. And therefore let us pray that we may obtain to have our part in the first resurrection,”

saith St. Ambrose. Hence, in a certain Gothic Missal, I meet with two several exhortations made unto the people to pray after this form : the one that God would

“ vouchsafe to place in the bosom of Abraham the souls of those that be at rest, and admit them unto the part of the first resurrection ;”

the other, which I find elsewhere also repeated in particular, that he would

“ place in rest the spirits of their friends which were gone before them in the LORD’s peace, and raise them up in the part of the first resurrection.”

And, to come nearer home, Asserius Menevensis, writing of the death and burial of Ethelred, King of the West Saxons, and Burghred, King of the Mercians. saith that they

“ expect the coming of the LORD and the first resurrection with the just.”

The like doth Abbo Floriacensis also write of our Cuthbert. Which, how it may be excused otherwise, than by saying that at the general resurrection the *dead in Christ shall rise first*, and then the wicked shall be raised after them, and by referring the *first resurrection* unto the *resurrection of the just*, which shall be at that day, I cannot well resolve.

For certain it is, that the *first resurrection*, spoken of in the

20th chapter of the Revelation of St. John, is the resurrection of the soul from the death of sin and error in this world ; as the *second* is the resurrection of the body out of the dust of the earth in the world to come ; both which are distinctly laid down by our Saviour, in the 5th chapter of the Gospel of St. John ; the first in the 25th verse, " The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the SON of GOD, and they that hear shall live : " the second, in the 28th and 29th, " Marvel not at this ; for the hour is coming, in which all that are in the grave shall hear his voice, and shall come forth : they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life ; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation. "

And to this general resurrection and to the judgment of the last day, had the Church relation in her prayers ; some patterns whereof it will not be amiss to exhibit here, in these examples following :

" Although the condition of death brought in upon mankind doth make our hearts and minds heavy ; yet, by the gift of thy clemency, we are raised up with the hope of future immortality ; and being mindful of eternal salvation, are not afraid to sustain the loss of this light. For by the benefit of thy grace, life is not taken away to the faithful, but changed ; and the souls being freed from the prison of the body, abhor things mortal when they attain unto things eternal. Wherefore we beseech thee that thy servant N., being placed in the tabernacles of the blessed, may rejoice that he hath escaped the straits of the flesh, and in the desire of glorification expect with confidence the day of judgment. "

" Through JESUS CHRIST our LORD, whose holy passion we celebrate without doubt for immortal and well resting souls ; for them especially upon whom thou hast bestowed the grace of the second birth ; who, by the example of the same JESUS CHRIST our LORD, have begun to be secure of the resurrection. For thou, who hast made the things that were not, art able to repair the things that were ; and hast given unto us evidences of the resurrection to come, not only by the doctrine of the Prophets and Apostles, but also by the resurrection of the same thy only begotten SON our Redeemer. "

" O GOD, who art the Creator and Maker of all things, and who art the bliss of the saints, grant unto us who make request unto thee, that the spirit of our brother, who is loosed from the knot of his body, may be presented in the blessed resurrection of thy saints. "

" O Almighty and merciful GOD, we do entreat thy clemency, forasmuch as by thy judgment we are born and made an end, that thou wilt receive into everlasting rest the soul of our brother, whom thou of thy piety hast commanded to

pass from the dwelling of this world, and permit him to be associated with the company of Thine elect, that together with them he may remain in everlasting bliss without end."

"Eternal GOD, who in CHRIST thine only begotten SON our LORD hast given unto us the hope of a blessed resurrection; grant, we beseech thee, that the souls for which we offer this sacrifice of our redemption unto thy Majesty, may of thy mercy attain unto the rest of a blessed resurrection with thy saints."

"Let this communion, we beseech thee, O LORD, purge us from sin; and give unto the soul of thy servant N. a portion in the heavenly joy, that being set apart before the throne of the glory of thy CHRIST with those that are upon the right hand, it may have nothing common with those that are upon the left."

"Through CHRIST our LORD: at whose coming, when thou shalt command both the peoples to appear, command thy servant also to be severed from the number of the evil; and grant unto him that he may both escape the flames of everlasting punishment, and obtain the rewards of a righteous life," &c.

Lastly, Abbot Berengosius, speaking of Constantine the Great,

"Forasmuch," saith he, "as hitherto he hath not the full perfection of his future rest, but rather doth hope as yet with us to find a better resurrection, we are to pray that He who by His blood was pleased to sanctify the banner of the quickening cross, would hereafter bring unto perfect rest both us and him."

In these and other prayers of the like kind, we may descry evident footsteps of the primary intentions of the Church in her supplications for the dead; which was, that the whole man, not the soul separated only, might receive public remission of sins and a solemn acquittal in the judgment of that great day, and so obtain both a full escape from all the consequences of sin, *the last enemy being now destroyed, and death swallowed up in victory*, and a perfect consummation of bliss and happiness. All which are comprised in that short prayer of St. Paul for Onesiphorus, though made for him while he was alive. *The Lord grant unto him that he may find mercy of the Lord in that day.* Yea, divers prayers for the dead of this kind are still retained in the Roman Offices; of which the great Spanish doctor, Johannes Medina, thus writeth:

"Although I have read many prayers for the faithful deceased which are contained in the Roman Missal, yet have I read in none of them that the Church doth petition that they may more quickly be freed from pains; but I have read that in some of them petition is made that they may be freed from everlasting pains."

For beside the common prayer that is used in the Mass for the commemoration of all the faithful deceased, that

“CHRIST would free them from the mouth of the lion, that hell may not swallow them up, and that they may not fall into the place of darkness,”

this prayer is prescribed for the day wherein the dead did depart out of this life :

“O GOD, whose property is always to have mercy and to spare, we most humbly beseech thee for the soul of thy servant N. which this day thou hast commanded to depart out of this world, that thou mayest not deliver it into the hands of the enemy, nor forget it finally ; but command it to be received by the holy angels, and brought unto the country of Paradise ; that because he hath trusted and believed in thee, he may not sustain the pains of hell, but possess joys everlasting.”

Which is a direct prayer, that the soul of him which was then departed might immediately be received into heaven, and escape not the temporary pains of purgatory, but the everlasting pains of hell. For howsoever the new reformers of the Roman Missal have put in here *pœnas inferni*, under the generality peradventure of the term of the “pains of hell,” intending to shroud their purgatory, which they would have men to believe to be one of the lodges of hell ; yet in the old missal which Medina had respect unto, we read expressly *pœnas æternas*, “everlasting pains ;” which by no construction can be referred unto the pains of purgatory. And to the same purpose, in the book of the ceremonies of the Church of Rome, at the exequies of a Cardinal, a prayer is appointed to be read, that by the assistance of God’s grace he might

“escape the judgment of everlasting revenge, who, while he lived, was marked with the seal of the Holy Trinity.”

Again,

“there be other prayers,” saith Medina, “wherein petition is made, that GOD would raise the souls of the dead in their bodies unto bliss at the day of judgment.”

Such, for example, is that which is found in the Roman Missal :

“Absolve, we beseech thee, O LORD, the soul of thy servant from all the bond



of his sins, that in the glory of the resurrection being raised among thy saints and elect, he may breathe again,"

or be refreshed. And that other in the Roman Pontifical :

" O GOD, unto whom all things do live, and unto whom our bodies in dying do not perish, but are changed for the better, we humbly pray thee that thou wouldst command the soul of thy servant N. to be received by the hands of thy holy angels, to be carried into the bosom of thy friend the Patriarch Abraham, and to be raised up at the last day of the great judgment ; and whatsoever faults by the deceit of the devil he hath incurred, do thou of thy pity and mercy wash away by forgiving them."

Now, forasmuch as it is most certain that all such as depart in grace, as the adversaries acknowledge that all in purgatory do, are sure to escape hell, and to be raised up unto glory at the last day, Medina perplexeth himself exceedingly in according these kind of prayers, with the received grounds of purgatory ; and after much agitation of the business to and fro, at last resolveth upon one of these two desperate conclusions. That touching these

" prayers which are made in the Church for the dead, it may first of all be said that it is not necessary to excuse them all from unfitness. For many things are permitted to be read in the Church, which although they be not altogether sane, and altogether fit, yet serve for the stirring up and increasing the devotion of the faithful. Many such things," saith he, " we believe are contained in the histories that be not sacred, and in the legends of the saints, and in the opinions and writings of the doctors ; all which are tolerated by the Church in the mean time, while there is no question moved of them, and no scandal ariseth from them. And therefore it is no marvel, that somewhat not so fit should be contained in the aforesaid prayers, and be tolerated in the Church, seeing such prayers were made by private persons, not by councils, neither were approved at all by councils."

And we easily do believe, indeed, that their offices and legends are fraught not only with untrue and unfit, but also with far worse stuff ; neither is this any news unto us. Agobardus, bishop of Lyons, complained, about eight hundred years ago, that the Antiphonary used in his Church had " many ridiculous and phantastical" things in it ; that he was fain to cut off from thence such things as seemed to be " either superfluous, or light, or lying, or blasphemous."

The like complaint was made not long since by Lindanus of the Roman Antiphonaries and Missals; wherein

“not only the apocryphal tales,” saith he, “out of the Gospel of Nicodemus and other toys are thrust in, but the very secret prayers themselves are defiled with most foul faults.”

But, now we have the

“Roman Missal restored according to the decree of the Council of Trent, set out by the command of Pius V., and revised again by the authority of Clemens VIII.,”

I doubt much whether our Romanists will allow the censure which their Medina hath given of the prayers contained therein. And therefore if this will not please them, he hath another answer in store; of which though his countryman Mendoza hath given sentence that it is *indigna viro theologo*,

“unworthy of any man that beareth the name of a divine,”

yet such as it is you shall have it. Supposing, then, that the Church hath no intention to pray for any other of the dead, but those that are detained in purgatory, this he delivereth for his second resolution:

“The Church knowing that GOD hath power to punish everlastingly those souls by which, when they lived, he was mortally offended, and that GOD hath not tied his power unto the Scriptures, and unto the promises that are contained in the Scriptures, (forasmuch as he is above all things, and as omnipotent after his promises, as if he had promised nothing at all,) therefore the Church doth humbly pray GOD, that he would not use this his absolute omnipotency against the souls of the faithful, which are departed in grace; therefore she doth pray that he would vouchsafe to free them from everlasting pains, and from revenge and the judgment of condemnation, and that he would be pleased to raise them up again with his elect.”

§ 3. *Of the Place and Condition of Souls departed.*

BUT leaving our Popish doctors, with their profound speculations of the not limiting GOD's power by the Scriptures, and the promises which he hath made unto us therein, let us return to the ancient Fathers, and consider the differences that are to be found among them touching the place and condition of souls separated from their bodies. For according to the several apprehensions which they had thereof, they made different applications and interpretations of the use of praying for the dead; whose particular intentions and devotions in that kind must of necessity therefore be distinguished from the general intention of the whole Church.

1. St. Augustine, (that I may begin with him, who was, as the most ingenious, so likewise the most ingenuous of all others, in acknowledging his ignorance where he saw cause,) being to treat of these matters, maketh this preface beforehand unto his hearers :

“Of hell neither have I had any experience as yet, nor you; and peradventure it may be that our passage may lie some other way, and not prove to be by hell. For these things be uncertain.”

And having occasion to speak of the departure of Nebridius, his dear friend :

“Now he liveth,” saith he, “in the bosom of Abraham; whatsoever the thing be that is signified by that bosom, there doth my Nebridius live.”

But elsewhere he directly distinguisheth this bosom from the place of bliss into which the saints shall be received after the last judgment :

“After this short life,” saith he, “thou shalt not as yet be where the saints shall be, unto whom it is said, *Come, ye blessed of my FATHER, receive the kingdom which was prepared for you from the beginning of the world.* Thou shalt not as yet be there: who knoweth it not? But now thou mayest be there, where that proud and barren rich man in the midst of his torments saw afar off the poor man, sometimes full of ulcers, resting. Being placed in that rest, thou dost

securely expect the day of judgment ; when thou mayest receive thy body, when thou mayest be changed to be equal unto an angel."

And for the state of souls betwixt the time of the particular and general judgment, this is his conclusion in general :

"The time that is interposed betwixt the death of man and the last resurrection, containeth the souls in hidden receptacles, as every one is worthy either of rest or of trouble, according unto that which it did purchase in the flesh when it lived."

Into these hidden receptacles he thought the souls of God's children might carry some of their lighter faults with them : which being not removed would hinder them from coming into the kingdom of heaven, whereunto no polluted thing can enter, and from which, by the prayers and almsdeeds of the living, he held they might be released. But of two things he professed himself here to be ignorant.

First, What those sins were which did so endure the coming unto the kingdom of God, that yet by the care of good friends they might obtain pardon.

Secondly, whether those souls did endure any temporary pains in the interim betwixt the time of death and the resurrection. For howsoever in his one and twentieth book of the City of God, and the thirteenth and sixteenth chapters, (for the new patch which they have added to the four and twentieth chapter is not worthy of regard,) he affirms that some of them do suffer certain purgatory punishments before the last and dreadful judgment ; yet by comparing these places with the five and twentieth chapter of the twentieth book, it will appear, that by those purgatory punishments he understandeth here the furnace of the fire of conflagration, that shall immediately go before this last judgment, and, as he elsewhere describeth the effects thereof,

" separate some unto the left hand, and mete out others unto the right."

Neither was this opinion of the reservation of souls in secret places, and the purging of them in the fire of conflagration at the day of judgment, entertained by this famous Doctor alone ; divers others there were that had touched upon the same string before him. Origen, in his fourth book *περὶ ἀρχῶν*, as we have him translated by Ruffinus, (for both in the extracts selected out of him by St. Basil and St. Gregory, and in St. Jerome's 59th

epistle *ad Avitum*, we find the place somewhat otherwise expressed,) saith that

“such as depart out of this world after the common course of death, are disposed of according to their deeds and merits, as they shall be judged to be worthy, some into the place which is called hell, others into Abraham’s bosom, and through divers other places or mansions.”

And in his commentaries on Leviticus, he addeth further :

“Neither have the Apostles themselves as yet received their joy ; but even they do expect, that I also may be made partaker of their joy. For the saints departing from hence do not presently obtain the full rewards of their labours ; but they expect us likewise, however staying, however slacking.”

Then touching the purging of men after the resurrection, he thus delivereth his mind in his commentaries upon Luke :

“I think that even after our resurrection from the dead we shall have need of a sacrament to wash and purge us ; for none can rise without pollutions.”

And upon Jeremy :

“If any one be saved in the second resurrection, he is that sinner which needeth the baptism of fire, which is purged with burning, that whatsoever he hath of *wood, hay, and stubble*, the fire may consume it.”

Which in his 5th book against Celsus he doth explicate more at large.

Neither doth Lactantius show himself to vary much from him in either of those points ; for thus he writeth :

“When GOD shall judge the righteous, he will examine them by fire. Then they whose sins shall prevail, either in weight or number, shall be touched with the fire and burned ; but they whom perfect righteousness and the ripeness of virtue hath thoroughly seasoned, shall not feel that fire ; for from thence have they something in them that will repel and put back the force of the flame. So great is the force of innocency, that that fire shall fly back from it without doing any harm, which hath received this power from GOD, that it may burn the wicked and do service to the righteous. Yet, notwithstanding, let no man think that the souls are presently judged after death. All of them are detained in one common custody, until the time come wherein the great Judge doth make trial of their doings.”

In like manner doth St. Hilary write of the one part :

“All the faithful, when they are gone out of the body, shall be reserved by the LORD’s custody for that entry into the heavenly kingdom, being in the mean time placed in the bosom of Abraham, whither the wicked are hindered from coming by the gulf interposed betwixt them, until the time of entering the kingdom of heaven do come.”

And thus of the other :

“ Being to render an account of every idle word, shall we desire the day of judgment, wherein that unwearied fire must be passed by us, in which those grievous punishments for expiating the soul from sins must be endured ?” For, “ to such as have been baptized with the HOLY GHOST, it remaineth, that they should be consummated with the fire of judgment.”

In St. Ambrose also there are some passages to be found which seem to make directly for either of these points ; as these for the former :

“ The soul is loosed from the body, and yet after the end of this life it is held as yet in suspense, with the uncertainty of the future judgment: so that there is no end where there is thought to be an end.”

“ We read in the books of Esdras, that when the day of judgment shall come, the earth shall restore the bodies of the deceased, and the dust shall restore the relics of the dead which do rest in the graves ; and the habitacles shall restore the souls which were committed to them ; and the MOST HIGH shall be revealed upon the seat of judgment.”

#### Also that Scripture

“ nameth those habitacles of the souls promptuaries,” or secret receptacles ; “ and meeting with the complaint of man, that the just which have gone before may seem to be defrauded, until the day of judgment, which is a very long time, of the reward due unto them, saith wonderfully, that the day of judgment is like unto a crown, wherein as there is no slackness of the last, so there is no swiftness of the first. For the day of crowning is expected by all ; that within that day both they who are overcome may be ashamed, and they who do overcome may obtain the palm of victory.”

“ Therefore while the fulness of time is expected, the souls expect their due reward. Pain is provided for some of them, for some glory ; and yet, in the mean time, neither are those without trouble, nor these without fruit.”

#### And these for the latter :

“ With fire shall the sons of Levi be purged, with fire Ezekiel, with fire Daniel. But these, although they shall be tried with fire, yet shall say, *we have passed through fire and water.* Others shall remain in the fire.”

“ And if the LORD shall save his servants, we shall be saved by faith, yet saved as it were by fire. Although we shall not be burned up, yet shall we be burned.”

“ After the end of the world, when the angels shall be sent to separate the good and the bad, this baptism shall be ; when iniquity shall be burnt up by the furnace of fire, that in the kingdom of GOD the righteous may shine as the sun in the kingdom of their FATHER. And if any one be as Peter or as John, he is baptized with this fire.” Seeing therefore, “ he that is purged here, hath need to be purged again there, let him purge us there also, when the LORD may say, Enter into my rest : that every one of us being burned with that flaming sword, not burned up, when he is entered into that pleasure of paradise, may give thanks unto his LORD, saying, Thou hast brought us into a place of refreshment.”

Hereunto we may adjoin that observation of Suarez the Jesuit :

“ They who think that the souls of men are not judged at their death, nor do receive reward or punishment, but are reserved in hidden receptacles unto the general judgment, do consequently say, that as men do not receive their last reward or punishment, so neither are they also purged, until the general resurrection and judgment do come, from whence they might say with reasonable good consequence, that men are to be purged with the fire of conflagration.”

And with as good consequence also may we add, that prayers were not to be made for the delivery of the souls of the dead from any purgatory pains, supposed to be suffered by them betwixt the time of their death, and their resurrection, which be the only prayers that are now in question.

“ In the resurrection, when our works, like unto clusters of grapes, shall be cast into the probatory fire, as it were into the wine-press, every man’s husbandry shall be made manifest,”

saith Gregorius Cerameus, sometime archbishop of Tauromenium in Sicilia. And

“ No man as yet is entered either into the torments of hell, or into the kingdom of heaven, until the time of the resurrection of the body,”

saith Anastasius Sinaita. Upon whom Gretser bestoweth this marginal annotation ; that this is the

“ error of certain of the ancient and latter Grecians.”

And we find it to be held indeed both by some of the ancient, (as namely in Caius, who lived at Rome when Zephyrinus was bishop there, and is accounted to be the author of the treatise falsely fathered upon Josephus, *περὶ τῆς τοῦ παντὸς αἰτίας*, a large fragment whereof hath been lately published by Hæschelius, in his notes upon Photius’s Bibliotheca,) and by the latter Grecians, in whose name Marcus Eugenicus, archbishop of Ephesus, doth make this protestation against such of his countrymen, as yielded to the definition of the Florentine Council :

“ We say, that neither the saints do receive the kingdom prepared for them, and those secret good things, neither the sinners do as yet fall into hell ; but that either of them do remain in expectation of their proper lot ; and that this appertaineth unto the time that is to come after the resurrection and the judgment. But these men, with the Latins, would have these to receive presently after death the things they have deserved ; but unto those of the middle sort, that is, to such as die in penance, they assign a purgatory fire, which they feign to be distinct from

that of hell, that thereby, say they, being purged in their souls after death, they likewise may be received into the kingdom of heaven together with the righteous."

2. And, therefore, as the Latins in their prayers for the dead have respect for the delivery of souls out of purgatory, so the Grecians in theirs have relation to that other state, which is to determine with the resurrection. As in that prayer of their Euchologe for example :

" the body is buried in the earth, but the soul goeth in unknown places, waiting for the future resurrection of the dead ; in which, O gracious Saviour, make bright thy servant, place him together with the saints, and refresh him in the bosom of Abraham ;"

the condition of which " unknown places," they do thus further explicate in another prayer :—Forasmuch as by thy divine will thou hast appointed

" the soul to remove thither, where it receive the first being, until the common resurrection, and the body to be resolved into that of which it was composed, therefore we beseech thee, the FATHER without beginning, and thine only begotten SON, and thy most holy and consubstantial and quickening SPIRIT, that thou wilt not permit thine own workmanship to be swallowed up in destruction, but that the body may be dissolved into that of which it was composed, and the soul placed in the quire of the righteous."

That " barbarous impostor," as Molanus rightly styleth him, who counterfeited a letter as written by St. Cyril, bishop of Jerusalem, unto St. Augustine, touching the miracles of St. Jerome, taketh upon him to lay down the precise time of the first arising of this opinion amongst the Grecians in this manner : " After the death of most glorious Jerome, a certain heresy or sect arose amongst the Grecians, and came to the Latins also, which went about with their wicked reasons to prove, that the souls of the blessed, until the day of the general judgment, wherein they were to be joined again unto their bodies, are deprived of the sight and knowledge of GOD, in which the whole blessedness of the saints doth consist ; and that the souls of the damned, in like manner, until that day are tormented with no pains. Whose reason was this : that as the soul did merit or sin with the body, so with the body was it to receive rewards or pains. Those wicked sectaries also did maintain, that there was no place of purgatory, wherein the souls which had not done full penance for their sins in this world might be purged. Which pestilent sect getting head, so great sorrow fell upon us, that we were even weary of our life."

Then he telleth a wise tale, how St. Jerome, being at that time with GOD, for the confutation of this new-sprung heresy, raised up three men from the dead, after that he had first



“ led their souls into paradise, purgatory, and hell, to the end they might make known unto all men the things that were done there;”

but had not the wit to consider, that St. Cyril himself had need to be raised up to make the fourth man among them. For how otherwise should he, who died thirty years before St. Jerome, as is known to every one that knoweth the history of those times, have heard and written the news which those three good fellows, that were raised by St. Jerome after his death, did relate concerning heaven, hell, and purgatory? Yet is it nothing so strange to me, I confess, that such idle dreams as these should be devised in the times of darkness, to delude the world withal, as that now in the broad daylight Binsfeldius and Suarez, and other Romish merchants, should adventure to bring forth such rotten stuff as this, with hope to gain any credit of antiquity thereby, unto the new-erected staple of popish purgatory.

The Dominican Friars, in a certain treatise written by them at Constantinople in the year 1252, assign somewhat a lower beginning unto this error of the Grecians; affirming that they

“ followed therein a certain inventor of this heresy, named Andrew, archbishop sometime of Cæsarea in Capadocia, who said that the souls did wait for their bodies, that together with them, with which they had committed good or evil, they might likewise receive the recompense of their deeds.”

But that which Andrew saith herein he saith not out of his own head, and therefore is wrongfully charged to be the first inventor of it: but out of the judgment of many godly Fathers that went before him.

“ It hath been said,” saith he, “ by many of the saints, that all virtuous men,” after this life, “ do receive places fit for them; whence they may certainly make conjecture on the glory that shall befall unto them.”

Where Peltanus bestoweth such another marginal note upon him as Gretser his fellow Jesuit did upon Anastasius;

“ This opinion is now expressly condemned and rejected by the Church.”

And yet doth Alphonso de Castro acknowledge that

“ the patrons thereof were famous men, renowned as well for holiness as for knowledge;”

but telleth us withal that

“ no man ought to marvel that such great men should fall into so pestilent an

error, because as the Apostle St. James saith, *he that offendeth not in word is a perfect man.*"

3. Another particular opinion, which we must sever from the general intention of the Church in her oblations and prayers for the dead, is that which is noted by Theophylact, upon the speech of our SAVIOUR, Luke xii. 5, in which he wished us to observe, that he did not say,

"For him, who after he hath killed, casteth into hell," but, "hath power to cast" into hell. "For the sinners which die," saith he, "are not always cast into hell; but it remaineth in the power of God to pardon them also. And this I say, for the oblations, and doles which are made for the dead, which do not a little avail even them that die in grievous sins. He doth not, therefore, generally, after he hath killed, cast into hell, but hath power to cast. Wherefore let us not cease by alms, and intercessions, to appease him who hath power to cast, but doth not always use this power, but is able to pardon also."

Thus far Theophylact, whom our adversaries do blindly bring in for the countenancing of their use of praying, and offering for the dead; not considering, that the prayers, and oblations, which he would uphold, do reach even unto such as "die in grievous sins," (which the Romanists acknowledge to receive no relief at all, by any thing that they can do,) and are intended for the keeping of souls from being cast into hell, and not for fetching them out when they have been cast into Purgatory; a place that never came within the compass of Theophylact's belief. His testimony will fit a great deal better the prayer of St. Dunstan: who, as the tale goeth, having understood that the soul of King Edwin was to be carried into hell, never gave over praying, until he had gotten him rid of that danger, and transferred him unto the coast of penitent souls; where he well deserved, doubtless, to undergo that penance which Hugh, bishop of Coventry and Chester, on his death-bed, imposed upon himself; even to lie in the dungeon of Purgatory, without bail or mainprise, until the general jail delivery of the last day.

4. Another private conceit, entertained by divers, as well of the elder as of middle times, in their devotion for the dead, was, that an augmentation of glory might thereby be procured for the saints, and either a total deliverance, or a diminution of torments at leastwise, obtained for the wicked.

“ If the barbarians,” saith St. Chrysostom, “ do bury with their dead the things that belong unto them, it is much more reason that thou shouldst send with the deceased the things that are his; not that they may be made ashes as they were, but, that they may add greater glory unto him; and if he be departed hence, a sinner, that they may loose his sins; but if righteous, that an addition may be made to his reward and retribution.”

Yea, in the very latter days, Ivo Carnotensis, writing unto Maud, Queen of England, concerning the prayers that were to be made for the King, her brother's soul, saith, that

“ it doth not seem idle if we make intercession for those who already enjoy rest, that their rest may be increased.”

Whereupon, Pope Innocent the third doth bring this for one of the answers wherewith he laboureth to salve the prayers which were used in the Church of Rome, that

“ such or such an oblation might profit such or such a saint unto glory;” that “ many repute it no indignity, that the glory of the saints should be augmented until the day of judgment; and, therefore, in the mean time, the Church may wish the increase of their glorification.”

So likewise for the mitigation of the pains of them whose souls were doubted to be in torment, this form of prayer was of old used in the same Church, as in Grimoldus' Sacramentary may be seen, and retained in the Roman Missal itself, until in the late Reformation thereof it was removed.

“ O Almighty and merciful God, incline, we beseech thee, thy holy ears unto our poor prayers, which we do humbly pour forth before the sight of thy Majesty, for the soul of thy servant N., that forasmuch as we are distrustful of the quality of his life, by the abundance of thy pity we may be comforted; and if his soul cannot obtain full pardon, yet at least in the midst of the torments themselves, which peradventure it suffereth, out of the abundance of thy compassion it may feel refreshment.”

Which prayer whither it tendeth may appear partly by that which Prudentius writeth of the play-days, which he supposeth the souls in hell sometimes do obtain :

Sunt et spiritibus sæpe nocentibus  
 Pœnarum celebres sub Styge feriæ, &c.  
 Marcent suppliciiis Tartara mitibus,  
 Exultatque sui carceris otio  
 Umbrarum populus, liber ab ignibus :  
 Nec fervent solito flumina sulphure—

partly by the doubtful conceits of God's merciful dealing with the wicked, in the world to come, which are found in others, but

especially by these passages that we meet withal in the sermons of St. Chrysostom :

“ This man hath spent his whole life in vain, neither hath lived one day to himself, but to voluptuousness, to luxury, to covetousness, to sin, to the devil. Tell me, therefore, shall we not mourn for him ? shall we not endeavour to pull him out of these dangers ? For there be means, if we will, whereby his punishment may be made light unto him. If, then, we do make continual prayers for him, if we bestow alms, although he be unworthy, God will respect us.” For “ many have received benefit by the alms that have been given by others for them ; and found thereby, although not a perfect, yet some consolation.”

“ This, therefore, is done, that although we ourselves be not virtuous, we may be careful to get virtuous companions, and friends, and wife, and son, as looking to reap some fruit even by them also ; reaping, indeed, but little, yet reaping some fruit notwithstanding.”

“ Let us not, therefore, simply weep for the dead, but for such as are dead in their sins ; these be worthy of lamentations and bewailings and tears. For what hope is there, tell me, for men to depart with their sins, where they cannot put off their sins ? For as long as they were here, there was, peradventure, great expectation that they would be altered, that they would be bettered : but being gone unto hell, where there is no gaining anything by repentance (for in hell, saith he, who shall confess unto thee ?) how are they not worthy of lamentations ?”

“ Let us, therefore, weep for such, let us succour them to our power, let us find out some help for them, little indeed, but yet such as may relieve them. How, and after what manner ? both praying ourselves, and entreating others to make prayers for them, and giving continually unto the poor, for them ; for this thing bringeth some consolation.”

5. The like doctrine is delivered by Andrew, Archbishop of Crete, in his sermon of the Life of Man, and of the Dead ; and by John Damascen, or whosoever else was author of the book ascribed unto him, concerning them that are departed in the faith ; where three notable tales are told of the benefit that even infidels, and idolaters themselves, should receive by such prayers as these. One touching the soul of the Emperor Trajan, delivered from hell by the prayers of Pope Gregory : of the truth whereof lest any man should make question, he affirmeth very roundly that no less than

“ the whole east and west will witness that this is true and uncontrollable.”

And, indeed, in the east this fable seemeth first to have arisen, where it obtained such credit that the Grecians to this day do still use this form of prayer :

“As thou didst loose Trajan from punishment, by the earnest intercession of thy servant Gregory, the dialogue writer, hear us likewise who pray unto thee.”

And therefore, to them doth Hugo Etherianus thus appeal for justifying the truth of this narration :

“Do not, I pray you, say in your hearts, that this is false, or feigned. Enquire, if you please, of the Grecians ; the whole Greek Church surely doth testify these things.”

He might, if he had pleased, being an Italian himself, have enquired nearer home of the Romans, among whom this feat was reported to have been acted, rather than among the Grecians, who were strangers to the business. But the Romans, as we understand by Johannes Diaconus, in the Life of St. Gregory, found no such matter among their records ; and when they had notice given them thereof out of the Legends of the Church of England, (for from thence received they the news of this and some other such strange acts, reported to have been done by St. Gregory among themselves,) they were not very hasty to believe it ; because they could hardly be persuaded that St. Gregory, who had taught them that

“infidels and wicked men, departed out of this life, were no more to be prayed for than the devil and his angels, which were appointed unto everlasting punishment,”

should in his practice be found to be so much different from his judgment.

The second tale toucheth upon the very times of the Apostles, wherein the Apostless Thecla is said to have prayed for Falconilla, (the daughter of Tryphæna, whom St. Paul saluteth, Rom. xvi. 12.)

“a Gentile and an idolatress, altogether profane, and a servitor of another god,” to this effect : “O GOD, SON of the true GOD, grant unto Tryphæna, according to thy will, that her daughter may live with thee, time without end.”

Or, as Basil, Bishop of Seleucia, doth express it :

“Grant unto thy servant Tryphæna, that her desire may be fulfilled, concerning her daughter ; her desire therein being this, that her soul may be numbered among the souls of those that have already believed in thee, and may enjoy the life and pleasure that is in paradise.”

The third tale he produceth out of Palladius's historical book written unto Lausus, (although neither in the Greek set out by Meursius and Fronto Duçæus, nor in the three several Latin

editions of that history published before, there be any such thing to be found,) touching a dead man's skull, that should have uttered this speech unto Macarius, the great Egyptian anchoret :  
 " When thou dost offer up thy prayers for the dead, then do we feel some little consolation."

A brainless answer you may well conceive it to be, that must be thought to have proceeded from a dry skull lying by the highway side ; but as brainless as it is, it hath not a little troubled the quick heads of our Romish divines, and put many an odd crotchet into their nimble brains. Renatus Laurentius telleth us, that

" without all doubt it was an angel that did speak in this skull." And " I say," quoth Alphonsus Mendoza, " that this head which lay in the way was not the head of one that was damned, but of a just man remaining in purgatory ; for Damascen doth not say in that sermon that it was the head of a Gentile, as it there may be seen."

And true it is, indeed, he neither saith that it was so, neither that it was not so ; but the Grecians generally relate the matter thus : that Macarius

" did hear this from the skull of one that had been a priest of idols, which he found lying in the wilderness, that by his prayers such as were with him in punishment received a little ease of their torment, whensoever it fell out that he made the same for them."

And among the Latins, Thomas Aquinas and other of the schoolmen take this for granted, because they found in the Lives of the Fathers, that the speech which the dead skull used was this :

" I was a priest of the Gentiles :"

so John, the Roman sub-deacon, translateth it ; or, as Rufinus is supposed to have rendered it,

" I was the chief of the priests of the idols, which dwelt in this place, and thou art Abbot Macarius, that art filled with the SPIRIT of GOD. At whatsoever hour, therefore, thou takest pity of them that are in torments, and prayest for them, they then feel some consolation."

Well, saith Mendoza then,

" if St. Thomas, relating this history out of the Lives of the Fathers, doth say that this was the head of a Gentile, he himself is bound to untie this knot."

And so he doth, resolving the matter thus : that the damned get no true ease by the prayers made for them, but such a fantas-

tical kind of joy only, as the devils are said to have when they have seduced and deceived any man.

“ But peradventure,”

saith Cardinal Bellarmine for the upshot,

“ the things which are brought touching that skull might better be rejected as false and apocryphal.”

And Stephen Durant, more peremptorily :

“ The things which are told of Trajan and Falconilla, delivered out of hell by the prayers of St. Gregory and Thecla, and of the dry skull spoken to by Macarius, be feigned and commentitious.”

Which last answer, though it be the surest of all the rest, yet it is not to be doubted for all that, but that the general credit which these fables obtained, together with the countenance which the opinion of the Origenists did receive from Didymus, Evagrius, Gregory Nyssen, (if he be not corrupted,) and other doctors, inclined the minds of men very much to apply the common use of praying for the dead unto this wrong end of hoping to relieve the damned thereby. St. Augustine doth show, that in his time not only some, but exceeding many also, did out of a humane affection take compassion of the eternal pains of the damned, and would not believe that they should never have an end.

And notwithstanding this error was publicly condemned afterwards in the Origenists by the fifth general council held at Constantinople, yet by idle and voluptuous persons was it greedily embraced, as Climacus complaineth : and

“ even now also,” saith St. Gregory, “ there be some who therefore neglect to put an end unto their sins, because they imagine that the judgments which are to come upon them shall some time have an end.”

Yea, of late days this opinion was maintained by the Porretanians, as Thomas calleth them, and some of the Canonists, (the one following therein Gilbert Porreta, Bishop of Poitiers, in his book of theological questions, the other John Semeca in his gloss upon Gratian,) that by the prayers and suffrages of the living the pains of some of the damned were continually diminished, in such manner as infinite proportionable parts may be taken from a line, without ever coming unto an end of the division ; which was in effect to take from them at the last all pain of sense or sense of pain. For, as Thomas observeth it rightly, and Durand after him,

“ in the division of a line at last we must come unto that which is not sensible, considering that a sensible body cannot be divided infinitely. And so it would follow that after many suffrages the pain remaining should not be sensible, and consequently should be no pain at all.”

Neither is to be forgotten, that the invention of All-Souls' Day, (of which you may read, if you please, Polydore Virgil, in his sixth book of the inventors of Things, and the ninth chapter,) that solemn day, I say, wherein our Romanists most devoutly perform all their superstitious observances for the dead, was occasioned at the first by the apprehension of this same erroneous conceit, that the souls of the damned might not only be eased, but fully also delivered by the alms and prayers of the living. The whole narration of the business is thus laid down by Sigebertus Gemblacensis in his Chronicle at the year of our LORD 998.

“ This time,” saith he, “ a certain religious man returning from Jerusalem, being entertained for awhile in Sicily by the courtesy of a certain anchoret, learned from him among other matters, that there were places near unto them that used to cast up burning flames, which by the inhabitants were called the Pots of Vulcan, wherein the souls of the reprobates, according to the quality of their deserts, did suffer divers punishments, the devils being there deputed for the execution thereof; whose voices, angers, and terrors, and sometimes howlings also, he said he often heard, as lamenting that the souls of the damned were taken out of their hands by the alms and prayers of the faithful, and more at this time by the prayers of the Monks of Cluny, who prayed without ceasing for the rest of those that were deceased. The Abbot Odilo having understood this by him, appointed throughout all the monasteries under his subjection, that as upon the first day of November the solemnity of all the saints is observed, so upon the day following the memorial of all that rested in CHRIST should be celebrated. Which rite passing into many other churches, made the memory of the faithful deceased to be solemnized.”

For the elect, this form of prayer was wont to be used in the Romish Church :

“ O GOD, unto whom alone is known the number of the elect that are to be placed in the supernal bliss, grant, we beseech thee, that the book of blessed predestination may retain the names of all those whom we have undertaken to recommend in our prayer, or of all the faithful that are written therein.”

And to pray, that the name of all those that are written in the book of God's election should still be retained therein, may be somewhat tolerable; considering as the divines of that side have informed



us, that those things may be prayed for which we know most certainly will come to pass : but hardly, I think, shall you find in any ritual a form of prayer answerable to this of the Monks of Cluny for the reprobate ; unless it be that whereby St. Francis is said to have obtained that Friar Elias should be made *ex præscito prædestinatus*,

“ an elect of a reprobate.”

Yet it seemeth that some were not very well pleased that what was done so seldom by St. Francis, the angel of the Friars, and that for a reprobate yet living, should be so usually practised by the followers of St. Odilo, the archangel of the monks, for reprobates that were dead : and therefore, in the common editions of Sigebert's Chronicle, they have clean struck out the word *damnatorum*, and instead of *reprobatorum* chopped in *defunctorum*. Which deprivation may be detected, as well by the sincere edition of Sigebert, published by Aubertus Miræus out of the manuscript of Gemblac Abbey, which is thought to be the original copy of Sigebert himself, as by the comparing of him with Petrus Damiani in the life of Odilo, whence this whole narration was by him borrowed. For there also do we read, that in those flaming places

“ the souls of the reprobate, according to the quality of their deserts, did suffer diverse torments :”

and that the devils did complain,

“ that by the alms and prayers” of Odilo and others “ the souls of the damned were taken out of their hands.”

§ 4. *Of the opinion of the heretic Aerius touching Prayers for the Dead.*

By these things we may see what we are to judge of that which our adversaries press so much against us out of Epiphanius ; that he

“ nameth an obscure fellow, one Aerius, to be the first author of this heresy, that Prayer and Sacrifice profit not the departed in CHRIST.”

For neither doth Epiphanius name this to be an heresy, neither doth it appear that himself did hold that prayers and oblations bring such profit to the dead as these men dream they do. He is much deceived who thinketh every thing that Epiphanius findeth fault withal in heretics is esteemed by him to be an heresy ; seeing heresy cannot be but in matters of faith : and the course which Epiphanius taketh in that work, is not only to declare in what special points of faith heretics did dissent from the catholic doctrine, but in what particular observances also they refused to follow the received customs and ordinances of the Church. Therefore at the end of the whole work he setteth down a brief, first of the faith, and then of the ordinances and observances of the Church ; and among the particulars of the latter kind he rehearseth this :

“ For the dead they make commemorations by name, performing,” or “ when they do perform, their prayers and divine service and dispensation of the mysteries :”

and disputing against Aerius touching the point itself, he doth not at all charge him with forsaking the doctrine of the Scriptures, or the faith of the Catholic Church, concerning the state of those that are departed out of this life, but with rejecting the order observed by the Church in her commemorations of the dead : which being an ancient institution, brought in upon wonderful good considerations, as he maintaineth, should not by this humorous heretic have been thus condemned.

“ The Church,” saith he, “ doth necessarily perform this, having received it by tradition from the Fathers ; and who may dissolve the ordinance of his mother,

or the law of his father?" And again: "Our mother the Church hath ordinances settled in her which are inviolable, and may not be broken. Seeing then there are ordinances established in the Church, and they are well, and all things are admirably done, this seducer is again refuted."

For the further opening hereof it will not be amiss to consider both of the objection of Aerius, and of the answer of Epiphanius. Thus did Aerius argue against the practice of the Church:

"For what reason do ye commemorate after death the names of those that are departed? He that is alive prayeth or maketh dispensation" of the mysteries: "what shall the dead be profited hereby? And if the prayer of those here do altogether profit them that be there, then let nobody be godly, let no man do good, but let him procure some friends, by what means it pleaseth him, either persuading them by money, or entreating friends at his death; and let them pray for him that he may suffer nothing there, and that those inexpressible sins which he hath committed may not be required at his hands."

This was Aerius's argumentation, which would have been of force indeed if the whole Church had held, as many did, that the judgment after death was suspended until the general resurrection, and that in the meantime the sins of the dead might be taken away by the suffrages of the living. But he should have considered, as Stephanus Gobarus, who was as great an heretic as himself, did, that the doctors were not agreed upon the point; some of them maintaining

"that the soul of every one that departed out of this life received very great profit by the prayers and oblations and alms that were performed for him;" and others, "on the contrary side, that it was not so;"

and that it was a foolish part in him to confound the private opinion of some with the common faith of the universal Church. That he reprov'd this particular error, which seemeth to have gotten head in his time, as being most plausible to the multitude and very pleasing unto the looser sort of Christians, therein he did well: but that thereupon he condemned the general practice of the Church, which had no dependence upon that erroneous conceit, therein he did like unto himself, headily and perversely. For the Church, in her commemorations and prayers for the dead, had no relation at all unto those that had led their lives lewdly and dissolutely, as appeareth plainly, both by the author of the Ecclesiastical Hierarchy, and by divers other evidences before alledged; but unto those that led their lives in such a godly manner as gave pregnant hope unto the living that their

souls were at rest with God : and to such as these alone did it wish the accomplishment of that which remained of their redemption ; to wit, their public justification and solemn acquittal at the last day, and their perfect consummation of bliss, both in body and soul, in the kingdom of heaven for ever after. Not that the event of these things was conceived to be any ways doubtful, (for we have been told that things may be prayed for, the event whereof is known to be most certain ;) but because the commemoration thereof was thought to serve for special use, not only in regard of the manifestation of the affection of the living toward the dead, (he that prayed, as Dionysius noteth,

“ desiring other men’s gifts as if they were his own graces,”)

but also in respect of the consolation and instruction which the living might receive thereby, as Epiphanius, in his answer to Aerius, doth more particularly declare.

The objection of Aerius was this : the commemorations and prayers used in the Church being no profit to the dead, therefore as an unprofitable thing they are to be rejected. To this doth Epiphanius thus frame his answer :

“ As for the reciting of the names of those that are deceased, what can be better than this ? what more commodious and more admirable ? that such as are present do believe that they who are departed do live, and are not extinguished, but are still being and living with the LORD ; and that this most pious preaching might be declared, that they who pray for their brethren have hope of them, as being in a peregrination.”

Which is as much in effect as if he had denied Aerius’s consequence, and answered him, that although the dead were not profited by this action, yet it did not therefore follow that it should be condemned as altogether unprofitable, because it had a singular use otherwise ; namely, to testify the faith and the hope of the living concerning the dead : the *faith*, in “ declaring them to be alive,” (for so doth Dionysius also expound the Church’s intention in her public nomination of the dead,)

“ and as divinity teacheth, not mortified, but translated from death unto a most divine life ;”

the *hope*, in that they signified hereby that they accounted their brethren to have departed from them no otherwise than as if they had been in a journey, with expectation to meet them afterward ; and by this means made a difference betwixt themselves

and others which had no hope. Then doth Epiphanius proceed further in answering the same objection, after this manner :

“ The prayer also which is made for them doth profit, although it do not cut off all their sins ; yet forasmuch as whilst we are in this world, we oftentimes slip both unwillingly and with our will, it serveth to signify that which is more perfect. For we make a memorial both for the just and for sinners ; (for sinners, entreating the mercy of GOD ; for the just, both the fathers, and patriarchs, the prophets, and apostles, and evangelists, and martyrs, and confessors, bishops also and anchorites, and the whole order,) that we may sever our LORD JESUS CHRIST from the rank of all other men by the honour that we do unto him, and that we may yield worship unto him.”

Which, as far as I apprehend him, is no more than if he had thus replied unto Aerius : Although the prayer that is made for the dead do not cut off all their sins, which is the only thing that thou goest about to prove, yet doth it profit notwithstanding for another purpose ; namely, to signify the supereminent perfection of our SAVIOUR CHRIST above the rest of the sons of men, who are subject to manifold slips and falls as long as they live in this world.

For as well the righteous with their involuntary slips, as sinners with their voluntary falls, do come within the compass of these commemorations : wherein prayers are made both for *sinners* that repent, and for righteous persons that have no such need of repentance : for sinners, that being by their repentance recovered out of the snare of the devil, they may find mercy of the LORD at the last day, and be freed from the fire prepared for the devil and his angels ; for the righteous, that they may be recompensed in the resurrection of the just, and received into the kingdom prepared for them from the foundation of the world. Which kind of prayer being made for the best men that ever lived, even the patriarchs, prophets, apostles, evangelists, and martyrs themselves, CHRIST only excepted, sheweth, that the profit which the Church intended should be reaped therefrom, was not so much the taking away the sins of the parties that were prayed for, as the honouring of their LORD above them ; it being hereby declared,

“ that our LORD is not to be compared unto any man, though a man live in righteousness a thousand times and more. For how should that be possible, considering that the one is GOD, the other man ?”

as the praying to the one, and for the other, doth discover ;

“ and the one is in heaven, the other in earth, by the reason of the remains of the body yet resting in the earth,”

until the day of the resurrection, unto which all these prayers had special reference. This do I conceive to be the right meaning of Epiphanius’s answer, as suiting best both with the general intention of the Church, which he taketh upon him to vindicate from the misconstruction of Aerius, and with the application thereof unto his objection, and with the known doctrine of Epiphanius, delivered by him elsewhere in these terms :

“ After death there is no help to be gotten, either by godliness or by repentance. For Lazarus doth not go there unto the rich man, nor the rich man unto Lazarus ; neither doth Abraham send any of his spoils, that the poor may be afterward made rich thereby ; neither doth the rich man obtain that which he asketh, although he entreat merciful Abraham with instant supplication. For the garners are sealed up, and the time is fulfilled, and the combat is finished, and the lists are avoided, and the garlands are given, and such as have fought are at rest, and such as have not obtained are gone forth, and such as have not fought cannot now be present in time, and such as have been overthrown in the lists are cast out, and all things are clearly finished, after that we are once departed from hence.”

And for the general intention of the Church, besides what already hath been at large declared of the times past, let us a little compare the ancient practice of Praying for the dead maintained by Epiphanius, with the footsteps which remain thereof in the Euchologue used by the Grecians at this very day. For,

First, that the parties prayed for are not supposed to be in any place of torment, appeareth by that speech which they apply to the party deceased, even in the midst of the prayers which they make for the forgiveness of his sins and the resting of his soul ; “ Blessed is the way wherein thou art going to-day, brother ; for to thee is prepared a place of rest.”

And by the prayer following :

“ He is from hence departed breathless, thither where there is the reward of his works, thither where there is the joy of all the saints, with whom rest thou this deceased person, O GOD, of thy mercy and loving kindness.”

Secondly, that they make these prayers as well for the righteous as for sinners, this orison, among others, doth demonstrate :

“ The faithful which have left this life holily, and removed to thee their LORD, receive benignly, giving them rest out of thy tender mercy.”

Thirdly, that in these prayers they aim at those ends expressed by Epiphanius, as well the testifying their belief of the peregri-

nation of their brethren and their living with the LORD, as the putting a difference betwixt CHRIST our SAVIOUR and all other men, how blessed soever, (in respect the one is GOD, the other but men ; the one after His glorious resurrection remaineth now immortal in heaven, the other continue yet in a state of dissolution, with their bodies resting in the earth in expectation of the resurrection ; the purity and perfection of the one is most absolute, the manifold failings of the very best of the other such that they stand in need of mercy and pardon ;) this prayer following may witness :

“ Receive, O LORD, our prayers and supplications, and give rest unto all our fathers, and mothers, and brethren, and sisters, and children, and all our other kindred and alliance ; and unto all souls that rest before us in hope of the everlasting resurrection. And place their spirits and their bodies in the book of life, in the bosoms of Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the region of the living, in the kingdom of heaven, in the paradise of delight, by thy bright angels bringing all into thy holy mansions. Raise also our bodies together with theirs in the day which thou hast appointed, according to thy holy and sure promises. It is not a death then, O LORD, unto thy servants, when we flit from the body and go home to thee our GOD, but a translation from a sorrowful state unto a better and more delightful, and a refreshment and joy. And if we have sinned in any thing against thee, be gracious both unto us and unto them. Forasmuch as no man is clean from pollution before thee, no, though his life were but of one day, thou alone excepted, who didst appear upon earth without sin, JESUS CHRIST our LORD, by whom we all hope to obtain mercy and pardon of our sins : therefore, as a good and merciful GOD, release and forgive both us and them : pardon our offences as well voluntary as involuntary, of knowledge and of ignorance, both manifest and hidden, in deed, in thought, in word, in all our conversations and motions. And to those that are gone before us grant freedom and release, and us that remain bless, granting a good and a peaceable end both to us and to all thy people.”

Whereunto this other short prayer also for one that is deceased may be added :

“ None, no, not one man hath been without sin but thou alone, O Immortal Therefore, as a GOD full of compassion, place thy servant in light with the quires of thine angels ; by thy tender mercy passing over his iniquities, and granting to him the resurrection.”

Lastly, that these prayers have principal relation to the judgment of the great day, and to respect the escaping of the unquenchable fire of Gehenna, not the temporal flames of any imaginary purgatory, is plain, both by these kinds of *prosopœias*, which they attribute to the deceased :

“ Supplicate with tears unto CHRIST, who is to judge my poor soul, that he would deliver me from that fire which is unquenchable.”

“ I beseech all my acquaintance and my friends, make mention of me in the day of judgment, that I may find mercy at that dreadful tribunal.”

“ Bemired with sins and naked of good deeds, I that am worms’ meat, cry in spirit, Cast not me, wretch, away from thy face ; place me not on thy left hand, who with thy hands didst fashion me ; but give rest unto him whom thou hast taken away by thy commands, O LORD, for thy great mercy’s sake.”

And by these prayers, which are accordingly tendered for him by the living :

“ When in unspeakable glory thou dost come dreadfully to judge the whole world, vouchsafe, O Redeemer, that this thy faithful servant, whom thou hast taken from the earth, may in the clouds meet thee cheerfully.”

“ They who have been dead from the beginning, with terrible and fearful trembling standing at thy tribunal, await thy just censure, O SAVIOUR, and receive God’s righteous judgment. At that time, O LORD and SAVIOUR, spare thy servant, who in faith is gone unto thee, and vouchsafe unto him thine everlasting joy and bliss.”

“ None shall fly there the dreadful tribunal of thy judgment. All kings and princes with servants stand together, and hear the dreadful voice of the Judge condemning the people which have sinned into hell, from which, O CHRIST, deliver thy servant.”

“ At that time, O CHRIST, spare him whom thou hast translated hence.”

“ O LORD our only King, vouchsafe, we beseech thee, thine heavenly kingdom to thy servant, whom thou hast now translated hence, and then preserve him uncondemned when every mortal wight shall stand before thee the Judge to receive their judgment.”

We are to consider then, that the prayers and oblations, for rejecting whereof Aerius was reprov’d, were not such as are used in the Church of Rome at this day, but such as were used by the ancient Church at that time, and for the most part retained by the Greek Church at this present. And therefore as we, in condemning of the one, have nothing to do with Aerius or his cause, so the Romanists, who dislike the other as much as ever Aerius did, must be content to let us alone, and take the charge of Aerianism home unto themselves. Popish prayers and oblations for the dead, we know, do wholly depend upon the belief of Purgatory : if those of the ancient Church did so too, how cometh it to pass that Epiphanius doth not directly answer Aerius, as a papist would do now, that they brought singular profit to the dead by delivering their tormented souls out of the flames of Purgatory ; but forgetting as much as once to make



mention of Purgatory, (the sole foundation of these suffrages for the dead, in our adversary's judgment,) doth trouble himself and his cause with bringing in such far-fetched reasons as these: that they who performed this duty did intend to signify thereby that their brethren departed were not perished, but remained still alive with the LORD; and to put a difference betwixt the high perfection of our SAVIOUR CHRIST, and the general frailty of the best of all his servants? Take away popish Purgatory on the other side, (which in the days of Aerius and Epiphanius needed not to be taken away, because it was not as yet hatched,) and all the reasons produced by Epiphanius will not withhold our Romanists from absolutely subscribing to the opinion of Aerius; this being a case with them resolved, that

“if Purgatory be not admitted after death, Prayer for the dead must be unprofitable.”

But though Thomas Aquinas and his abettors determined so, we must not, therefore, think that Epiphanius was of the same mind, who lived in a time when Prayers were usually made for them that never were dreamed to have been in Purgatory, and yieldeth those reasons of that usage, which overthrew the former consequence of Thomas, every wit as much as the supposition of Aerius.

For Aerius and Thomas both agree in this, that prayer for the dead would be altogether unprofitable, if the dead themselves received not special benefit thereby. This doth Epiphanius, defending the ancient use of these Prayers in the Church, show to be untrue, by producing other profits that redound from thence unto the living; partly by the public signification of their faith, hope, and charity toward the deceased; partly by the honour that they did unto the LORD JESUS, in exempting Him from the common condition of the rest of mankind. And to make it appear that these things were mainly intended by the Church in her memorials for the dead, and not the cutting off of the sins which they carried with them out of this life, or the releasing of them out of any torment, he allegeth, as we have heard, that not only the meaner sort of Christians, but also the best of them, without exception, even the prophets and apostles, and martyrs themselves, were comprehended therein. From whence, by our adversary's good leave, we will make bold to frame this syllogism:

They who reject that kind of praying and offering for the dead which was practised by the Church in the days of Aerius, are in that point flat Aerians.

But the Romanists do reject that kind of praying and offering for the dead which was practised by the Church in the days of Aerius.

Therefore the Romanists are in this point flat Aerians.

The assumption or second part of this argument, (for the first, we think, nobody will deny,) is thus proved :

They who are of the judgment that prayers and oblations should not be made for such as are believed to be in bliss, do reject that kind of praying and offering for the dead which was practised by the ancient Church.

But the Romanists are of this judgment.

Therefore they reject that kind of praying and offering for the dead which was practised by the ancient Church.

The truth of the first of these propositions doth appear by the testimony of Epiphanius, compared with those many other evidences whereby we have formerly proved, that it was the custom of the ancient Church to make prayers and oblations for them of whose resting in peace and bliss there was no doubt at all conceived. The verity of the second is manifested by the confession of the Romanists themselves, who reckon this for one of their "Catholic verities," that suffrages should not be offered for the dead that reign with CHRIST; and, therefore, that an ancient "form of praying for the apostles, martyrs, and the rest of the saints, is by disuse deservedly abolished," saith Alphonsus Mendoza. Nay, to offer sacrifices and prayers to God for those that are in bliss, is "plainly absurd and impious," in the judgment of the Jesuit Azorius; who was not aware that thereby he did outstrip Aerius in condemning the practice of the ancient Church, as far as the censuring it only to be "unprofitable," (for *τί ὠφελήθησεται ὁ τεθνεώς*; *what shall the dead be profited thereby?* was the furthest that Aerius durst to go) cometh short of rejecting it as "absurd and impious." And therefore, our adversaries may do well to purge themselves first from the blot of Aerianism, which sticketh so fast unto them, before they be so ready to cast the aspersion thereof upon others.

§ 5. *Of the profit of Prayers for the Dead to the Persons prayed for.*

IN the mean time, the reader who desireth to be rightly informed in the judgment of Antiquity, touching this point, is to remember that these two questions must necessarily be distinguished in this inquiry: whether prayers and oblations were to be made for the dead? And, whether the dead did receive any peculiar profit thereby? In the latter of these we shall find great difference among the doctors; in the former very little, or none at all. For

“howsoever all did not agree about the state of the souls,” saith Cassander, an indifferent Papist, “which might receive profit by these things, yet all did judge this duty as a testimony of their love towards the dead, and a profession of their faith, touching the soul’s immortality, and the future resurrection, to be acceptable unto GOD and profitable to the Church.”

Therefore for condemning the general practice of the Church herein, which aimed at those good ends before expressed, Aerius was condemned; but for denying that the dead received profit thereby, either for the pardon of the sins which before were unremitted, or for the cutting off or mitigation of any torments that they did endure in the other world, the Church did never condemn him; for that was no new thing invented by him. Diverse worthy men, before and after him, declared themselves to be of the same mind, and were never, for all that, charged with the least suspicion of heresy.

“The narration of Lazarus and the rich man,” saith the author of the Questions and Answers, in the works of Justin Martyr, “presenteth this doctrine unto us, that after the departure of the soul out of the body, men cannot, by any providence or care, obtain any profit.”

“Then,” saith Gregory Nazianzen, “in vain shall any one go about to relieve those that lament. Here men may have a remedy, but afterwards there is nothing but bonds,” or “all things are fast bound.” For “after death, the punishment of sin is remediless,” saith Theodoret; and, “the dead,” saith Diodorus Tarsensis, “have no hope of any succour from man.”

And therefore St. Jerome doth conclude, that

“ while we are in this present world we may be able to help one another either by our prayers, or by our counsels ; but when we shall come before the judgment-seat of CHRIST, neither Job, nor Daniel, nor Noah, can entreat for any one, but every one must bear his own burden.”

Other doctors were of another judgment, that the dead received special profit by the prayers and oblations of the living, either for the remission of their sins or the easing of their punishment. But whether this were restrained to smaller offences only, or such as lived and died in great sins might be made partakers of the same benefit ; and whether these men’s torments might be lessened only thereby, or in tract of time quite extinguished, they did not agree upon. Stephanus Gobarus, whom before I alleged, made a collection of the different sentences of the Fathers, whereof some contained the received doctrine of the Church, others the unallowable opinions of certain of the ancient that varied therefrom. Of this latter kind he maketh this sentence to be one :

“ That such sinners as be delivered unto punishment are purged from their sins, and after their purging are freed from their punishment ; albeit, not all who are delivered unto punishment be thus purged and freed, but some only ;” whereas “ the true sentence of the Church was, that none at all was freed from punishment.”

If that were the true sentence of the Church, that none of those who suffered punishment in the other world were ever freed from the same, then the applying of prayers to the helping of men’s souls out of any such punishments must be referred to the erroneous apprehension of some particular men, and not to the general intention of the ancient Church ; from which in this point, as in many others beside, the latter Church of Rome hath swerved and quite gone astray. The ancient writer of the Ecclesiastical Hierarchy, handling this matter of praying for the dead professedly, doth by way of objection move this doubt :

“ To what purpose should the Bishop entreat the divine Goodness to grant remission of sins unto the dead, and a like glorious inheritance with those that have followed GOD ?”

seeing by such prayers he can be brought to no other rest but that which is fitting for him, and answerable unto the life which he hath here led. If our Romish divinity had been then ac-

knowledged by the Church, there had been no place left to such questions and doubts as these. The matter might easily have been answered, that though a man did die in a state of grace, yet was he not presently to be admitted unto the place of rest, but must first be reckoned withal, both for the committal of those smaller faults unto which, through human frailty, he was daily subject, and for the not performance of full penance and satisfaction for the greater sins, into which in this life he had fallen ; and Purgatory being the place wherein he must be cleansed from the one, and make up the just payment of the other, these prayers were directed unto God for the delivery of the poor soul, which was not now in case to help itself out of that place of torment.

But this author, taking upon him the person of St. Paul's scholar, and professing to deliver herein

“ that tradition which he had received from his divine Master,”

saith no such thing, but giveth in this for his answer :

“ The divine Bishop, as the Scriptures witness, is the interpreter of the divine judgments ; for he is the angel of the LORD GOD ALMIGHTY. He hath learned, therefore, out of the oracles delivered by GOD, that a most glorious and divine life, is by his just judgment worthily awarded to them that have lived holily, his divine goodness and kindness passing over those blots which by human frailty he had contracted ; forasmuch as no man, as the Scriptures speak, is free from pollution. The Bishop, therefore, knowing these things to be promised by the true oracles, prayeth that they may accordingly come to pass, and those sacred rewards may be bestowed upon them that have lived holily.”

The Bishop at that time belike did not know so much as our popish Bishops do now, that GOD's servants must dearly smart in Purgatory for the sins wherewith they were overtaken through human infirmity ; he believed that GOD of his merciful goodness would pass by those slips, and that such after-reckonings as these should give no stoppage to the present bestowing of those holy rewards upon the children of the promise.

“ Therefore the divine Bishop,” saith our author, “ asketh those things which were promised by GOD, and are grateful to Him, and without doubt will be granted ; thereby as well manifesting his own good disposition unto GOD, who is a lover of the good, as declaring like an interpreter unto them that be present the gifts that shall befall to such as are holy.”

He further also addeth, that

“The Bishops have a separating power, as the interpreters of GOD’s judgments;” according to that commission of CHRIST, *Whose sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them; and whose ye shall retain, they are retained: and whatsoever thou shalt bind upon earth, shall be bound in heaven; and whatsoever thou shalt loose upon earth, shall be loosed in heaven.* Now, as in the use of the keys the schoolmen following St. Jerome do account the minister to be the interpreter only of GOD’s judgment, by declaring what is done by Him in the binding or loosing of men’s sins; so doth this author here give them power only to

“separate those that are already judged of GOD,” and, by way of “declaration and convoy to bring in those that are beloved of GOD, and to exclude such as are ungodly.”

And if the power which the ministers have received by the aforesaid commission do extend itself to any further real operation upon the living, Pope Gelasius will deny that it may be stretched in like manner unto the dead; because that CHRIST saith, *Whatsoever thou shalt bind upon earth.*

“He saith, upon earth: for he that dieth bound is nowhere said to be loosed.”

And

“that which a man remaining in his body hath not received, being unclothed of his flesh, he cannot obtain,”

saith Leo. Whether the dead received profit by the prayers of the living, was still a question in the Church. Maximus, in his Greek Scholies upon the writer of the Ecclesiastical Hierarchy, wisheth us to

“mark, that even before” that writer’s “time this doubt was questioned.”

Among the questions wherein Dulcinius desired to be resolved by St. Augustine, we find this to be one:

“Whether the offering that is made for the dead did avail their souls any thing?” Many “did say to this, that if herein any good were to be done after death, how much rather should the soul itself obtain ease for itself by its own confessing of her sins there, than that for the ease thereof an oblation should be procured by other men.”

The like also is noted by Cyril, or rather John, Bishop of Jerusalem, that he

“knew many who said thus: What profit doth the soul get that goeth out of this world, either with sins or not with sins if you make mention of it in prayer?”

And by Anastasius Sinaita, or Nicænus :

“Some do doubt, saying that the dead are not profited by the oblations that are made for them.”

And long after them by Petrus Cluniacensis, in his treatise against the followers of Peter Bruce, in France :

“That the good deeds of the living may profit the dead, both these heretics do deny, and some Catholics also do seem to doubt.”

Nay, in the West, not the profit only, but the lawfulness also of these doings for the dead was called into question : as partly may be collected by Boniface, Archbishop of Mentz’s consulting with Pope Gregory, about 730 years after the birth of our SAVIOUR,

“whether it were lawful to offer oblations for the dead,”

(which he should have no reason to do if no question had been made thereof among the Germans); and is plainly delivered by Hugo Etherianus, about 1170 years after CHRIST, in these words :

“I know that many are deformed with vain opinions, thinking that the dead are not to be prayed for, because that neither CHRIST, nor the Apostles that succeeded him, have intimated these things in the Scripture. But they are ignorant that there be many things, and those exceeding necessary, frequented by the Holy Church, the tradition whereof is not had in the Scriptures ; and yet they pertain nevertheless to the worship of GOD, and obtain great strength.”

Whereby it may appear that this practice wanted not opposition even then, when in the Papacy it was advanced unto its greatest height.

## REMARKS.

So far Archbishop Ussher. The objects of making the above extract from his learned work have been as follows: first, in order to present before the reader a clear and conclusive argument against the Romanists, whose tenet of Purgatory seems therein to be fairly encountered and exposed. This, be it observed, is proposed as the chief object of this series of Tracts; viz. to erect safe and substantial bulwarks for the Anglican believer against the Church of Rome, to draw clear and intelligible lines, which may allow him securely to expatiate in the rich pastures of Catholicism, without the reasonable dread, that he, as an individual, may fall into that great snare which has bewildered the whole Latin Church, the snare of Popery. And it is conceived that the foregoing citation from Ussher proves thus much at least, that Romanism is not the pure creed of antiquity, that the tenet of Purgatory in particular is but the gradual creation of centuries, and has no claim on our consideration.

In all controversy it is a great point to keep on the *offensive*, and it is well we should be seriously aware of this, and use our advantage. Romanists have been entangling us too long in questions, which our deficient knowledge of antiquity has kept us from retorting on themselves. The true answer to their accusations is to adduce, as we may well do, counter-charges: which are not only more effective, both from their nature and their number, than any which they can bring against us, but especially from the circumstance that *they* profess in all matters of faith to be infallible.

A second motive for the foregoing republication has been a hope to obviate a danger to which controversialists will be exposed, who have not mastered the facts of the case. It is shown in the above pages, that it *does not follow*, that, *though* Prayers for the dead were an Apostolic institution, (granting it,) that *therefore* Purgatory was; whereas unlearned persons, when



assailed by Romanists, may be, and doubtless have been, overcome and converted by arguments which reach far short of the Roman doctrine in dispute.

It may serve as a suitable ending to this Paper, to present the reader with an account of the *circumstances* under which the Commemoration of the Dead was omitted from our own Liturgy. Some information on the general subject of the Primitive Commemoration will be found in No. 63 of these Tracts.

In 1548, the second year of King Edward, it was determined by the King in Council to draw up a public Liturgy. "This Service Book," says Collier, (History, vol. ii. page 252,) "when confirmed in Parliament, it was supposed, would effect a more general compliance. For then the pretences of defective authority in a Privy Council, would be all out of doors. To this purpose the Committee of Bishops and Divines . . . were ordered to attend the king on the first of September." . . . "This Committee of Bishops and Divines," he proceeds, "set down this (as is very well observed) for a general rule, *not to change any thing for the sake of novelty*. In this performance they resolved to govern themselves by the word of God and the precedent of the Primitive Church. . . . Their business was only to brighten what had been rusted by time, to discharge the innovations of latter ages, and bring things up to the primitive standard. To this purpose, it was very prudently agreed *to make use of none but English help*. When Calvin heard of the farther advances of Reformation, he offered Cranmer his assistance, but was happily refused by the Archbishop. It is true he gave Martin Bucer and Peter Martyr, two eminent divines, an invitation to our Universities; but the Liturgy, as Heylin proves, was finished before their arrival."

The compilation which was the subject of these deliberations is called the First Book of King Edward, and in it the Burial Service proceeded as follows, to use the words of the same author.

"In the office for the Burial of the Dead, when the priest throws earth upon the corpse, he says,

'I commend thy soul to GOD the FATHER ALMIGHTY, and thy body to the ground,' &c.

“ And the next prayer begins thus :

‘ We commend into thy hands of Mercy, most merciful FATHER, the soul of this our brother departed: . . . that when the judgment shall come which Thou hast committed to Thy well-beloved SON, both this our brother and we may be found acceptable in Thy sight, and we may receive Thy blessing,’ &c.

“ The next prayer stands thus :

‘ ALMIGHTY GOD, we give Thee hearty thanks for this Thy servant, whom Thou hast delivered from the miseries of this wretched world, from the body of death and all temptation; and, as we trust, hast brought his soul, which he committed into Thy holy hands, into sure consolation and rest. Grant, we beseech Thee, that at the day of judgment, his soul and all the souls of thy elect, departed out of this life, may with us and we with them fully receive Thy promises, and be made perfect altogether, through the glorious resurrection of Thy SON, JESUS CHRIST our LORD.’

“ After the second Lesson, ‘ LORD, have mercy upon us,’ &c. and the LORD’s Prayer, the Priest says,

‘ Enter not, O LORD, into judgment with Thy servant :

‘ *Ans.* For in Thy sight no living creature shall be justified.

‘ *Pr.* From the gates of hell,

‘ *Ans.* Deliver their souls, O LORD.

‘ *Pr.* I believe to see the goodness of the LORD,

‘ *Ans.* In the land of the living.

‘ *Pr.* O LORD, graciously hear my prayer,

‘ *Ans.* And let my cry come unto Thee.’

“ Then follows this prayer :

‘ O LORD, with whom do live the spirits of them that be dead, and in whom the souls of them that be elected after they be delivered from the burden of the flesh, be in joy and felicity: grant unto this Thy servant that the sins which he committed in this world be not imputed unto him, but that he, escaping the gates of hell, and pains of eternal darkness, may ever dwell in the regions of light, with Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, in the place where is no weeping, sorrow, nor heaviness; and when that dreadful day of the resurrection shall come, make him to rise also with the just and righteous, and receive this body again to glory, then made pure and incorruptible. Set him on the right hand of Thy SON JESUS CHRIST, among Thy holy and elect, that there he may hear with them these most sweet and comfortable words, Come to me, ye blessed,’ &c. . .

“ at the Burial of the Dead, there is an order for the Communion, I shall only mention what is particular to the occasion. First, the 42nd Psalm is said by way of introduction. The Collect is now used at burials: it begins thus: ‘ O merciful God, the FATHER,’ &c. The epistle is taken out of 1 Thess. [iv. ?] 13, and

the Gospel is John vi. 37—40. Receiving the holy Eucharist is not without precedent in the Primitive Church, as appears by Canon 44th of the Council of Carthage. . . . Upon this Canon the learned Bishop Beveridge cites a passage of St. Austin, to prove the custom of recommending the dead to GOD ALMIGHTY upon such occasions.”

So much for King Edward's first Book; now let us pass to the transactions of 1551.

“ Much greater alterations,” says Collier, “ were now coming forward. *The Common Prayer Book was to be revised; Calvin, Bucer, and Peter Martyr, by making exceptions against the Service established, had their share in bringing on this change.* Calvin, who thought himself wiser than the Ancient Church, and fit to dictate religion to all countries in Christendom, had taken no small pains in this matter,” . . . and, “ being apprehensive he might not pass altogether for an oracle with the Council and Bishops, [he] tried his interest in other places, and pushed his design by his agents in the court, the country, and the Universities. Bucer was a strong second to Calvin, and what efforts he made has been seen already. Peter Martyr agreed to Bucer's amendments, as appears by his letter, in which there are some remarkable passages. For the purpose, ‘ he gives God thanks, for making himself and Bucer instrumental in putting the Bishops in mind of the exceptionable places in the Common Prayer. The Archbishop Cranmer told him they had met about this business, and concluded on a great many alterations; but what those corrections were, Cranmer did not acquaint him, neither durst he take the freedom to inquire. But that which pleases me not a little,’ continues Martyr, ‘ Sir John Cheek acquaints me, that if the Bishops refuse to consent to the altering what is necessary, the King is resolved to do it himself, and recommend that affair at the next Session of Parliament.’ These foreign divines had gained the esteem of some of the English Bishops so far, that in last year's Convocation, there was a contest in the upper house concerning some controverted passages in the Common Prayer Book.”

As to the subject before us, Collier observes: “ The custom”

[of praying for the dead] “seems to have gone upon this principle, that supreme happiness is not to be expected till the resurrection; and that in the interval between death and the end of the world is a state of imperfect bliss. The Church might, therefore, believe her prayers for good people departed might improve their condition, and raise the satisfactions of this period.” Bucer’s objections to the usage were, according to Collier, as follows: “He urges this text of St. John, ‘He that hears my word, and believes on Him that sent me, has everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation.’ He likewise cites a passage from the Romans, where it is said, ‘Whatsoever is not of faith, is sin.’ . . . He argues from it thus, that nothing can be done in faith, without an express warrant from Scripture, or that stands upon a conclusion evidently inferred from some inspired text; but Prayer for the Dead stands upon neither of these grounds, and therefore ought to be waved. . . . There is another text urged in favour of Bucer’s opinion, ‘Blessed are the Dead which die in the LORD from henceforth; Yea, saith the SPIRIT, that they may rest from their labours, and their works do follow them.’ . . .

“To proceed, the Common Prayer Book was brought to a review, and altered to the same form in which it stands at present, some little variations for clearing ambiguities excepted. . . The Prayers for persons deceased, in the Communion Service and the Office of Burial, are expunged.”

Such is the *history* of the present state of opinion in the English Church touching Prayers for the Dead. The chief reason against the usage is given by implication in the third part of the Homily on Prayer, which proceeds on the ground that such Prayers are essentially connected with belief in Purgatory. This argument is well commented on by a recent writer in the following passage:—

“In primitive times,” says Mr. Palmer, “these Commemorations” [in the Holy Communion] “were accompanied by Prayers for the departed. *When* the custom of praying for the dead began in the Christian Church, has never been ascertained. We find traces of the practice in the second century, and either then,

or shortly after, it appears to have been customary in all parts of the Church. The first person who objected to such prayers was Aerius, who lived in the fourth century, but his arguments were answered by various writers, and did not produce any effect in altering the immemorial practice of praying for those that rest. Accordingly, from that time all the Liturgies in the world contained such prayers. These facts being certain, it becomes a matter of some interest and importance to ascertain the reasons which justified the omission of these Prayers in the Liturgy of the English Church for the first time in the reign of King Edward VI. Some persons will perhaps say that this sort of prayer is unscriptural; that it infers either the Romish doctrine of Purgatory, or something else which is contrary to the revealed will of God, or the nature of things. But when we reflect that the great divines of the English Church have not taken this ground, and that the Church of England herself has never formally condemned Prayers for the Dead, but only omitted them in her Liturgy, we may perhaps think that there are some other reasons to justify that omission.

“ The true justification of the Church of England is to be found in her zeal for the purity of the Christian faith, and for the welfare of all her members. It is too well known that the erroneous doctrine of Purgatory had crept into the Western Church, and was held by many of the clergy and people. Prayers for the departed were represented as an absolute proof that the Church had always held the doctrine of Purgatory. The deceitfulness of this argument can only be estimated by the fact, that many persons at this day who deny the doctrine of Purgatory, assert positively that the custom of praying for the departed infers a belief in Purgatory. If persons of education are deceived by this argument, which has been a hundred times refuted, how is it possible that the uneducated classes could ever have got rid of the persuasion that their Church held the doctrine of Purgatory, if prayers for the departed had been continued in the Liturgy? Would not this custom, in fact, have rooted the error of Purgatory in their minds? If then the Church of England omitted public Prayer for the departed Saints, it was

to remove the errors and superstitions of the people, and to preserve the purity of the Christian faith. . . .

“It was therefore relinquished, and the happy consequence was, that *all the people gradually became free from the error of Purgatory*. Thenceforward the Catholic doctrine prevailed in England, that the righteous after death are immediately translated to a region of peace, refreshment, and joy; while the wicked are consigned to the place of torment from whence there is no escape. And, *when the doctrine of Purgatory had been extirpated*, the English Church restored the Commemoration of Saints departed in the Liturgy;” [viz. at the end of the Prayer for the Church Militant;] “which had been omitted for many years, from the same cautious and pious regard to the souls of her children<sup>1</sup>.”

<sup>1</sup> Chap. iv. § 10.

OXFORD,  
*The Feast of the Epiphany.*

[FOURTH EDITION.]

---

*These Tracts are continued in Numbers, and sold at the price of 2d. for each sheet, or 7s. for 50 copies.*

LONDON: PRINTED FOR J. G. F. & J. RIVINGTON,  
ST. PAUL'S CHURCH YARD, AND WATERLOO PLACE.

1840.

---

GILBERT & RIVINGTON, Printers, St. John's Square, London.

## TRACTS FOR THE TIMES.

ON THE INTRODUCTION OF RATIONALISTIC  
PRINCIPLES INTO RELIGION.

It is not intended in the following pages to enter into any general view of so large a subject as Rationalism, nor to attempt any philosophical account of it; but, after defining it sufficiently for the purpose in hand, to direct attention to a very peculiar and subtle form of it existing covert'y in the popular religion of this day. With this view, two writers, not of our own Church, though of British origin, shall pass under review, Mr. Erskine and Mr. Jacob Abbott.

This is the first time that a discussion of (what may be called) a *personal* nature has appeared in these Tracts, which have been confined to the delineation and enforcement of *principles* and *doctrines*. However, in this case, while it was important to protest against certain views of the day, it was found that this could not be intelligibly done, without referring to the individuals who have inculcated them. Of these the two authors above-mentioned seemed at once the most influential and the most original; and Mr. Abbott being a foreigner, and Mr. Erskine having written sixteen years since, there seemed a possibility of introducing their names without seriously encroaching on the province of a Review.

It will be my business first to explain what I mean by Rationalism, and then to illustrate the description given of it from the writings of the two authors in question.

§. 1. *The Rationalistic and the Catholic Spirit compared together.*

To rationalize is to ask for *reasons* out of place ; to ask improperly how we are to *account* for certain things, to be unwilling to believe them unless they can be accounted for, i. e. referred to something else as a cause, to some existing system as harmonizing with them or taking them up into itself. Again, since whatever is assigned as the reason for the original fact canvassed, admits in turn of a like question being raised about itself, unless it be ascertainable by the senses, and be the subject of personal experience, Rationalism is bound properly to pursue onward its course of investigation on this principle, and not to stop till it can directly or ultimately refer to self as a witness, whatever is offered to its acceptance. Thus it is characterized by two peculiarities ; its love of systematizing, and its basing its system upon personal experience, on the evidence of sense. In both respects it stands opposed to what is commonly understood by the word Faith, or belief in Testimony ; for which it deliberately substitutes System (or what is popularly called Reason,) and Sight.

I have said that to act the rationalist is to be unduly set upon *accounting* for what is offered for our acceptance ; *unduly*, for to seek reasons for what is told us, is natural and innocent in itself. When we are informed that this or that event has happened, we are not satisfied to take it as an isolated fact ; we are inquisitive about it ; we are prompted to refer it, if possible, to something we already know, to incorporate it into the connected family of truths or facts which we have already



received. We like to ascertain its position relatively to other things, to view it in connexion with them, to reduce it to a place in the series of what is called cause and effect. There is no harm in all this, until we insist upon receiving this *satisfaction* as a necessary condition of believing what is presented for our acceptance, until we set up our existing system of knowledge as a legitimate test of the credibility of testimony, until we claim to be told the mode of reconciling alleged truths to other truths already known, the *how* they are, and *why* they are; and then we rationalize.

When the rich lord in Samaria said, "Though God shall make windows in heaven, shall this thing be?" he rationalized, as professing his inability to discover *how* Elisha's prophecy was to be fulfilled, and thinking in this way to excuse his unbelief. When Naaman objected to bathe in Jordan, it was on the ground of his not seeing the *means* by which Jordan was to cure his leprosy above the rivers of Damascus. "*How* can these things be?" was the objection of Nicodemus to the doctrine of regeneration; and when the doctrine of the Holy Communion was first announced "the Jews strove among themselves," in answer to their Divine Informant, "saying, *How* can this man give us His flesh to eat?" When St. Thomas doubted of our LORD's resurrection, though his reason for so doing is not given, it plainly lay in the astonishing, unaccountable nature of such an event. A like desire of judging for oneself is discernible in the original fall of man. Eve did not believe the Tempter, any more than God's word, till she perceived that "the fruit was good for food."

So again, when infidels ask, *how* prayer can really influence the course of God's providence, or *how* everlasting punishment consists with God's infinite mercy, they rationalize.

The same spirit shows itself in the restlessness of others to decide *how* the sun was stopped at Joshua's word, *how* the manna was provided, and the like; forgetting what our SAVIOUR suggests to the Sadducees,—"*the power of God.*"

Rationalism then in fact is a forgetfulness of God's power, disbelief of the existence of a First Cause sufficient to account for

any events or facts, however marvellous or extraordinary, and a consequent measuring of the credibility of things, not by the power and other attributes of God, but by our own knowledge; a limiting the possible to the actual, and denying the indefinite range of God's operations beyond our means of apprehending them. Mr. Hume openly avows this principle, declaring it to be unphilosophical to suppose that Almighty God can do any thing, but what we see He does. And, though we may not profess it, we too often, it is to be feared, act upon it at the present day. Instead of looking out of ourselves, and trying to catch glimpses of God's workings, from any quarter,—throwing ourselves forward upon Him and waiting on Him, we sit at home bringing everything to ourselves, enthroning ourselves as the centre of all things, and refusing to believe any thing that does not force itself upon our minds as true. Our private judgment is made every thing to us,—is contemplated, recognized, and referred to as the arbiter of all questions, and as independent of every thing external to us. Nothing is considered to have an existence except so far forth as our minds discern it. The notion of half views and partial knowledge, of guesses, surmises, hopes and fears, of truths faintly apprehended and not understood, of isolated facts in the great scheme of providence, in a word, of Mystery, is discarded. Hence a distinction is drawn between what is called Objective and Subjective Truth, and Religion is said to consist in a reception of the latter. By Objective Truth is meant the Religious System considered as existing in itself, external to this or that particular mind: by Subjective, is meant that which each mind receives in particular, and considers to be such. To believe in Objective Truth is to throw ourselves forward upon that which we have but partially mastered or made Subjective; to embrace, maintain, and use general propositions which are greater than our own capacity, as if we were contemplating what is real and independent of human judgment. Such a belief seems to the Rationalist superstitious and unmeaning, and he consequently confines faith to the province of Subjective Truth, or to the reception of doctrine, as, and so far as it is met and apprehended by the

mind, which will be differently in different persons, in the shape of orthodoxy in one, heterodoxy in another ; that is, he professes to *believe* in that which he *opines*, and he avoids the apparent extravagance of such an avowal by maintaining that the moral trial involved in faith does not lie in the submission of the reason to external truths partially disclosed, but in that candid pursuit of truth which ensures the eventual adoption of that opinion on the subject, which is best for us, most natural according to the constitution of our minds, and so divinely intended. In short, he owns that faith, viewed with reference to its objects, is never more than an opinion, and is pleasing to God, not as an active principle apprehending different doctrines, but as a result and fruit, and therefore an evidence of past diligence, independent inquiry, dispassionateness, and the like. Rationalism takes the words of Scripture as signs of Ideas ; Faith, of Things or Realities.

For an illustration of Faith, considered as the reaching forth after and embracing what is beyond the mind, or Objective, we may refer to St. Paul's description of it in the ancient Saints ; " These all died in Faith, *not having received* the promises, but *having seen them afar off*, and were persuaded of them, and embraced them, and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth : " or to St. Peter's ; " Of which salvation the Prophets have inquired and searched diligently, who *prophesied* of the grace that should come *unto you, searching what, or what manner of time* the Spirit of CHRIST which was in them, did signify, when it testified beforehand the sufferings of CHRIST, the glory that should follow ; unto whom it was revealed, that *not unto themselves*, but unto us they did minister the things *which are now reported unto you* by them that have evangelized you." Here the faith of the ancient Saints is described as employed, not on truths so far as mastered by the mind, but truths beyond it, and even to the end withheld from its clear apprehension.

On the other hand, if we would know to what a temper of mind the Rationalistic Theory of Subjective Truth really tends, we may study the following passage from a popular Review. It will be found to make use of the wonders of nature, not as " declaring the glory of God, and showing His handywork,"

but in order to exalt and deify the wisdom of man. Of the almost avowed infidelity contained in it, I do not speak.

“For the civil and political historian the past alone has existence, the present he rarely apprehends, the future never. To the historian of science it is permitted, however, to penetrate the depths of past and future with equal clearness and certainty; facts to come are to him as present, and not unfrequently more assured than facts which are past. Although this clear perception of causes and consequences characterizes the whole domain of physical science, and clothes the natural philosopher with powers denied to the political and moral inquirer, yet *foreknowledge is eminently the privilege of the astronomer*. Nature has raised the curtain of futurity, and displayed before him the succession of her decrees, so far as they affect the physical universe, for countless ages to come; and the *revelations* of which she has made him the instrument, are supported and verified by a never-ceasing train of predictions fulfilled. He [the astronomer] “shows us the things which will be hereafter;” not obscurely shadowed out in figures and in parables, as must necessarily be the case with other revelations, but attended with the most minute precision of time, place, and circumstance. He converts the hours as they roll into an ever-present miracle, *in attestation of those laws which the Creator through him has unfolded*; the sun cannot rise, the moon cannot wane, a star cannot twinkle in the firmament, without bearing testimony to *the truth of his* [the astronomer’s] *prophetic records*. It has pleased the “Lord and Governor” of the world, in his inscrutable wisdom, to baffle our inquiries into the nature and proximate cause of that wonderful faculty of intellect,—that image of his own essence which he has conferred upon us, &c. &c. . . . But how nobly is the darkness which envelopes metaphysical inquiries compensated by the flood of light which is shed upon the physical creation! *There* all is harmony, and order, and majesty, and beauty. From the chaos of social and political phenomena exhibited in human records, phenomena unconnected to our imperfect vision by any discoverable law, a war of passions and prejudices governed by no apparent purpose, tending to no apparent end, and setting all intelligible order at defiance,—*how soothing and yet how elevating* it is to turn to the splendid spectacle which offers itself to the habitual contemplation of the astronomer! How favourable to the development of all the *best and highest feelings* of the soul are such objects! The only passion they inspire being the *love of truth*, and the chiefest pleasure of their votaries arising from excursions through the imposing scenery of the universe: scenery on a scale of grandeur and magnificence compared with which whatever we are accustomed to call sublimity on our planet, dwindles into ridiculous insignificance. Most justly has it been said, that nature has implanted in our bosoms *a craving after the discovery of truth*, and assuredly that glorious instinct is never more irresistibly awakened than when our notice is directed to what is going on in the heavens,” &c.

Here desire after Truth is considered as irreconcilable with acquiescence in doubt. Now if we do not believe in a First Cause, then indeed we know nothing except so far as we know it clearly, consistency and harmony being the necessary evidence of reality; and so we may reasonably regard doubt as an obstacle in the pursuit of Truth. But, on the other hand, if we *assume the existence of* an unseen Object of Faith, then we already possess the main truth, and may well be content even with half views as to His operations, for whatever we have is so much gain, and what we do not know does not in that case tend at all to invalidate what we do know.

A few words may be necessary to bring together what has been said. Rationalism then, viewed in its essential character, is a refusal to take for granted the existence of a First Cause, in religious inquiries, which it prosecutes as if commencing in utter ignorance on the subject. Hence it receives only so much as may be strictly drawn out to the satisfaction of the reason, advancing onwards in belief according to the range of the proof; it limits Truth to our comprehension of it, or *subjects* it to the mind, and admits it only so far as it is subjected. Hence again it considers faith to have reference to a *thing* or *system*, far more than to an *agent*, for an agent may be supposed as acting in unknown ways, whereas a system cannot be supposed to have existence beyond what is ascertained of it. Hence, moreover, it makes the credibility of any alleged truth to lie solely in its capability of coalescing and combining with what is already known.

Mr. Hume, as has been observed, avowed the principle of Rationalism in its extent of Atheism. The writers I shall have to notice, have religious sensibilities, and are far less clear-sighted. Yet even Mr. Erskine maintains or assumes that the main *object* of Christian faith is, not Almighty God, but a certain work or course of things which He has accomplished; as will be manifest to any reader of either of His Essays, on Internal Evidence or on Faith. He says, for instance, in the latter of these works,

“ I may understand many things which I do not believe: but I cannot

believe any thing which I do not understand, unless it be something addressed merely to my senses, and not to my thinking faculty. A man may with great propriety say, I understand the Cartesian System of Vortices, though I do not believe in it. But it is absolutely impossible for him to believe in that system without knowing what it is. *A man may believe in the ability of a maker of a system without understanding it; but he cannot believe in the system itself without understanding it.* Now there is a meaning in the Gospel, *and there is declared in it the system of GOD's dealings with men.* This meaning, and this system, must be understood before we can believe the Gospel. We are not called on to believe the Bible merely that we may give a proof of our willingness to submit in all things to GOD's authority, but that we may be influenced by the object of our belief," &c.

Every word of this extract tells in illustration of what has been drawn out above. And it is cited here merely in illustration; what judgment is to be formed of it shall be determined in its place. To resume the thread of our discussion.

We shall now perhaps be prepared to understand a very characteristic word, familiarly used by Mr. Erskine among others to designate his view of the Gospel dispensation. It is said to be a *Manifestation*, as if the system presented to us were such as we could trace and connect into one whole, complete and definite. Let me use this word "Manifestation," as a token of the philosophy under review; and let me contrast it with the word "Mystery," which on the other hand may be regarded as the badge or emblem of orthodoxy. Revelation, considered as a Manifestation, is a doctrine variously received by various minds, but nothing more to each than that which it appears to be. Considered as a Mystery, it is a doctrine enunciated by inspiration, in human language, as the only possible medium of it, and suitably according to the capacity of language; a doctrine *lying hid* in language, to be received in that language from the first by every mind, whatever be its separate power of understanding; entered into more or less by this or that mind, as it may be; and admitting of being apprehended more and more perfectly according to the diligence of the person receiving it. It is one and the same, independent and real, of depth unfathomable, and illimitable in its extent.

This is a fit place to make some remarks on the Scripture

sense of the word Mystery. It may seem a contradiction in terms to call Revelation a Mystery; but is not the book of the Revelation of St. John as great a mystery from beginning to end as the most abstruse doctrine the mind ever imagined? yet it is even called a *revelation*. How is this? The answer is simple. No revelation can be complete and systematic, from the weakness of the human intellect; *so far as* it is not such, it is mysterious. When nothing is revealed, nothing is known, and there is nothing to contemplate or marvel at; but when something is revealed, and only something, for all cannot be, there are forthwith difficulties and perplexities. A Revelation is religious doctrine viewed on its illuminated side; a Mystery is the self-same doctrine viewed on the side unilluminated. Thus Religious Truth is neither light nor darkness, but both together; it is like the dim view of a country seen in the twilight, with forms half extricated from the darkness, with broken lines, and isolated masses. Revelation, in this way of considering it, is not a revealed *system*, but consists of a number of detached and incomplete truths belonging to a vast system unrevealed, of doctrines and injunctions mysteriously connected together; that is, connected by unknown media, and bearing upon unknown portions of the system. And in this sense we see the propriety of calling St. John's prophecies, though highly mysterious, yet a revelation.

And such seems to be the meaning of the word Mystery in Scripture, a point which is sometimes disputed. Campbell, in his work on the Gospels, maintains that the word means a *secret*, and that, whatever be the subject of it in the New Testament, it is always, when mentioned, associated with the notion of its being now revealed. Thus it is, in his view, a word belonging solely to the Law, which was a system of types and shadows, and is utterly foreign to the Gospel, which has brought light instead of darkness. This sense might seem to be supported by our LORD's announcement, for instance, to His disciples, that to them was given to know the mysteries of His kingdom; by His command to them at another time to speak abroad what they had heard from Him in secret. And St. Paul in like manner

glories in the revelation of mysteries hid from the foundation of the world.

But the sense of Scripture will more truly be represented as follows. What was hidden altogether before CHRIST came could not be a mystery; it became a Mystery then, for the first time, by being disclosed at all at His coming. What had never been dreamed of by "righteous men," before Him, when revealed, as *being* unexpected, if for no other reason, would be strange and startling. And such unquestionably is the meaning of St. Paul, when he uses the word; for he applies it, not to what was passed and over, but what was the then state of the doctrine revealed. Thus in the 1 Cor. xv. 51, 52, "Behold I show you a Mystery; we shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump." The resurrection and consequent spiritualizing of the human body, was not dreamed of by the philosophy of the world till CHRIST came, and, when revealed, was "mocked," as then first becoming a mystery. Reason was just where it was: and, as it could not discover it beforehand, so now it cannot account for it, or reconcile it to experience, or explain the manner of it: the utmost it does is by some faint analogies to show it is not inconceivable. Again, St. Paul, speaking of marriage, says, "This is a great Mystery, I mean, in its reference to CHRIST and the Church;" that is, the ordinance of marriage has an inward and spiritual meaning, contained in it and revealed through it, a certain bearing, undefined and therefore mysterious, towards the heavenly communion existing between CHRIST and the Church:—as if for persons to place themselves in that human relation interested themselves in some secret way in the divine relation of which it is a figure. Again: "Great is the Mystery of piety, God was manifested in the flesh, justified in the Spirit, seen of Angels, preached unto the Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up into glory." 1 Tim. iii. 16. Now, is the revelation of these truths a Manifestation (as above explained) or a Mystery? Surely the great secret has, by being revealed, only got so far as to be a Mystery, nothing more; nor could become a



Manifestation, (i. e. a system connected in its parts by the human mind,) without ceasing to be any thing great at all. It must ever be small and superficial, viewed only as received by man; and is vast only when considered as that external truth into which each Christian may grow continually, and ever find fresh food for his soul. As to the unknown and marvellous system of things spoken of in the text just quoted, it is described again, in an almost parallel passage, as regards the subject, though differently worded, in the Epistle to the Hebrews, "Ye are come unto Mount Zion, and unto the city of the Living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of Angels, to the full concourse and assembly of the first-born enrolled in heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and to the spirits of the perfected just, and to JESUS the Mediator of the New Covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things than that of Abel." xii. 22—24. In like manner when St. Paul speaks of the election of the Gentiles as a *Mystery* revealed, the facts of the case show that it was still a *Mystery*, and therefore but revealed to be a *Mystery*, not a secret explained. We know that the Jews did stumble at it: why if it was clear and obvious to reason? Certainly it was still a *Mystery* to them. Will it be objected that it had been plainly predicted? Surely not. The calling indeed of the Gentiles had been predicted, but not their equal participation with the Jews in all the treasures of the covenant of grace, not the destruction of the Mosaic system. The prophets every where speak of the Jews as the head of the Gentiles; it was a new doctrine altogether (at least to the existing generation) that the election henceforth was to have no reference whatever to the Jews as a distinct people. It had hitherto been utterly hidden and unexpected; it emerged into a stumbling block, or *Mystery*, when the Gospel was preached, as on the other hand it became to all humble minds a marvel or mystery of mercy. Hence St. Paul speaks of the *Mystery* "which in other ages was not made known to the sons of men. . . . that the Gentiles should be *fellow heirs*, and of the *same body*, and *partakers of His promise in CHRIST* by the Gospel."

In these remarks on the meaning of the word *Mystery*,

some of the chief doctrines of the Gospel revelation have been enumerated; before entering, however, into the particular subjects to be discussed, it may be right briefly to enumerate the revealed doctrines according to the Catholic, that is the anti-rationalistic notion of them. They are these: the Holy Trinity; the Incarnation of the Eternal SON; His atonement and merits; the Church as the medium and instrument through which He operates on the world in the communication of them; the Sacraments, and Sacramentals, (as Bishop Taylor calls them,) as the principal channels through which His merits are applied to individuals; Regeneration, the Communion of Saints, the Resurrection of the body, consequent upon their administration; and lastly, our faith and works, as a condition of the availability and success of these divine appointments. Each of these doctrines is a Mystery; that is, each stands in a certain degree isolated from the rest, unsystematic, connected with the rest by unknown intermediate truths, and bearing upon subjects unknown. Thus the atonement, *why* it was necessary, *how* it operates, is a Mystery; that is, the heavenly truth which is revealed, extends on each side of it into an unknown world. We see but the skirts of God's glory in it. The virtue of the Holy Communion; how it conveys to us the body and blood of the Incarnate SON crucified, and how by partaking it body and soul are made spiritual. The Communion of Saints; in what sense they are knit together into one body of which CHRIST is the head. Good works; how they, and how prayers again, influence our eternal destiny. In like manner what our relation is to the innumerable company of Angels, some of whom, as we are told, minister to us; what to the dead in CHRIST, the spirits of the just perfected, who are ever joined to us in a heavenly communion; what bearing the Church has upon the fortunes of the world, or, it may be, the universe.

That there are some such mysterious bearings, not only the incomplete character of the Revelation, but even its documents assure us. For instance. The Christian dispensation was ordained, "to the intent that now unto *the principalities and powers* in heavenly places, might be known by *the Church* the

manifold wisdom of God." Eph. iii. 10. Such is its relation to the Angels. Again to lost spirits; "We wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of darkness in this world, against spiritual wickedness in heavenly places." Eph. vi. 12. In like manner our LORD says, "the gates of hell shall not prevail against" the Church, Matt. xvi. 18; implying thereby a contest. Again, in writing the following text, had not St. Paul thoughts in his mind, suggested by the unutterable sights of the third heaven, but to us unrevealed and unintelligible? "I am persuaded that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us" (that is, the Church,) "from the love of GOD, which is in CHRIST JESUS our LORD." Rom. viii. 38, 39.

The practical inference to be drawn from this view is, first, that we should be very reverent in dealing with revealed truth; next, that we should avoid all theorizing and systematizing as relates to it, which is pretty much what looking into the ark was under the Law: further, that we should be solicitous to hold it safely and entirely; moreover, that we should be zealous and pertinacious in guarding it; and lastly, which is implied in all these, that we should religiously adhere to the form of words and the ordinances under which it comes to us, through which it is revealed to us, and apart from which the revelation does not exist, there being nothing else given us by which to ascertain or enter into it.

Striking indeed is the contrast presented to this view of the Gospel, by the popular theology of the day! That theology is as follows;—that the Atonement is the chief doctrine of the Gospel;—again, that it is chiefly to be regarded, not as a wonder in heaven, and in its relation to the attributes of GOD and the unseen world, but in its experienced effects on our minds, in the change it effects where it is believed. On this, as on the horizontal line in a picture, all the portions of the Gospel system are placed and made to converge! as if it might fearlessly be used to regulate, adjust, correct, complete, every thing else. Thus, the doctrine of the Incarnation is viewed as necessary and important

to the Gospel, *because* it gives sacredness to the Atonement ; of the Trinity, *because* it includes the revelation, not only of the Redeemer, but also of the Sanctifier, by whose aid and influence the Gospel message is to be blessed to us. It follows that faith is nearly the whole of religion, for through it the message or Manifestation is *received* ; on the other hand, the scientific language of Catholicism is disparaged, as having no tendency to enforce the operation of the revelation of the Atonement on our minds, and the Sacraments are limited to the office of representing, and promising, and impressing on us the promise of divine influences, in no measure of conveying them. Thus the Dispensation is practically identified with its Revelation or rather Manifestation. Not that the reality of the Atonement is formally denied, but it is cast in the back-ground, except so far as it can be discovered to be influential, viz. to show GOD's hatred of sin, the love of CHRIST, and the like ; and there is an evident *tendency* to consider it as a *mere* Manifestation of the love of CHRIST, to the denial of all real virtue in it as an expiation for sin ; as if His death took place, merely to show His love for us as a sign of GOD's infinite mercy, to calm and assure us, without any *real* connexion existing between it and GOD's forgiveness of our sins. And the dispensation thus being hewn and chiselled into an intelligible human system, is represented, when thus mutilated, as affording a remarkable evidence of the truth of the Bible, an evidence level to the *reason*, and superseding the *testimony* of the Apostles. That is, according to the above observations, that Rationalism, or want of faith, which has first invented a spurious gospel, next looks complacently on its own offspring, and pronounces it to be the very image of that notion of the Divine Providence, according to which it was originally modelled ; a procedure, which, besides more serious objections, incurs the logical absurdity of arguing in a circle.

§ 2. *Remarks on Mr. Erskine's "Internal Evidence."*

THIS is in fact pretty nearly Mr. Erskine's argument in his *Internal Evidence*: an author, concerning whom personally I have no wish to use one harsh word, not doubting that he is better than his own doctrine, and is only the organ, eloquent and ingenious, of unfolding a theory, which it has been his unhappiness to mistake for the Catholic faith revealed in the Gospel. Let us now turn to the Essay in question.

Mr. Erskine begins in the following words :

"There is a principle in our nature, which makes us dissatisfied with unexplained and unconnected facts ; which leads us to theorize all the particulars of our knowledge, or to form in our minds some system of causes sufficient to explain or produce the effects which we see ; and which teaches us to believe or disbelieve in the truth of any system which may be presented to us, just as it appears adequate or inadequate to afford that explanation of which we are in pursuit. We have an intuitive perception, that the appearances of nature are connected by the relation of cause and effect ; and we have also an instinctive desire to classify and arrange the seemingly confused mass of facts with which we are surrounded, according to this distinguishing relationship." pp. 1, 2.

He then speaks of two processes of reasoning which the mind uses in searching after truth.

"When we are convinced of the real existence of a cause in nature, and when we find that a class of physical facts is explained by the supposition of this cause, and tallies exactly with its ordinary operation, we resist both reason and instinct when we resist the conviction that this class of facts does result from this cause." p. 2.

Again :

"There is another process of reasoning . . . by which, instead of ascending from effects to a cause, we descend from a cause to effects. When we are once convinced of the existence of a cause, and are acquainted with its ordinary mode of operation, we are prepared to give a certain degree of credit to a history of

other effects attributed to it, provided we can trace the connexion between them." p. 3.

Presently he says,

"In [all] these processes of reasoning we have examples of conviction, upon an evidence which is, most *strictly speaking*, internal—an evidence altogether independent of our *confidence in the veracity* of the narrator of the facts." p. 8.

Now, before explaining the precise argument he draws from the contents of Scripture, be it observed, that in these passages, he countenances the principle of "believing or disbelieving in the truth of any system which may be presented to us," according as it contains in it or not, a satisfactory adjustment of causes to effects, the question of testimony being altogether superseded. Accordingly he says a little further on of the Apostles; "Their system is true in the nature of things, even were they proved to be impostors," p. 17. And it will appear from other passages of his work, that he does not hesitate to receive the other alternative contained in the original proposition with which he opens it, *viz.* that that professed revelation is to be rejected, which implies a system of causes and effects incongruous in man's judgment with each other. To proceed :

His argument is as follows :—

"*The first faint outline of Christianity,*" he says, "presents to us a view of GOD operating on the characters of men through a manifestation of His own character, in order that by leading them to participate in some measure of His moral likeness, they may also in some measure participate of His happiness." p. 12.

Again :

"If the actions attributed to GOD, by any system of religion, be really such objects as, when present to the mind, do not stir the affections at all, that religion cannot influence the character, and is *therefore* utterly useless." p. 23.

"The *object* of Christianity is to bring the character of man into harmony with that of GOD." p. 49.

"The *reasonableness* of a religion seems to me to consist in there being a direct and natural *connexion between* a believing the doctrines which it inculcates, and a being formed by these to the character which it recommends. If the belief of the doctrines has *no* tendency to train the disciple in a more exact and more willing discharge of its moral obligations, *there is evidently a very strong probability against the truth of that religion.* . . . What is the history of another world to me, unless it have some *intelligible relation* to my duties or happiness?" p. 59.

Now in these passages there is, first, this great assumption,

that the object of the Christian revelation is ascertainable by us. It is asserted that its object is "to bring the character of man into harmony with that of God." That this is *an* object, is plain from Scripture, but that it is *the* object is no where told us; no where is it represented as the object in such sense, that we may take it as a key or rule, whereby to arrange and harmonize the various parts of the revelation,—which is the use to which the author puts it. God's works look many ways; they have objects (to use that mere human word) innumerable; they are full of eyes before and behind, and like the cherubim in the Prophet's vision, advance forward to diverse points at once. But it is plainly unlawful and presumptuous to make one of those points, which happen to be revealed to us, the *τέλος τελειότατον* of His providence, and to subject every thing else to it. It plainly savours of the Rationalism already condemned; for what is it but to resolve, that what is revealed to us, is and shall be a complete system; to reject every thing but what is so complete; and to disallow the notion of revelation as a collection of fragments of a great scheme, the notion under which the most profound human philosophy is accustomed to regard it?

"Christianity," says Bishop Butler, "is a scheme quite beyond our comprehension. The moral government of GOD is exercised by gradually conducting things so in the course of His providence, that every one at length and upon the whole shall receive *according to his deserts*; and neither fraud nor violence, but *truth and right, shall finally prevail*. Christianity is a particular scheme under this general plan of providence, and a part of it, conducive to its completion, with regard to mankind; consisting itself also of various parts and a mysterious economy, which has been carrying on from the time the world came into its present wretched state, and is still carrying on for its recovery by a divine person, the Messiah, who is to 'gather together in one the children of GOD, that are scattered abroad,' and establish 'an everlasting kingdom, wherein dwelleth righteousness.' . . . Parts likewise of this economy, are the miraculous system of the HOLY GHOST, and His ordinary assistance as given to good men; the invisible government which CHRIST exercises over His Church . . . and His future return to judge the world in righteousness, and completely re-establish the kingdom of GOD. . . . Now little, surely, need be said to show, that *this system or scheme of things is but imperfectly comprehended by us*. The Scripture expressly asserts it to be so. And, indeed, *one cannot read a passage relating to this great mystery of godliness, but what immediately*

*runs up into something which shows us our ignorance in it, as every thing in nature shows our ignorance in the constitution of nature*<sup>1</sup>."

In this passage the great philosopher, though led by his line of argument to speak of the Dispensation entirely in its reference to man, still declares that even then its object is not identical with man's happiness, but that it is justice and truth; while viewed in itself, every part of it runs up into mystery.

Right reason, then, and faith combine to lead us, instead of measuring a divine revelation by human standards, or systematizing, except so far as it does so itself, to take what is given as we find it, to use it and be content. *E.g.* Scripture says that CHRIST died for sinners—*so far* we may systematize; that He rose for our justification, that He went that the SPIRIT might come. Such and such like portions of a scheme are revealed, and we may use them, but no farther. On the other hand, the Catholic doctrine of the Trinity is a mere juxtaposition of separate truths, which to our minds involve inconsistency, when viewed together; nothing more being attempted, for nothing more is told us. Arrange and contrast them we may and do; systematize (*i. e.* reduce them into an intelligible dependence on each other, or harmony with each other) we may not; unless indeed any such oversight of Revelation, such right of subjecting it to our understandings, is committed to us by Revelation itself. What then must be thought of the confident assumption, without proof attempted, contained in the following sentence, already quoted?

"The first faint outline of Christianity presents to us a view of God operating on the characters of men through a manifestation of His own character, in order that, by leading them to participate in some measure in His moral likeness, they may also in some measure participate in His happiness."

That God intends us to partake in His moral likeness, that He has revealed to us His own moral character, that He has done the latter in order to accomplish the former (to speak as a man), I will grant, for it is in Scripture; but that it is the *leading idea* of Christianity, the chief and sovereign principle of it, this I altogether deny. I ask for proof of what seems to us an assumption, and (if an assumption) surely an unwarranted and presumptuous one.

<sup>1</sup> Anal. ii. 4.



Notice was above taken of the selfishness of that philosophy, which resolves to sit at home and make every thing subordinate to the individual. Is not this painfully instanced in one of the foregoing passages? "What is the history of another world to *me*, unless it have some intelligible relation to my duties and happiness?" Was this Moses' temper, when he turned aside to see the great sight of the fiery bush?

Further, be it observed, the above theory has undeniably a tendency to disparage, if not supersede the mysteries of religion, such as the doctrine of the Trinity. It lays exclusive stress upon the *character* of God, as the substance of the Revelation. It considers Scripture as a *Manifestation* of God's character, an intentional subjecting of it in an intelligible shape to our minds, and nothing more. The author says:—

"The *reasonableness* of a religion seems to me to consist in there being a direct and natural connexion between a believing [its] doctrines, and being formed by these to the character which it recommends."

Again :

"These terms ['manifestation' and 'exhibition'] suit best with the *leading idea* which I wish to explain, viz. that the facts, [*i. e.* doctrines, as is just before explained] of revelation are developments of the moral principles of the Deity, and carry an influential address to the feelings of man." p. 26.

Now, is the theological doctrine of the Trinity such a development? Is it influentially addressed to our feelings? Is it "an act of the divine government," as the author expresses himself? Further, does he not also tell us the "reasonableness of a religion seems to consist in there being a *direct and natural* connexion between a believing the doctrines which it inculcates, and a being formed by these to the character which it recommends?" We need not dwell on the assumption hazarded in this passage; for surely it is conceivable that reasons may exist in the vast scheme of the Dispensation, (of the bearings of which we know nothing perfectly,) for doctrines being revealed, which do not directly and naturally tend to influence the formation of our characters, or at least which we cannot see to do so. We have at least the authority of Bishop Butler to support us in considering that, "we are *wholly ignorant what degree of new knowledge* it were to be expected God would give mankind by Revelation, upon supposition of His affording one;

or how far, or in what way, He would interpose miraculously, to qualify them to whom He should originally make the Revelation, *for communicating the knowledge given by it*; and to secure their doing it to the age in which they should live, and to secure its being transmitted to posterity<sup>1</sup>."

But even though Butler, and other deep thinkers, had not said a word on the subject, the immediate and inevitable result, or rather operation of Mr. Erskine's principle, when applied to the matter of the Scripture Revelation, is a sufficient refutation of it. It will be found to mean nothing, or to lead pretty nearly to Socinianism. Let us take an instance: he says, that the reasonableness of a religion, and therefore its claim on our acceptance, consists in there being a direct and natural tendency in belief in its doctrines to form that moral character which it recommends. Now, I would ask,—do we never hear it asked,—have we never been tempted to ask ourselves,—“What is the *harm* of being *e. g.* a Sabellian?” And is not the habit of thought, from which such questionings proceed, owing to the silent influence of such books as this of Mr. E.'s? Further, do we not hear persons say, “As to the Athanasian doctrine, I not deny there is a Mystery about the Manifestations of the Divine Nature in Scripture, but this Mystery, whatever it is, as it does not interfere with the practical view of the doctrine, so, on the other, it cannot subserve it. It is among the secret things of God, and must be left among them;”—as if we might unthankfully throw back again into the infinite abyss, any of the jewels which God has vouchsafed to bring us thence.

The reader may at first sight be tempted to say, “This is an overstrained handling of Mr. Erskine's words. What he does mean, is, not that the *want* of connexion between doctrine and precept is an objection, (though his words strictly taken *may* say this,) but, that where such a connexion does exist, as we see it does in Christianity, *there* is a strong argument in behalf of the divinity of a professed Revelation.” Probably this was his original meaning, and it would have been well had he kept to it. But it is the way with men, particularly in this day, to generalize freely, to be impatient of such concrete truth as existing appoint-

<sup>1</sup> Anal. ii. 3.

ments contain, to attempt to disengage it, to hazard sweeping assertions, to lay down principles, to mount up above God's visible doings, and to subject them to tests derived from our own speculations. Doubtless He, in some cases, vouchsafes to us the knowledge of truths more general than those works of His which He has set before us ; and when He does so, let us thankfully use the gift. This is not the case in the present instance. Mr. E. has been led on, from the plain fact, that in Christianity there is a certain general bearing of faith in doctrine upon character, and so far a proof of its *consistency*, which is a token of divine working,—led on, to the general proposition, that “in a genuine Revelation all doctrines revealed must have a direct bearing upon the moral character enjoined by it ;” and next to the use of it as a test for rejecting such alleged doctrines of the Gospel, *e. g.* the Catholic doctrine of the Trinity, as do not perceptibly come up to it.

That I am not unfair upon Mr. Erskine will appear from the following passages.

“*The abstract fact* that there is a plurality in the unity of the Godhead, really makes no address either to our understandings, or our feelings, or our consciences. But the *obscurity* of the doctrine, as far as moral purposes are concerned, is dispelled, when it comes in such a form as this,—‘God so loved the world, &c.’ or this, ‘But the Comforter which is, &c.’—Our *metaphysical* ignorance of the Divine Essence is not indeed in the slightest degree removed by this mode of stating the subject ; but our moral ignorance of the Divine character is enlightened, and *that is the thing with which we have to do.*” p. 96.

Now I do not say that such a passage as this is a denial of the doctrine of the Athanasian Creed ; but I ask, should a man be disposed to deny it, *how* would the writer refute him ? Has he not, if a Trinitarian, cut away the ground from under him ? Might not a Socinian or Sabellian convince him of the truth of their doctrine, by his own arguments ? Unquestionably. He has laid down the principle, that a Revelation is *only so far* reasonable as it exhibits a direct and natural connexion between belief in its doctrines and conformity to its precepts. He then says, that in matter of fact the doctrine of the Trinity is only influential as it exhibits the moral character of God ; that is, that so far as it does not, so far as it is abstract (as he calls it) and in scientific form, *i. e.* viewed as the Catholic Doctrine, it is not influential, or reasonable, or by

consequence important, or even credible. He has cut off the *Doctrine* from its roots, and has preserved only that superficial part of it which he denominates a "*Manifestation*,"—only so much as bears visibly upon another part of the system, the character of man,—so much as is perceptibly connected with it, so far as may be comprehended.

But he speaks so clearly on this subject that comment is perhaps needless.

"In the Bible the Christian doctrines . . . stand as indications of the character of GOD, and as the exciting motives of a corresponding character in man."

This assumption must not pass without notice: often they so stand, not always, as he would imply. When St. Paul bids Timothy hold fast the form of sound words, or St. Jude exhorts us to contend earnestly for the faith, these Apostles seem so to direct for the sake of the faith itself, not for any ulterior reason. When St. John requires us to reject any one who brings not the true doctrine, nothing is said of it as an "exciting motive" of a certain character of mind, though viewed on one side of it, that doctrine certainly is so. St. Paul glories in the doctrine of CHRIST crucified, as being a *strange* doctrine and a *stumbling block*. St. John states the doctrine of the Incarnation, in the first chapter of his Gospel, as a heavenly truth, which was too glorious for men, and believed on only by the few, by which, indeed, the FATHER was declared, but which *shone in darkness*. But to return:

"In the Bible, the Christian doctrines are always stated in this connexion, they stand as indications of the character of GOD, and as the exciting motives of a corresponding character in man. Forming thus the connecting link between the character of the Creator and the creature, they possess a majesty which it is impossible to despise, and exhibit a form of consistency and truth which it is difficult to disbelieve. Such is Christianity in the Bible; *but in creeds and Church articles it is far otherwise*. These tests and summaries originated from the introduction of doctrinal errors and metaphysical speculations into religion; and in consequence of this, they are not so much intended to be the repositories of the truth, as barriers against the encroachment of erroneous opinions. The doctrines contained in them, therefore, are not stated with any reference to their *great object* in the Bible,—the regeneration of the human heart by the knowledge of the Divine character. *They appear as detached propositions*, indicating no *moral* cause, and pointing to no *moral* effect. They do not look to GOD on the one hand as their source; nor to man on the other as the object of their

moral urgency. *They appear like links severed from the chain to which they belonged; and thus they lose all that evidence which arises from their consistency, and all that dignity which is connected with their high design. I do not talk of the propriety or impropriety of having Church Articles, but the evils which spring from receiving impressions of religion exclusively or chiefly from this source.*" pp. 93, 94.

It is always a point gained to be able to come to issue in a controversy, as I am able to do here with the writer under consideration. He finds fault with that disjointed and isolated character of the doctrines in the old Catholic creed, that want of system, which to the more philosophical mind of Bishop Butler would seem an especial recommendation from its analogy to the course of nature. He continues,

"I may instance the ordinary statements of the doctrine of the Trinity, as an illustration of what I mean. It seems difficult to conceive that any man should read through the New Testament candidly and attentively, without being convinced that this doctrine is essential to, and implied in every part of the system: but it is not so difficult to conceive, that although his mind is perfectly satisfied on this point, he may yet, if his religious knowledge is exclusively derived from the Bible, feel a little surprised and staggered, when he for the first time reads the terms in which it is announced in the articles and confessions of all Protestant Churches. In these summaries, the doctrine in question is stated by itself, divested of all its Scriptural accompaniments, and is made to bear simply on *the nature of the Divine Essence, and the Mysterious fact of the existence of Three in One. It is evident that this fact, taken by itself, cannot in the smallest degree tend to develop the Divine character, and therefore cannot make any moral impression on our minds.*" pp. 94, 95.

Now, here, if it were to the purpose, this author might be encountered on his own ground. Surely, if it were religious to do so, it might be asserted, in contradiction to his last remark, that the Catholic doctrine of the Trinity *does* "tend to develop the Divine character," *does* "make a moral impression on our minds;" for does not the notion of a Mystery lead to reverence, awe, wonder, and fear? and are these not moral impressions? He proceeds:

"In the Bible it assumes quite a different shape; it is there *subservient to the manifestation of the moral character of GOD.* The doctrine of GOD's combined justice and mercy, in the redemption of sinners, and of His continued spiritual watchfulness over the progress of truth through the world, and in each particular heart, could not have been communicated without it, so as to

have been distinctly and vividly apprehended ; but it is never mentioned, except in connexion with these objects ; nor is it ever taught as a separate subject of belief. There is a great and important difference between these two modes of statement. In the first, *the doctrine stands as an isolated fact of a strange and unintelligible nature*, and is apt even to suggest the idea, that *Christianity holds out a premium for believing improbabilities*. In the other, it stands indissolubly united with an act of Divine holiness and compassion, which radiates to the heart an appeal of tenderness most intelligible in its nature and object, and most constraining in its influence." pp. 95, 96.

Here, at length, Rationalism stands confessed, and we hear openly the "mouth speaking great things," described in prophecy. Again :

"The hallowed purpose of restoring men to the lost image of their Creator, is in fact the very soul and spirit of the Bible ; and *whenever this object does not distinctly appear, the whole system becomes dead and useless.*"

If so, what judgment are we to pass upon such texts as the following? "We are unto GOD a *sweet savour of CHRIST*, in them that are saved, and in them that perish ; to the one we are the savour of death unto death : and to the other, the savour of life unto life." "What if GOD, *willing to show His wrath and to make His power known*, endured with much long suffering the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction, and that He might make known the riches of His glory on the vessels of mercy, which He had afore prepared unto glory?" "He hath appointed a day in which *He will judge the world in righteousness*, by that Man whom He hath ordained." "*Behold, I come quickly, and My reward is with Me, to give every man according as his work shall be*." The glory of God, according to Mr. Erskine, and the maintenance of truth and righteousness, are *not* objects sufficient, were there no other, to prevent "the whole system" of revealed truth from "becoming dead and useless." Does not this philosophy tend to Universalism? can its upholders maintain for any long while the eternity of future punishment? Surely they speak at random, and have no notion what they are saying. He proceeds :

"In Creeds and Confessions this great purpose is not made to stand forth with its real prominency ; its intimate connexion with the different articles of faith is not adverted to ; the *point* of the whole argument is thus lost, and *Christianity is misapprehended to be a mere list of mysterious facts*. One who un-

<sup>1</sup> 2 Cor. ii. 15, 16. Rom. x. 22, 23. Acts xvii. 31. Rev. xxii. 12.

derstands the Bible may read them with profit, *because his own mind may fill up the deficiencies*, and when their statements are correct, they may assist inquiries in certain stages, by bringing under their eye a concentrated view of all the points of Christian doctrine; and they may serve, according to their contents, either as public invitations to their communion, or as public warnings against it; . . . but they are not calculated to impress on the mind of a learner a vivid and *useful* apprehension of Christianity. . . . Any person who draws his knowledge of the Christian doctrines exclusively or principally from such sources, must run considerable risk of losing the benefit of them, by overlooking their moral objects; and, in so doing, he may be tempted to reject them altogether, because he will be blind to their *strongest evidence, which consists in their perfect adaptation to these objects*. The Bible is the only perfectly pure source of Divine knowledge, and the man who is unacquainted with it is, in fact, ignorant of the doctrines of Christianity, however well read he may be in the schemes, and systems, and controversies, which have been written on the subject. . . . The habit of viewing the Christian doctrine and the Christian character as two separate things has a most pernicious tendency. A man who in his scheme of Christianity says, 'here are so many things to be believed, and here are so many things to be done,' has already made a fundamental mistake. The doctrines are the principles which must excite and animate the performance, &c." pp. 139—141.

It is not the design of this Paper to refute Mr. Erskine's principles, so much as to delineate and contrast them with those of the Church Catholic. Since, however, he has already, in several of these extracts, *assumed* that Scripture ever speaks of revealed doctrines in a directly practical way,—not as objects of faith merely, but as motives to conduct,—I would call attention to the following passage, in addition to those which have been above pointed out. "JESUS answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, *Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of GOD*. Nicodemus saith unto Him, *How* can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb and be born? JESUS answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, *Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of GOD*. That which is born of the flesh is flesh, and that which is born of the SPIRIT is spirit. *Marvel not* that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again. The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but *canst not tell* whence it cometh and whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the SPIRIT. Nicodemus answered and said unto Him, *How* can these things be? JESUS answered and

said unto him, Art thou a master in Israel, and knowest not these things? Verily, verily, I say unto thee, We speak that We do know, and testify that We have seen; and *ye receive not Our witness*. If I have told you earthly things, and *ye believe not, how shall ye believe* if I tell you of heavenly things? And *no man ascendeth up to heaven, but He that came down from heaven, even the Son of man which is in heaven*<sup>1</sup>."

Some persons, doubtless, are so imbued with modern glosses and the traditions of men, that they will discern in all this but a practical exhortation to conversion, change of heart, and the like; but any one who gets himself fairly to look at the passage in itself, will, I am persuaded, see nothing more or less than this,—that CHRIST enunciates a solemn *Mystery* for Nicodemus to receive in *faith*; that Nicodemus so understands His words, and hesitates, at it; that our LORD reproves him for hesitating, tells him that there are even higher Mysteries than that He had set forth, and proceeds to instance that of the Incarnation. In what conceivable way would a supporter of Mr. E.'s views make the last awful verse "subservient to the manifestation of the moral character of God," or directly influential upon practice? unless, indeed, he explained its clauses away altogether, as if they meant nothing more than is contained in the next verses, "As Moses, &c." and "GOD so loved the world, &c." All this is too painful to dwell upon. The latter part, particularly the conclusion, of the sixth chapter of the same Gospel, would afford another instance in point.

Now let us hear what Mr. Erskine says in like manner on the doctrine of the Atonement, which he would exalt, indeed, into the substance of the Gospel, but in his account of which, as well as of the other Mysteries of revelation, he will, I fear, be found wanting.

"The doctrine of the Atonement through JESUS CHRIST, which is the cornerstone of Christianity, and to which *all the other doctrines of Revelation are subservient*,"—

Here is the same (what I must call) presumptuous assumption,—

"—has had to encounter the misapprehension of the understanding as well as the pride of the heart."

<sup>1</sup> John iii. 3—13.



Now let us observe, he is going to show *how* the understanding of the Church Catholic has *misapprehended* the doctrine.

“This pride is natural to man, and can only be overcome by the power of truth; but the misapprehension might be removed by the simple process of reading the Bible with attention; because it has arisen from neglecting the record itself, and taking our information from the discourses or the *systems of men* who have engrafted the metaphysical subtleties of the schools upon the unperplexed statement of the word of God. In order to understand the facts of Revelation, we *must* (sic) form a system to ourselves; but if any subtlety, of which the application is unintelligible to common sense, or unimportant on conduct, enters into our system, we may be sure that it is a wrong one.”

The author here alludes to the Catholic teaching in the words “systems of man;” indeed it has been fashionable of late so to speak of it; but let me ask, which teaching has the more of system in it, that which regards the doctrines of revelation as isolated truths, so far as they are not connected in Scripture itself, or that which pares away part, and forcibly deals with the rest, till they are all brought down to an end cognizable by the human mind? It must be observed, that the author expressly sanctions the formation of *a system*, which Catholic believers do not. He proceeds,

“The common-sense system of religion consists in two connexions,—first, the connexion between the doctrines and the character of God which they exhibit; and secondly, the connexion between these same doctrines and the character which they are intended to impress on the mind of man. When, therefore, we are considering a religious doctrine, our questions ought to be, first, What view does this doctrine give of the character of God in relation to sinners? And secondly, What influence is the belief of it calculated to exercise on the character of man? . . . The first of these questions leads us to consider the Atonement as an act necessarily resulting from, and simply developing principles in the Divine mind, altogether independent of its effects on the hearts of those who are interested in it. The second leads us to consider the adaptation of the history of the Atonement, when believed, to the moral wants and capacities of the human mind. . . . There is something very striking and wonderful in this adaptation; and the deeper we search into it, the stronger reason shall we discover for admiration and gratitude, and the more thoroughly shall we be convinced that it is not a lucky coincidence, not an adjustment contrived by the precarious and temporising wisdom of this world, but that it is stamped with the uncounterfeited seal of the universal Ruler, and carries on it the traces of that same mighty will, which has connected the sun with his planetary train, and fixed the great relations in nature, appointing to each atom its bound that it cannot pass.” pp. 97—100.

These last remarks are true of course in their place ; so far as we think we see an adaptation, even though Scripture does not expressly mention it, let us praise God and be thankful ;—but it is one thing to trace humbly and thankfully what we surmise to be God's handywork, and so far as we think we see it, and quite another thing to propound our surmises dogmatically, not only as true, but as the substance of the revelation, the test of what is important in it, and what not ; nay, of what is really part of it, and what not. Presently he says as follows :—

“The doctrine of the Atonement is the great subject of Revelation. God is represented as delighting in it, as being glorified by it, and as being most fully manifested by it. *All the other doctrines radiate from this as their centre.* In *subservience to it*, the distinction in the unity of the Godhead has been revealed. It is described as the everlasting theme of praise and song amongst the blessed who surround the throne of God.” pp. 101, 102.

Now that the doctrine of the Atonement is so essential a doctrine that none other is more so, (true as it is,) does not at all hinder other doctrines in their own place being so essential that they may not be moved one inch from it, or made to converge towards that doctrine ever so little, beyond the sanction of Scripture. There is surely a difference between being prominent and being paramount. To take the illustration of the human body: the brain is the noblest organ, but have not the heart and the lungs their own essential rights (so to express myself), their own independent claims upon the regard of the physician? Will not he be justly called a theorist who resolves all diseases into one, and refers general healthiness to one organ as its seat and cause?

One additional observation is to be made on Mr. Erskine's view of the Atonement. He considers, in common with many other writers of his general way of thinking, that in that most solemn and wonderful event, we have a Manifestation, not only of God's love, but of His justice. *E. g.*

“The distinction of persons in the Divine nature we cannot comprehend, but we can easily comprehend the high and engaging morality of that character of God, which is developed in the history of the New Testament. God gave His equal and well-beloved SON, to suffer in the stead of an apostate world ; and through this exhibition of awful justice, He publishes the fullest and freest pardon. He thus teaches us, that it forms no part of His scheme of mercy to dissolve the eternal connexion between sin and misery. No ; this connexion

stands sure ; and one of the chief objects of Divine Revelation, is to convince men of this truth ; and *Justice* does the work of mercy, when it alarms us to a sense of danger, &c." p. 74.

Again :

"The design of the Atonement was to make mercy towards this offcast race consistent with the honour and the holiness of the Divine Government. To accomplish this gracious purpose, the Eternal Word, who was GOD, took on Himself the nature of man, as the elder brother and representative and champion of the guilty family ; He solemnly acknowledged the justice of the sentence pronounced against sin, and submitted Himself to its full weight of woe, in the stead of His adopted kindred. God's justice found rest here ; His law was magnified and made honourable, &c." pp. 102, 103.

The view maintained in these and other extracts, and by others besides Mr. Erskine, is remarkable for several reasons. First, for the *determination* it evinces not to leave us any thing in the Gospel system unknown, unaccounted for. One might have thought that here at least somewhat of awful Mystery would have been allowed to hang over it ; here at least some "depth" of GOD's counsels would have been acknowledged and accepted on *faith*. For though the death of CHRIST manifests God's *hatred of sin*, as well as His love for man, (inasmuch as it was sin that made His death necessary, and the greater the sacrifice the greater must have been the evil that caused it,) yet *how* His death expiated our sins, and what satisfaction it was to God's *justice*, are surely subjects quite above us. It is in no sense a great and glorious *Manifestation of His justice*, as men speak now-a-days<sup>1</sup> ; it is an event ever *mysterious* on account of its necessity,

<sup>1</sup> This passage has been misunderstood from the word *manifestation* not being taken in the sense intended by the writer. The word may either mean the making a *fact evident*, or making the *reason* of it *intelligible* ; it is used above in the latter sense. CHRIST's atoning death does indeed proclaim the fact, that God's justice *is* satisfied, but it does not contain in it an explanation *how* it came to be a satisfaction. In the former sense then it may properly be called a manifestation of God's justice ; not in the latter, though it is often said to be so. The Atonement is a satisfaction to God's justice, in that His just anger was in matter of fact averted thereby from us sinners ; but we do not know in what way it satisfied His justice to afflict CHRIST instead of us. This is a mystery, though many persons speak as if they *saw* the fitness of it. It *manifests* to our *comprehension* the love and holiness of GOD ; it is a *proof* of love towards man and of hatred of sin ; it is not a *proof* to us that He is just, but must be taken on *faith* as a *result* of His being so.

while it is *fearful* from the hatred of sin implied in it, and most *transporting and elevating* from its display of God's love to man. But Rationalism would account for every thing.

Next it must be observed, as to Mr. Erskine himself, that he is of necessity forced by his hypothesis to speak of God's justice as if manifested to our comprehension in the Atonement, if he speaks of it at all, however extravagant it may be to do so. For unless this were the case, the dispensation would not be a "Manifestation," the revealed scheme would be imperfect, doctrines would be severed from ascertainable moral effects on the character,—which the Catholic Church indeed has ever considered, but which Mr. E. pronounces in the outset to be contrary to reason, and fatal to the claims of a professed revelation.

An additional remark is in place. The difficulty here pointed out has been felt by writers who agree with Mr. Erskine, and they have contrived to get rid of the remaining Mystery of the Dispensation, resulting from the question of justice, as follows. They refer God's justice to the well-being of His creation, as a *final end*, as if it might in fact be considered a modification of benevolence. Accordingly, they say God's justice was satisfied by the Atonement, inasmuch as He could then pardon man consistently with the good of His creation; consistently with their salutary terror of His power and strictness; consistently with the due order of His Government. This should be carefully noted, as showing us the tendency of the Rationalistic principle under review towards Utilitarianism. The following passage is given in illustration, from the Essays of Mr. Scott of Aston Sandford.

"The story of Zaleucus, prince of the Locrians, is well-known: to show his abhorrence of adultery, and his determination to execute the law he had enacted, condemning the adulterer to the loss of both his eyes, and at the same time to evince his love to his son who had committed that crime, he willingly submitted to lose one of his own eyes, and ordered at the same time one of his son's to be put out. Now what adulterer could *hope to escape*, when *power was vested in* a man whom neither *self-love*, nor *natural affection* in its greatest force, could induce to dispense with the law, or relax the rigour of its sentence?" Essay ix.

True, this act would show intense energy of determination to uphold the existing laws, clearly enough; and so did Mucius Scævola show intense energy in burning off his hand; but what is this question to the question of *justice*?

One more subject of examination, and that not the least important, is suggested by the foregoing passages. Mention has been made in them once or twice of the *facts* of revelation; the doctrines are said to be facts, and such facts to be all in all. Now according to Catholic teaching, doctrines are divine truths, which are the objects of faith, not of sight; we may call them facts, if we will, so that we recollect that they are sometimes facts of the unseen world, not of this, and that they are not synonymous with actions or works. But Mr. E., by a remarkable assumption, rules it that doctrines are facts of the revealed divine *governance*, so that a doctrine is made the same as a divine action or work. As Providence has given us a series of moral facts by nature, as in the history of nations or of the individual, from which we deduce the doctrines of natural religion, so Scripture is supposed to reveal a second series of facts, or works, in the course of the three dispensations, especially the Christian, which are the *doctrines* of religion, or at least, which together with the principle involved in them, are the doctrines. Thus CHRIST's death upon the cross is an historical fact; the meaning of it is what illustrates and quickens it, and adapts it for influencing the soul. Now if we ask, how on this theory the doctrine of the Trinity is a fact in the divine governance, we are answered that it must be thrown into another shape, if I may so express myself; it must be made subordinate, and separated into parts. The series of Christian facts is supposed to pass from the birth to the death of CHRIST, and thence to the mission of the HOLY GHOST. We must view the divinity of CHRIST in His death, the divinity of the SPIRIT in His mission. That they are therein exhibited, I grant; but the theory requires us to consider this *the* scriptural mode of their exhibition. This theory is supposed by some of its upholders to be sanctioned by Butler; for they seem to argue, that *as* the course of nature is a collection of manifested facts, so is the course of grace. But that great divine knew better than to infer, from what he saw, what was to be expected in a Revelation, were it to be granted. He asserts plainly the contrary; his whole argument is merely negative, defending Christianity as far as nature enables him to do so,—not limiting the course of the revelation to the analogy of nature. Accordingly, the Church Catholic has ever taught (as in

her Creeds,) that there are facts revealed to us, not of this world, not of time, but of eternity, and that absolutely and independently; not merely embodied and indirectly conveyed in a certain historical course, not subordinate to the display of the Divine character, not revealed merely relatively to us, but primary objects of our faith, and essential in themselves, whatever dependence or influence they may have upon other doctrines, or upon the course of the Dispensation. In a word, it has taught the existence of *Mysteries* in religion, for such emphatically must truths ever be which are external to this world, and existing in eternity;—whereas this narrow-minded, jejune, officious, and presumptuous human system teaches nothing but a *Manifestation*, *i. e.* a series of historical works conveying a representation of the moral character of GOD; and it dishonours our holy faith by the unmeaning reproach of its being metaphysical, abstract, and the like,—a reproach, unmeaning and irreverent, just as much so as it would be on the other hand to call the historical facts earthly or carnal.

I will quote some passages from Mr. E.'s work, to justify my account of his view, and then shall be able, at length, to take leave of him.

“It may be proper to remark, that the acts attributed to the Divine Government are usually termed ‘doctrines,’ to distinguish them from the moral precepts of a religion.” p. 25.

Thus the doctrine of the Trinity, *as such*, is not a doctrine of the Gospel. Again :

“It is not enough to show, in proof of its authenticity, that the facts which it affirms concerning the dealings of GOD with His creatures, do exhibit His moral perfections in the highest degree; it must also be shown that these facts, when present to the mind of man, do naturally, according to the constitution of his being, tend to excite and suggest that combination of feelings which constitutes his moral perfection. But when we read a *history* which authoritatively claims to be an *exhibition* of the character of GOD in His dealings with men, if we find in it that which fills and overflows our most dilated conceptions of moral worth, &c.; . . . and if our reason farther discovers a system of powerful moral stimulants, embodied *in the facts* of this *history*; . . . if we discern that the spirit of this history gives peace to the conscience, &c.; . . . we may then well believe that GOD has been pleased in pity, &c. . . . to clothe the eternal laws which regulate His spiritual government, in such a form as may be palpable to our conceptions, and adapted to the urgency of our necessities.” pp. 18, 19.

“I mean to show that there is an intelligible and necessary connection between the *doctrinal facts* of revelation and the character of GOD . . . and farther, that the belief of these *doctrinal facts* has an intelligible and necessary tendency to produce the Christian character, &c.” p. 20, 21.

“The object of this dissertation, is to analyse the component parts of the Christian scheme of doctrine, with reference to its bearings both on the character of GOD and on the character of man; and to demonstrate that *its facts*, not only present an expressive *exhibition* of all the moral qualities which can be conceived to reside in the divine mind, but also contain all those objects which have a natural tendency to excite and suggest in the human mind, that combination of moral feelings which has been termed moral perfection.” p. 16.

“GOD has been pleased to present to us a most interesting *series of actions*, in which His moral character, *as far as we are concerned*, is fully and perspicuously embodied. In this *narration*, &c.” p. 55.

“It [the Gospel] addresses the learned and the unlearned, the savage and the civilized, the decent and the profligate; and to all it speaks precisely the same language! What then is this universal language? It cannot be the language of metaphysical discussion, or what is called abstract moral reasoning . . . . . its argument consists in a relation of *facts*.” p. 55.

Now that in these passages, the doctrines of the Gospel are resolved into facts which took place in GOD’s governance, and that its mysteries are admitted, only so far as they are qualities or illustrations of these historical facts, seems to me, not only the true but the only interpretation to be put upon his words. If they do not mean this, let this at least be proposed, as an approximation to the real meaning; in the meanwhile, let it be observed, that nothing which has been said in the former portions of this discussion is at all affected by any failing, if so, in having fully elicited it.

§ 3. *Remarks on Mr. Abbot's "Corner Stone."*

HERE then we have arrived at a point where we part company with Mr. Erskine, and join Mr. Abbott, who advances further in a most perilous career. The principle with which Mr. E. began has been above discovered to issue in a view of the Gospel, which may be contemplated apart from that principle. That the human mind may criticise and systematise the divine revelation, that it may identify it with the Dispensation, that it may limit the uses of the latter to its workings through our own reason and affections, and such workings as we can ascertain and comprehend, in a word, that the Gospel is a *Manifestation*, this is the fundamental principle of Mr. Erskine's Essay. Mr. Jacob Abbott seems so fully to take this principle for granted, that it would be idle to do more than notice his doing so; it will be more to the purpose to direct attention to his treatment of the theory, in which Mr. Erskine's principle seems to issue, viz. that the Gospel is a *collection of facts*. I am now referring to Mr. Abbott's work called "the Corner Stone," which I do not hesitate to say approaches within a hair's breadth of Socinianism: a charge which I would by no means urge against Mr. E., whatever be the *tendency* of his speculations.

In the work in question, Mr. Abbott disclaims entering into *theological* questions, properly so called (Preface, p. vi.); nor is there any necessity for his entering into them, so that the line of discussion which he does take, does not intrude upon them or provoke them.

"I have made this *exhibition* of the Gospel," he says, "with reference to its



moral effect on human hearts, and not for the purpose of taking sides in a controversy between different parties of Christians."

Again,

"A system of theology is a map or plan, in which every feature of the country must be laid down in its proper place and proportion ; this work is on the other hand a series of views, as a traveller sees them in passing over a certain road. In this case, the road which I have taken, leads indeed through the heart of the country, but it does not by any means bring to view all which is interesting or important. The reader will perceive that the history of JESUS CHRIST is the clue which I have endeavoured to follow ; that is, the work is intended to exhibit religious truth, as it is connected with the various events in the life of our SAVIOUR. In first introducing Him to the scene, I consider His exalted nature as the *great moral Manifestation of the Divinity to us*. Then follows a view of *His personal character, and of His views of religious duty, &c.*" pp. vi. vii.

Let us observe here the similarity of language between the two writers I am speaking of. They are evidently of the same school. They both direct their view to the Gospel *history* as a Manifestation of the Divine Character ; and though, in the above extracts, Mr. Abbott speaks more guardedly than Mr. Erskine, there will be found to be little or no practical difference between them. But there seems this most important distinction in their respective applications of their theory, though not very distinct or observable at first sight ; that Mr. E. admits into the range of divine facts such as are not of this world, as the voluntary descent of CHRIST from heaven to earth, and his Incarnation, whereas Mr. A. virtually limits it to the witnessed history of CHRIST upon earth. This, so far as it exists, is all the difference between orthodoxy and Socinianism.

For this encroachment Mr. E. indeed had prepared the way ; for he certainly throws the high doctrines of religion into the background ; and the word "Manifestation" far more naturally fits on to a history witnessed by human beings, than to dispositions belonging to the unseen world. But Mr. E. certainly has not *taught* this explicitly.

If we wish to express the sacred Mystery of the Incarnation accurately, we should rather say that GOD is man, than that man is GOD. Not that the latter proposition is not altogether Catholic in its wording, but the former expresses the *history* of the Economy, (if I may so call it,) and confines our LORD's personality

to His divine nature, making His manhood an adjunct ; whereas to say that man is GOD, does the contrary of both of these,— leads us to consider Him a man personally, with some vast and unknown dignity superadded, and that acquired of course after His coming into existence as man. The difference between these two modes of speaking is well illustrated in the recent work of a Socinian writer, whom on account of the truth and importance of his remarks, it is right, with whatever pain, to quote.

“ A quick child, though not acquainted with logic, . . . . . will perceive the absurdity of saying that Edward is John. . . . . As the young pupil must be prepared to infer from the New Testament, that a perfect man is perfect GOD, he . . . . . must be imperceptibly led to consider the word GOD as expressing a quality, or an aggregate of qualities, which may be predicated of more than one, as the name of a species ; just as when we say John is man, Peter is man, Andrew is man. . . . . And so it is, with the exception of a few who, in this country, are still acquainted with that ingeniously perverse system of words, by means of which the truly scholastic Trinitarians (such as Bishop Bull and Waterland, who had accurately studied the fathers and the schoolmen,) appear to evade the logical contradictions with which the doctrine of the Trinity abounds ; all, as I have observed for many years, take the word GOD, in regard to CHRIST, as the name of a species, and more frequently of a dignity.”—*Heresy and Orthodoxy*, p. 91.

It will be observed of this passage, that the writer implies that the orthodox mode of speaking of the Incarnation is not exposed to a certain consequence, to which the mode at present popular is exposed, viz. the tendency to explain away CHRIST's divinity. Man is GOD, is the popular mode of speech ; GOD is man, is the Catholic. To return. It seems then that Mr. Erskine proceeds in the orthodox way, illustrating the doctrine that GOD became man ; Mr. A. starting with the earthly existence of our LORD does but enlarge upon the doctrine that a man is God. Mr. Erskine enforces the Atonement, as a Manifestation of GOD's moral character ; Mr. A. the life of CHRIST with the same purpose,—with but slight reference to the doctrine of the Expiation, for of course he whose life began with his birth from Mary, had given up nothing, and died merely because other men die. Here then is something very like Socinianism at first sight.

But again, let us see how he conducts his argument. Here

again he differs from Mr. E. The latter considers the incarnation of the SON of GOD to be a manifestation of GOD's mercy. Here then in his view, which so far is correct, there is a double Manifestation—of the SON of GOD personally in human nature, and of GOD morally in the history and circumstances of his incarnation; though Mr. E.'s argument leads him to insist on the latter. Mr. A. assumes the latter as the sole Manifestation, thus bringing out the tendency of Mr. E.'s argument. In other words he considers our LORD JESUS CHRIST as a man primarily, not indeed a mere man, any more than the conversion of the world was a mere human work, but not more than a man aided by GOD, just as the conversion of the world was a human work aided and blessed by GOD; a man in intimate union, nay in mysterious union with GOD, as Moses might be on the Mount, but not more than Moses except in degree. He considers that certain attributes of the Godhead were manifested in JESUS CHRIST, in the sense in which the solar system manifests His power, or the animal economy His wisdom; which is a poorly concealed Socinianism.—So this, it appears, is what really comes of declaiming against “metaphysical” notions of the revelation, and enlarging on its moral character!

That I may not be unfair to Mr. A., I proceed to cite his words:

“In the first place, let us take a survey of the *visible universe*, that we may see what *manifestations* of GOD appear in it. Let us imagine that we can see with the naked eye all that the telescope would show us; and then, in order that we may obtain an uninterrupted view, let us leave this earth, and, ascending from its surface, take a station where we can look, without obstruction, upon all around. As we rise above the summits of the loftiest mountains, the bright and verdant regions of the earth begin to grow dim. City after city, &c. As the last breath of its atmosphere draws off from us, it leaves us in the midst of universal night, with a sky extending without interruption all around us, and bringing out to our view, in every possible direction, innumerable and interminable vistas of stars. . . . . Our globe itself cuts off one half of the visible universe at all times, and the air spreads over us a deep canopy of blue, which during the day shuts out entirely the other half. But were the field open, we should see in every direction the endless perspective of suns and stars, as I have described them. . . . The conception of childhood, and it is one which clings to us in maturer years, that above the blue sky there is a *heaven* concealed, where

the Deity sits enthroned, is a delusive one. GOD is everywhere. . . . . The Deity is the *All-pervading Power*, which lives and acts throughout the whole. He is not a separate existence, having a special habitation in a part of it. . . . The striking and beautiful metaphors of the Bible never were intended to give us this idea. GOD is a SPIRIT, it says, in its most emphatic tone. A SPIRIT; that is, He has no form, no place, no throne. Where He acts, there only can we see Him. He is the wide-spread omnipresent power, which is every where employed, but which we can never see, and never know, except so far as He shall manifest Himself by His doings.

“ If we thus succeed in obtaining just conceptions of the Deity, as the invisible and universal *power*, pervading all space, and existing in all time, we shall at once perceive that the only way by which He can make Himself known to His creatures, is by *acting Himself* out, as it were, in His works; *and of course the nature of the Manifestation which is made will depend upon the nature of the works*. In the structure of a solar system, with its blazing centre and revolving worlds, the Deity, invisible itself, acts out its mighty power, and the unerring perfection of its intellectual *skill*. At the same time, while it is carrying on these mighty movements, it is exercising, in a very different scene, its untiring *industry*, and unrivalled *taste*, in clothing a mighty forest with verdure, &c. &c. . . . And so everywhere this unseen and universal essence *acts out its various attributes by its different works*. We can learn its nature only by the character of the effects which spring from it.

“ This universal essence, then, must display to us its nature, by acting itself out in a thousand places, *by such manifestations* of itself as it wishes us to understand. Does GOD desire to impress us with the idea of His *power*? He darts the lightning, &c. &c. Does He wish to beam upon us in *love*? What can be more expressive than the sweet summer sunset, &c. ? . . . How can He make us acquainted with His *benevolence and skill*? Why, by acting them out in some mechanism which exhibits them. He may construct an eye or a hand for man, &c. How can He give us some conception of His *intellectual powers*? He can plan the motions of the planets, &c. &c. . . . . But the great question, after all, is to come. It is the one to which we have meant that all we have been saying should ultimately tend. *How can such a Being exhibit the moral principle by which His mighty energies are all controlled.*” pp. 6—14.

It is impossible to do justice to one's feelings of distress and dismay on studying this passage,—to explain what one thinks of it, and why,—to convince a careless reader that one's language about it is not extravagant. Nor is it necessary perhaps, as it does not directly bear upon the subject before us,—to which I will hasten on. I interrupt the course of his exposition merely to put in a protest against the doctrine of it, which, to speak

shortly and plainly, is pantheistic, and against the spirit of it, which breathes an irreverence approaching to blasphemy. Should the reader think the tone of this paragraph is out of keeping with the remarks as yet made, he will see in a little time that Mr. Abbott does not allow one to preserve that didactic or critical air, which is commonly appropriate to a discussion such as the present. To proceed, however, with our immediate subject, the author's views, not of natural, but revealed religion:—

“ He is an unseen, universal power, utterly invisible to us, and imperceptible, except so far as He shall act out His attributes in what He does. *How shall He act out moral principle?* It is easy, by His material creation, to make any impression upon us, which material objects can make; but how shall He exhibit to us the moral beauty of justice and benevolence and mercy between man and man? . . . He might *declare* His moral attributes as He might have declared His power; but if He would bring home to us the one as vividly and distinctly as the other, He must act out His moral principles by a moral *manifestation*, in a moral scene; and *the great beauty of Christianity* is, that it represents Him as doing so. He brings out the purity, and spotlessness, and moral glory of the Divinity, through the workings of a human mind, called into existence for this purpose, and stationed in a most conspicuous attitude among men. . . . Thus the moral perfections of divinity show themselves to us in the only way by which, so far as we can see, it is possible directly to show them, by coming out in action, in the very field of human duty, by a mysterious union with a human intellect and human powers. It is GOD manifest in the flesh; *the visible moral image of an all-pervading moral Deity*, Himself for ever invisible.” pp. 14, 15.

On this explanation of the Incarnation, now, alas! not unpopular, even in our own Church, viz. that “ GOD manifest in the flesh” is “ *the visible moral image*” of GOD, let us hear the judgment of one who was a Trinitarian, and has lately avowed Socinianism. He thus relates the change in his own religious profession:

“ In my anxiety to avoid a separation from the Church by the deliberate surrender of my mind to my old Unitarian convictions, I took refuge in a modification of the Sabellian theory, and availed myself of the moral unity which I believe to exist between GOD the FATHER and CHRIST, joined to the consideration that CHRIST is called in the New Testament the *Image of GOD*, and addressed my prayers to GOD *as appearing in that image*. I left nothing untried to cultivate and encourage this feeling by devotional means. But such efforts of mere feeling (and I confess with shame their frequency on my part for the sake of what seemed most religious) were always vain and fruitless. *Sooner or latter*

*my reason has not only frustrated but punished them.* In the last mentioned instance, the devout contrivance would not bear examination. *Sabellianism is only Unitarianism disguised in words:* and as for the worship of an image in its absence, the idea is most unsatisfactory. In this state, however, I passed five or six years; but the return to the clear and definite Unitarianism in which I had formerly been, was as easy as it was natural."—*Heresy and Orthodoxy*, p. viii.

This passage proves thus much, not that the philosophising in question *leads* to Socinianism, but that it is one under which Socinianism may *lie hid*, even from a man's own consciousness; and this is just the use I wish to make of it against Mr. Abbott. He ends as follows:

"The substance of the view, which I have been wishing to impress upon your minds, is, that we are to expect to see Him solely through *the manifestation He makes of Himself in His works.* We have seen in what way some of the traits of His character are displayed in the visible creation, and how at last He determined to *manifest His moral character*, by bringing it into action *through the medium of a human soul.* The plan was carried into effect, and the mysterious person thus formed appears for the first time to our view in the extraordinary boy, &c." pp. 15, 16.

In these passages it seems to be clearly maintained that our LORD is a Manifestation of GOD in precisely that way in which His creatures are, though in a different respect, viz. as regards His moral attributes,—a Manifestation, not having any thing in it essentially peculiar and incommunicable, and therefore "*a Manifestation*" as he in one passage expresses himself, not *the Manifestation* of the FATHER.

Further, he expressly disclaims any opinion concerning the essential and superhuman relation, or (as he calls it) the "meta-physical" relation of the SON to the FATHER, in a passage which involves a slight upon other doctrines of a most important, though not of such a sacred character.

"Another source of endless and fruitless discussion, is disputing about questions *which can be of no practical consequence*, however they may be decided; such as the origin of sin."

does this mean original sin?

"the state of the soul between death and the resurrection, the salvation of infants."

is it possible he should thus talk ?

"The *precise metaphysical relationship* of the SON to the FATHER." p. 323<sup>1</sup>.

Why called metaphysical, I do not understand, but we have been already introduced to this word by Mr. Erskine, whose original fallacy also, be it observed, is faithfully preserved in this passage ;—"questions which can be of no practical consequence," as if we have any warrant thus to limit, or to decide upon, the gracious revelations of God. He continues,

"We have said they are of no practical consequence ; *of course* an ingenious reason *can contrive* to connect practical consequences with *any subject whatever*, and in his zeal he will exaggerate the importance of the connexion ;"

I interrupt the reader, to remind him that the subjects spoken of in this careless, self-satisfied way, are those which from the first have been preserved in Creeds and Confessions as the most necessary, most solemn truths ;—

"in fact *every subject in the moral world is more or less connected with every other one* ; nothing stands out entirely detached and isolated, and *consequently* a question which its arguers will admit to be merely a theoretical one, will never be found." p. 32, 4.

But if so, who shall draw the line between truths practical and theoretical ? Shall we trust the work to such as Mr. A. ? Surely this passage refutes his own doctrine. *We* also say that there are no two subjects in religion but may be connected by our minds, and therefore, for what we know, perchance are connected in fact. All we maintain in addition, is, that evidence of the fact of that connexion is not necessary for the proof of their importance to us, and further, that we have no right to pronounce that they are revealed merely with a view to their importance to us.

He disposes of the Catholic doctrine of CHRIST's eternal Sonship by calling it metaphysical ; how he escapes from the Catholic doctrine of the Incarnation we have already seen,—he resolves it into a moral Manifestation of GOD in the person of CHRIST. But his view requires a few more words of explanation. First, he speaks of God in pantheistic language, as an Anima Mundi, or

<sup>1</sup> Vide also p. 197.

universal essence, who has no known existence except in His works, as an all-pervading power or principle not external to the created world, but in it, and developed through it. He goes on to say that ALMIGHTY GOD, who is thus illimitable and incomprehensible, is exhibited in *personal* attributes in CHRIST, as if all the laws and provisions in which he energizes in nature impersonally, were condensed and exemplified in a real personal being. Hence he calls our LORD by a strange term, the *personification* of GOD, *i. e.* (I suppose) the personal image, or the manifestation in a person. In other words, GOD, whose person is unknown in nature, in spite of His works, is revealed in CHRIST, who is the express image of His person; and just in this, and (as I conceive) nothing more, would he conceive there was a difference between the manifestation of GOD in CHRIST, and the manifestation of Him in a plant or flower. CHRIST is a *personal* Manifestation. Whether there be any elements of truth in this theory, I do not concern myself to decide; thus much is evident, that he so *applies* it as utterly to explain away the real divinity of our LORD. The passages are as follow:

“It is by JESUS CHRIST that we have access to the FATHER. This vivid exhibition of His character, this *personification of His moral attributes*, opens to us the way. Here we see a manifestation of divinity, an image of the Invisible GOD, which comes as it were down to us; it meets our feeble faculties with a personification,” &c. p. 40.

“We accordingly commenced with His childhood, and were led at once into a train of reflection on the nature and the character of that eternal and invisible Essence, *whose attributes were personified in Him.*” p. 192.

“The human mind . . . reaches forward for some vision of the Divinity, the great unseen and inconceivable essence. JESUS CHRIST is the *personification of the divinity for us*, the brightness of His glory and the express image of His person.” p. 200.

Next, as to his opinions concerning the doctrine of the Atonement. I will not deny that some of his general expressions are correct, and taken by themselves, would be satisfactory; but they are invalidated altogether by what he has at other times advanced. It may be recollected that Mr. E., in his treatise on Internal Evidence, lays such a stress upon the use of the Atonement *as a Manifestation*, as to throw the real doctrine itself in the shade.



Viewed in itself, CHRIST's death is, we believe, a sacrifice acting in some unknown way for the expiation of human sin; but Mr. E. views it, (as indeed it may well be viewed, but exclusively as it should not be viewed,) as a mark and pledge of GOD's love to us, which it would be, though it were not an Expiation. Even though CHRIST's incarnation issued in nothing more than His preaching to the world and sealing His doctrine with His blood, it would be a great sign of His love, and a *pledge* now of our receiving blessings through Him; for why should He die except He meant to be merciful to us? but this would not involve the necessity of an expiation. St. Paul died for the Church, and showed his love for it in this sense. When then the view of the Christian is limited, as Mr. E. would almost wish it to be, to the *Manifestation* of the Atonement, or the effect of the Atonement on our minds, no higher doctrine is *of necessity* elicited than that of its being a sign of GOD's mercy, as the rainbow might be, and a way is laid, by obscuring, to obliterate the true doctrine concerning it. So far Mr. E. proceeds, not denying it (far from it) but putting it aside in his philosophical evidence: Mr. A., upon the very same basis, is bolder in his language, and almost, if not altogether gets rid of it.

In the following passage he applies Mr. Erskine's doctrine of the moral lesson, taught in CHRIST's death, of the justice and mercy of GOD: and he will be found distinctly to assert that the virtue of it *lay in this*, viz., that it was a *declaration* of GOD's hatred of sin, the same in kind as the punishment of the sinner would have been, only more perfect, a means of impressing *on us* His hatred of sin; not as if it really reconciled us to an offended Creator.

“The balm for your wounded spirit is this, that the moral impression in respect to the nature and tendencies of sin, which *is the only possible reason* GOD can have in leaving you to suffer its penalties.”

one should think the reason might be that “the wages of sin is death,”

“is accomplished far better by the life and death of His SON;—”

surely it is a greater balm to know that CHRIST has put away the wrath of GOD, as Scripture says, than to theorize about

“moral impressions” beyond the word of Scripture. Observe too, he says “the *life* and death,” excluding the proper idea of Atonement, which lies in the death of CHRIST, and so tending to resolve it into a Manifestation.

“God never could have wished to punish you for the sake of doing evil;”

how unspeakably bold; when God says he does punish the sinner, not indeed for the sake of evil, but as a just and holy God!

“and all the good which He could have accomplished by it, is already effected in another and a better way.” p. 179<sup>1</sup>.

Here is the same assumption which was just now instanced from the writings of Mr. Scott, of Aston Sandford, that God cannot inflict punishment except for the sake of a greater good, or, (as Mr. A. himself has expressed it just before) “because the welfare of His government requires” it, which is an altogether gratuitous statement.

Again :

“A knowledge of the death of CHRIST, with the explanation of it given in the Scriptures, touches men’s hearts, it shows the nature and tendencies of sin, it produces fear of God’s displeasure, and resolution to return to duty; and thus produces effects by which justice is satisfied,”—

observe, not by an expiation, but by the repentance of the offender in consequence of the “moral impression” attendant on the “Manifestation” of CHRIST’s death,—

“and the authority of the law sustained far better in fact than it would be by the severest punishment of the guilty sinner.” p. 174.

“Look at the *moral effect* of this great sacrifice, and feel that it takes off all the necessity of punishment, and all the burden of your guilt.” p. 190.

The necessity of punishment is (according to Mr. A.) the well-being of the Universe: and the virtue of the great sacrifice is, not expiation, atonement in God’s sight, but the *moral effect* of CHRIST’s death on those who believe in it. So again, in a passage lately quoted for another purpose :

“It is by JESUS CHRIST that we have access to the FATHER. *This vivid exhibition of His character, this personification of His moral attributes, opens to us the way.*” p. 40.

<sup>1</sup> Vide also p. 173.

Lastly, we have the same stress laid upon the facts of the Gospel as in Mr. Erskine's work, with this difference, that Mr. Erskine supposes the orthodox doctrine, or what he considers such, to be conveyed in the facts; Mr. Abbott, with the liberalism to which his predecessor leads, but which is more characteristic of this day than of fifteen years ago, seems to think that various theories may be raised about the facts, whether orthodox or otherwise, but that the facts alone are of consequence to us.

"Such are the three great *Manifestations* of Himself to man, which the one Unseen All-pervading Essence has made, and exhibited to us in the Bible, and in our own experience and observation,"—

—This sentence, be it observed in passing, savours strongly of Sabellianism; he has spoken of what he calls three Manifestations of ALMIGHTY GOD, as our natural Governor, as influencing the heart, and as in JESUS CHRIST, without there being any thing in his way of speaking to show, that he attributed these Manifestations respectively to THREE PERSONS. He proceeds:

"Though there have been interminable disputes in the Christian Church about the language which has been employed to describe these *facts*, there has been comparatively little dispute among even nominal Christians about the *facts themselves*." p. 39.

Such is the theology to which Mr. E.'s principle is found to lead in the hands of Mr. Abbott; a theology, (so to name it,) which violently robs the Christian Creed of all it contains, except those outward historical facts through which its divine truths were fulfilled and revealed to man.

This brief explanation of Mr. Abbott's theological system may be fitly followed up by some specimens of the temper and tone of his religious sentiments. In this way we shall be able to ascertain the state of mind which such speculations presuppose and foster.

"JESUS CHRIST had a taste for beauty, both of nature and art; He admired the magnificent architecture of the Temple, and deeply lamented the necessity of its overthrow, and his dress was at least of such a character, that the disposal of it was a subject of importance to the well paid soldiers who crucified him." p. 50, 51.

I put aside the utter unreasonableness of this last remark ; but let us think seriously, is CHRIST GOD, or is He not? if so, can we dare talk of Him as having "a taste for nature?" It is true Mr. A. does speak in this way of the ALMIGHTY FATHER also ; so that it may be said rather to prove that He has a grovelling conception of GOD than of CHRIST. Perhaps it will be more truly said that his irreverence towards the SAVIOUR, has led on to the other more direct profaneness. Yet a "taste for beauty of *art!*" This of the Eternal SON of GOD, the Creator ; will it be said that He is man also? true ;—but His personality is in His Godhead, if I may express myself in theological language. He did not undo what He was before, He did not cease to be the Infinite GOD, but He added to Him the substance of a man, and thus participated in human thoughts and feelings, yet without impairing (GOD forbid) His divine perfection. The Incarnation was not "a conversion of the Godhead into flesh, but a taking of the manhood into GOD." It seems there is *need* of the Athanasian Creed in these dangerous times. A mystery, indeed, results from this view, for certain attributes of Divinity and of manhood seem incompatible ; and there may be some revealed instances in our LORD'S history on earth of less than divine thought and operation : but *because* of all this we never must speak, we have utterly no warrant to speak, of the Person of the ETERNAL WORD as thinking and feeling like a mere man, like a child, or a boy, as simply ignorant, imperfect, and dependent on the creature, which is Mr. A.'s way. In saying this, I am quite aware that the sensitiveness of a Christian mind will at once, without argument, shrink from a passage such as that commented on, but I say it by way of accounting for its aversion, which, perhaps, it may not be able to justify to others. To proceed :—

"JESUS CHRIST was in some respects the *most* bold, energetic, decided, and courageous man *that ever lived* ; but in others he was the most flexible, submissive, and yielding." p. 51.

The SON of GOD made flesh, though a man, is beyond comparison with other men ; His person is not human ; but to say most of all men "is to compare.

“ There never was a mission, or an enterprise of any kind, conducted with a more bold, energetic, fearless spirit, than the SAVIOUR’S mission,” p. 52.

This sentence may not seem objectionable to many people, and as it is similar to many others in the work, it may be right to remark upon it. The truth is, we have got into a way of, what may be called, panegyricizing our LORD’S conduct, from our familiarity with treatises on External Evidence. It has been the fashion of the day to speak as to unbelievers, and, therefore, to level the sacred history to the rank of a human record, by way of argument. Hence we have learned to view the truth merely externally, *i. e.* as an unbeliever would view it; and so to view and treat it even when we are not arguing; which involves, of course, an habitual disrespect towards what we hold to be divine, and ought to treat as such. This will in part account for the tone in which the history of the Jews is sometimes set forth. And it is remarkably illustrated in the work before us, which though pointedly addressed only to those, who “ have confessed their sins and asked forgiveness,” who “ strive against temptation, and seek help from above,” (*vide* p. 1.) yet is continually wandering into the external view of CHRIST’S conduct, and assumes in a didactic treatise, what is only accidentally allowable in controversy.

“ There is something very bold and energetic in the measures He adopted in accomplishing His work. . . . In fact, there perhaps never was so great a moral effect produced in three years, on any community so extensive, if we consider at all the disadvantages incident to the customs of those days. There was no press, no modes of extensive written communication, no regularly organized channels of intercourse whatever between the different portions of the community. He acted under every disadvantage.” p. 53, 54.

Under no disadvantage, if He were GOD. But this is only part of one great error under which this writer lies. “ There was no press!” What notions he has concerning the nature, the strength, and the propagation of moral truth!

“ He sought solitude, He shrunk from observation: in fact, almost the only enjoyment which He seemed really to love, was his *lonely ramble* at midnight, for rest and prayer. . . . It is not surprising, that *after the heated crowds and exhausting labours of the day*, He should love to retire to silence and seclusion, to enjoy the cool and balmy air, the refreshing stillness, and all the beauties and glories of midnight among the solitudes of the Galilean hills, to find there happy communion with his Father, &c.” p. 55.

The more ordinary and common-place, the more like vulgar life, the more carnal the history of the Eternal SON of GOD is made, the more does this writer exult in it. He exults in sinking the higher notion of CHRIST, and in making the flesh the *ἡγεμονικὸν* of a Divine Essence. Even a prophet or apostle *might* be conceived to subdue the innocent enjoyments of His lower nature to the sovereignty of faith, and enjoy this world as an emblem and instrument of the unseen. But it is the triumph of Rationalism to level every thing to the lowest and most tangible form into which it can be cast, and to view the SAVIOUR Himself, not in His mysterious greatness, acting by means of human nature, and ministered unto by Angels in it, but as what I dare not draw out, lest profane words be necessary,—as akin to those lower natures which have but an animal existence.

“Another thing which exhibits the *boldness and enterprise* that characterized His plans for making an impression on the community, was the *peculiarly new and original style of public speaking* He adopted.” p. 55.

“This then is the key to the character of JESUS CHRIST in respect to *spirit and decision*.” p. 57.

“For the real sublimity of courage, the spectacle of this deserted and defenceless sufferer coming at midnight to meet the betrayer and his band, far exceeds that of Napoleon urging on his columns over the bridge of Lodi, or even that of Regulus returning to his chains.” p. 59, 60.

One seems to incur some ceremonial pollution by repeating such miserable words.

“He *evidently observed, and enjoyed* nature. There are many allusions to His solitary walks in the fields, and on the mountains, and by the sea side; but the greatest evidence of His *love for nature* is to be seen in the manner in which He speaks of its beauties. *A man's metaphors* are drawn from the sources with which he is most familiar, or which interest him most.” p. 60.

“We learn in the same manner how distinct were the *impressions of beauty or sublimity*, which the works of nature made upon the SAVIOUR, by the manner in which He alluded to them. . . . Look at the lilies of the field, says He. . . . *A cold heartless man, without taste or sensibility*, would not have said such a thing as that. He could not; and we may be as sure, that JESUS CHRIST *had stopped to examine and admire* the grace and beauty of the plant, &c.” p. 61, 62.

“Now JESUS CHRIST noticed these things. He *perceived* their beauty and enjoyed it.” p. 62.

Surely such passages as these are direct evidence of Socinian-

ism. Does any one feel curiosity, or wonder, does any one search and examine, in the case of things fully known to Him? Could the Creator of nature “stop to *examine*” and “enjoy the grace and beauty” of His own work? Were indeed this said of Him, we should say, “Here is one of the Mysteries which attend on the Incarnation;” but since we cannot suspect such writers as Mr. A. of inventing a Mystery for the sake of it, we must take it as evidence of a carnal and Socinian view of the SAVIOUR of mankind.

“He observed every thing, and His *imagination was stored* with an inexhaustible supply of images, drawn from every source, and with these He illustrated and enforced His principles in a manner altogether unparalleled by any writings, sacred or profane.” p. 63.

So this is the ashes to be given as children’s meat, to those who “confess” and repent, and try to know GOD’s will in the Gospel.

“Even His disciples, till they came to see Him die, had no conception of His love. They learned it at last, however. They saw Him suffer and die; and inspiration from above explained to them something about the influence of His death. *They enjoyed its benefits long before.*”—

All this is presumptuous and unsatisfactory, but let it pass.

“It is hard to tell which touches our gratitude most sensibly; the ardent love which led Him to do what He did, or the *delicacy with which He refrained from speaking of it*, to those who were to reap its fruits.” p. 94.

—that is, the delicacy towards sinners of an injured Creator, coming to atone in some mysterious way by His own sufferings for their sins in the sight of GOD and His FATHER.

“There is, in fact, no moral or spiritual safety without these feelings, and our SAVIOUR *knew this full well.*” p. 204.

“JESUS CHRIST *understood human nature better*. . . . He was *wiser* than the builders of the Pyramids. . . . The SAVIOUR did the work, and *did it better*, by a few parting words.” p. 217.

Such are the feelings which this writer ventures to express concerning Him, who is his LORD and his GOD. In condemning, however, his most unclean and miserable imaginings, I have neither wish nor occasion to speak against him as an individual. We have no concern with *him*. We know nothing of his opportunities of knowing better, nor how far what appears in his writ-

ings is an index of his mind. We need only consider him as the organ, involuntary (if you will) or unwitting, but still the organ, of the spirit of the age, the voice of that scornful, arrogant, and self-trusting spirit, which has been unchained during these latter ages, and waxes stronger in power day by day, till it is fain to stamp under foot all the host of heaven. This spirit we may steadily contemplate to our great edification; but to do more than denounce it *as such*, to judge or revile its instruments would involve another sin besides uncharitableness. For surely, this is a spirit which has tempted others besides those who have yielded to its influences; and like an infection of the air, it has perchance ere now, in some degree, not perhaps as regards the high doctrines of the Gospel, but in some way or other, breathed upon those who, at the present crisis of things, feel themselves called upon solemnly to resist it. The books of the day are so full of its evil doctrine in a modified shape, if not in its grosser forms, the principles (I may say) of the nation are so instinct with it or based in it, that the best perhaps that can be said of any of us, or at most of all but a few, is, that they have escaped from it, "so as by fire," and that the loudness of their warning is but a consequence of past danger, terror, and flight.

I view the works, then, of this writer, whether in their publication, or in their general reception, as signs of the religious temper of this Age. What shall be said of the *praise* that has been lavished on them? the *popularity* they have acquired? Granting that there are many things in them, from which a religious mind may gain something (for no one accuses Mr. A. of being deficient in quickness and intelligence, and he evidently has had opportunities of studying human nature, whatever success has attended him in it,—and it must be confessed that his first work published here was of a less objectionable character, and might well interest at first sight those who "thought no evil,") but, allowing all this, yet it may be fairly asked, is the book from which I have cited, one which can come very near to Christian minds without revolting them? How is it then that so many men professing strict religion, have embraced and dwelt on its statements without smelling the taint of death which is in them? And



is there not something of a self-convicted mischief in that view of religion, which its upholders, independent of each other, and disagreeing with each other materially in other points of doctrine and discipline, attempt to support by editing a book, as conducive to it, which turns out to be all but Socinian? The reason (I believe) why many pious persons tolerate a writer such as this, is, that they have so fully identified spirituality of mind with the use of certain phrases and professions, that they cannot *believe* that a person who uses them freely and naturally can be but taught of the HOLY SPIRIT: to believe it otherwise, would be unsettling their minds from the very foundation,—which indeed must take place sooner or later, whether they will or not.

With some quotations from the preface of one of Mr. A.'s editors, one of the most learned, orthodox, and moderate of the Dissenters of the day, I will bring this discussion to an end.

“ Mr. Abbott has so much of originality in his manner of thinking, and of *unguarded simplicity* in his style of expression,” [as render a friendly editor useful.] “ There might be peril that, without such a precaution, some readers would take a premature alarm, when they found some essential doctrines of Christianity conveyed in *terms of simplicity*, and elucidated by very familiar analogies, which appear considerably removed from our accredited phraseology, . . . *Whatever use we make of the language of the theological schools, we should never go beyond our ability to translate it into the plain speech of common life.*”

As far as the *words* go, this means, when duly explained, though the writer could not of course intend it, that Mr. A.'s merit consisted in having translated Trinitarianism into Socinianism. And that this is no unfair interpretation of the words, is plain from what presently follows, in which he speaks of the *prejudice* which the orthodox language and doctrine of divinity create against orthodoxy in the minds of those who are orthodox, *all but* receiving these orthodox statements. In other words, expressly specifying the Socinians, he requires us to adopt Mr. A.'s language in order to reconcile them to us. I quote his words.

“ But there is one department in the inseparable domain of theology and religion, upon Mr. Abbott's treatment of which I should be very blameable, were I to withhold my convictions. Among us, as well as in the

New England States, there is a body, large and respectable if considered absolutely, but far from large when viewed in comparison with the numbers of other professed Christians. It consists of those who disbelieve the doctrines held, as to their essential principles, by all other Christian denominations, with respect to the way in which sinful, guilty, degraded mankind may regain the favour of GOD and the pure felicity of the world to come; the doctrines of a divine SAVIOUR, His assumption of our nature, His propitiation and righteousness, and the restoration of holiness and happiness by His all-gracious SPIRIT. This class of persons is treated, by some public men, and in some influential writings, chiefly periodical, with scorn and contumely, and are held up to hatred, not to say persecution; they are continually represented as blasphemers and infidels, alike dangerous to the state, and inimical to all vital religion. Hence, thousands of excellent persons, deriving their only knowledge from the source to which I have alluded, regard this portion of their neighbours with horror, never think of treating them with tenderness, never attempt to obtain a lodgment for truth and holy affections in their hearts. Ah! little think these well-meaning persons, &c. . . . The circumstances of my life have put me into a condition of more correctly knowing this class of our fellow professors of Christianity; I know that there are among them serious, thoughtful, amiable persons, whose minds are prepossessed with prejudices against us and our system, much to the same extent as we are against them and theirs. I know, not merely how they reason, but how they feel. They in general have extremely erroneous conceptions of the orthodox system of faith. They have imbibed those misconceptions in early years; and subsequent circumstances have contributed to strengthen them. For some of those circumstances, of no trivial power to confirm prejudice, we have to blame ourselves. This is a state of things full of mischief and danger. Surely it is a pressing duty, to do all that we can for clearing away the clouds of ignorance and misrepresentation which, with so dire effect, discolour and distort the objects seen through them. For this purpose, it is to me an heartfelt pleasure to say that Mr. Abbott's 'Corner Stone' is admirably adapted. Notions producing feelings, and those feelings of deep and wide activity in the formation of religious sentiments, have been derived from Pelagius, Socinus, and Episcopius, from Clarke, Law, and Watson, from Lardner, Priestley, and Channing; and it is the thoroughly pervading influence on the mind of those mutually acting feelings and sentiments, which produces all that is formidable in the theoretical objections, and much of that which is effective in the practical repugnance, which are entertained by many against the doctrines of grace and holiness, through the Atonement and the SPIRIT of CHRIST. How desirable to meet those feelings in their germinating principle; to anticipate those sentiments, by the dissolution of the causes which would form them! This is what our author has done. His *reasonings and illustrations upon the personal and official attributes* of our LORD and SAVIOUR, are such as may be compared to the *correctness of anatomical know-*

*ledge, the delicacy of touch, and the astonishing preciseness of applying the probe and the knife, which we admire in the first surgeons of the age."*

A correct and memorable witness indeed, to the kind of treatment offered by these religionists to Him, whom, after His exposure on the cross, His true disciples reverently "took down," and "wrapped in fine linen," and "laid in a sepulchre wherein never man before was laid."

I will conclude by summing up in one sentence, which must be pardoned me if in appearance harsh, what the foregoing discussion is intended to show. There is a widely, though irregularly spread School of doctrine among us, within and without the Church, which intends and professes peculiar piety as directing its attention to the *heart itself*, not to any thing external to us, whether creed, actions, or ritual. I do not hesitate to assert that this doctrine is based upon error, that it is really a specious form of trusting man rather than God, that it is in its nature Rationalistic, and that it tends to Socinianism. How the individual supporters of it will act as time goes on is another matter,—the good will be separated from the bad; but the School, as such, will pass through Sabellianism, to that "God-denying Apostasy," to use the ancient phrase, to which in the beginning of its career it professed to be especially opposed.

OXFORD,

*The Feast of the Purification.*

N. B. For reasons, not necessary here to explain, it may be proper to observe, that this Tract was written before the commencement of 1836.

*Postscript.*

Since the above Essay was in type, an account of Dr. Schleiermacher's view of the doctrine of the Trinity, as contained in an American Periodical<sup>1</sup>, has been put into the writer's hands, and raises very painful feelings.

It seems, indeed, impossible to doubt that a serious doctrinal error is coming as a snare over the whole of the Protestant part of Christendom, (every part, at least, which is not fallen into worse and more avowed heterodoxy,) being the result of an attempt of the intellect to delineate, philosophise, and justify that religion (so called) of the heart and feelings, which has long prevailed. All over the Protestant world,—among ourselves, in Ireland, in Scotland, in Germany, in British America,—the revival of religious feeling during the last century has taken a peculiar form, difficult to describe or denote by any distinct appellation, but familiarly known to all who ever so little attend to what is going on in the general Church. It has spread, not by talents or learning in its upholders, but by their piety, zeal, and sincerity, and its own incidental and partial truth. At length, as was natural, its professors have been led to a direct contemplation of it, to a reflection upon their own feelings and belief, and the genius of their system; and thence has issued that philosophy of which Mr. Erskine and Mr. Abbott have in the foregoing pages afforded specimens.

The American publication above alluded to, is a melancholy evidence that the learning and genius of Germany are to be made to bear, by the theologians of the United States, in favour of this same (as the writer must call it) spurious Christianity. Some passages from it shall be here extracted, which will be found to tend to one or other of these three objects, all of them more or less professed in the two works above analysed.

1. That the one object of the Christian Revelation, or Dispensation, is to stir the affections, and soothe the heart.

<sup>1</sup> The Biblical Repository, Nos. 18 and 19; in which is translated and reviewed "Schleiermacher's Comparison of the Athanasian and Sabellian views of the Trinity."

2. That it really contains nothing which is unintelligible to the intellect.

3. That misbelievers, such as Socinians, &c., are made so, for the most part, by Creeds; which are to be considered as the great impediments to the spread of the Gospel, both as being stumbling-blocks to the reason, and shackles and weights on the affections.

“With regard to Schleiermacher’s views as a Trinitarian, I can truly say that I have met with scarcely any writer, ancient or modern, who appears to have a deeper conviction of, or more hearty belief in, the doctrine of the real Godhead of the FATHER, SON, and HOLY SPIRIT. . . . ‘God manifest in the flesh,’ seems to be inscribed, in his view, on every great truth of the Gospel, and to enter as a necessary ingredient into the composition of its essential nature. Yet Schleiermacher was not made a Trinitarian by creeds and confessions. Neither the Nicene nor Athanasian symbol, nor any succeeding formula of Trinitarian doctrine, built on this, appears to have had any influence in the formation of his views. From the Scriptures, and from arguments flowing, as he believed, out of Scriptural premises, he became, and lived, and died, a hearty and constant believer in the One Living and True GOD, *revealed to us as FATHER, SON, and HOLY GHOST*. . . . He ventured to inquire whether, in the vehemence of dispute, and in the *midst of philosophical mists*, the former survey had been in all respects made with thorough and exact skill and care, and whether a report of it *in all respects intelligible and consistent* had been made out.”—Translator, No. 18, p. 268, 9.

“After defending in various places, in the most explicit manner, and with great ability, the doctrine of the Godhead of the SON and SPIRIT, and *showing that such a development of the Deity is demanded by our moral wants, as sinners, in order that we may obtain peace and sanctification*; he concludes,” &c. *ibid*.

“Of his view of the Trinity, we may at least say that *it is intelligible*. But who will venture to say, that any of the definitions heretofore given of personality in the Godhead in itself considered, I mean such definitions as have their basis in the Nicene or Athanasian Creeds, are *intelligible and satisfactory* to the mind?” p. 277.

“The sum of Schleiermacher’s opinions. . . is that. . . the Unity. . . is GOD *in se ipso*; . . . but as to the Trinity, the FATHER is GOD as revealed in the works of creation, providence, and legislation; the SON is GOD in human flesh, the divine Logos incarnate; the HOLY GHOST is GOD the Sanctifier, who renovates the hearts of sinners, and dwells in the hearts of believers. The personality of the Godhead consists in these developments, made in time, and made to intelligent and rational beings. Strictly speaking, personality is not in his view eternal; and from the nature of the case as thus viewed, it could not be, because it consists in developments of the Godhead to intelligent beings,” &c. p. 317.

“That God has developed Himself in these three different ways, is what they [Sabellius and Schleiermacher] believe to be taught in the Scriptures, and to be commended to our spiritual consciences by the nature of our wants, woes, and sins.” No. 19, p. 81.

“Dr. Schleiermacher asks, with deep emotion, what more is *demanded*? what more is *necessary*? what more can *further the interest of practical piety*?” p. 82.

“I can see no *contradiction*, no *absurdity*, nothing even *incongruous* in the supposition, that the Divine Nature has *manifested* itself as FATHER,” &c. p. 88.

“Why should it ever have any more been overlooked that the names FATHER, &c., are names that have a *relative* sense . . . than that such names as Creator,” &c. p. 110.

“It may be proper for me to say, that the results of this re-examination of the doctrine of the Trinity are, in their essential parts, the same which I some years since advocated in my letters addressed to the Rev. Dr. Channing,” &c. p. 115.

These extracts are perhaps sufficient to justify the apprehensions above expressed, as far as the more religious part of Protestant America is concerned. It is believed that Protestant France, as well as Germany, could be made to afford similar evidence of the Sabellian tendencies of the day.

[FIFTH EDITION.]

---

*These Tracts are continued in Numbers, and sold at the price of 2d. for each sheet, or 7s. for 50 copies.*

LONDON: PRINTED FOR J. G. F. & J. RIVINGTON,  
ST. PAUL'S CHURCH YARD, AND WATERLOO PLACE.  
1841.

---

GILBERT & RIVINGTON, Printers, St. John's Square, London.

## TRACTS FOR THE TIMES.

## CATENA PATRUM.

## No. I.

TESTIMONY OF WRITERS IN THE LATER ENGLISH CHURCH TO THE  
DOCTRINE OF THE APOSTOLICAL SUCCESSION.

---

*The Baptism of John, whence was it? from heaven or of men? And they reasoned among themselves, saying, If we shall say, From heaven, He will say unto us, Why did ye not then believe him? But if we shall say, Of men, we fear the people; for all hold John as a prophet.*

---

PERSONS who object to our preaching distinctly and unhesitatingly the doctrine of the Apostolical succession, must be asked to explain, why we may not do what our Fathers in the Church have done before us, or whether they too, as well as we, are mistaken, or injudicious theorists, or Papists, in so doing? This question is here plainly put to them; and at the same time the attention of inquirers, who have not made up their minds on the subject, is invited to the answer, if any is forthcoming, from the parties addressed.

The doctrine in dispute is this; that CHRIST founded a visible Church as an ordinance for ever, and endowed it once for all with spiritual privileges, and set His Apostles over it, as the first in a line of ministers and rulers, like themselves except in their miraculous gifts, and to be continued from them by successive ordination; in consequence, that to adhere to this Church thus distinguished, is among the ordinary duties of a Christian, and is

the means of his appropriating the Gospel blessings with an evidence of his doing so not attainable elsewhere.

The passages quoted below contain, it is presumed, this doctrine; but they are not intended as more than tokens and suggestions of the full testimony, contained in the works of their great authors.

*List of Authors cited.*

- |                    |                     |
|--------------------|---------------------|
| 1. Bilson.         | 23. Wake.           |
| 2. Hooker.         | 24. Potter.         |
| 3. Bancroft.       | 25. Nelson.         |
| 4. Andrews.        | 26. Kettlewell.     |
| 5. Hall.           | 27. Hicks.          |
| 6. Laud.           | 28. Law.            |
| 7. Bramhall.       | 29. Johnson.        |
| 8. Mede.           | 30. Dodwell.        |
| 9. Mason.          | 31. Collier.        |
| 10. Sanderson.     | 32. Leslie.         |
| 11. Hammond.       | 33. Wilson.         |
| 12. Taylor.        | 34. Bingham.        |
| 13. Heylin.        | 35. Skelton.        |
| 14. Allestrie.     | 36. Samuel Johnson. |
| 15. Pearson.       | 37. Horne.          |
| 16. Fell.          | 38. W. Jones.       |
| 17. Bull.          | 39. Horsley.        |
| 18. Stillingfleet. | 40. Heber.          |
| 19. Kenn.          | 41. Jebb.           |
| 20. Beveridge.     | 42. Van Mildert.    |
| 21. Sharp.         | 43. Mant.           |
| 22. Scott.         |                     |



BILSON, BISHOP.—*Perpetual Government of Christ's Church*,  
ch. ix. p. 105<sup>1</sup>.

It will happily [haply] be granted the Apostles had their prerogative and pre-eminence above others in the Church of CHRIST; but that limited to their persons, and during for their lives, and, therefore, no reason can be made for their superiority, to force the like to be received and established in the Church of CHRIST for all ages and places; since their office and function are long since ceased, and no like power reserved to their successors after them. I do not deny but many things in the Apostles were personal, &c. . . . yet, that all their gifts ended with their lives, and no part of their charge and power remained to their after-comers, may neither be confessed by us, nor affirmed by any, unless we mean wholly to subvert the Church of CHRIST. . . . The Scriptures, once written, suffice all ages for instruction; the miracles then done, are for ever a most evident confirmation of their doctrine; the authority of their first calling liveth yet in their succession; and time and travel, joined with GOD's graces, bring pastors at this present to perfection; yet the Apostles' charge to teach, baptize, and administer the LORD'S Supper, to bind and loose sinners in heaven and in earth, to impose hands for the ordaining of pastors and elders, these parts of the Apostolic function and charge are not decayed, and cannot be wanted in the Church of GOD. There must either be no Church, or else these must remain; for without these no Church can continue.

<sup>1</sup> As quoted by Dr. Spry in his Bampton Lectures, p. 311.

HOOKER, PRESBYTER AND DOCTOR.—*Ecclesiastical Polity*,  
Book v. § 77.

. . . In that they are CHRIST'S ambassadors and His labourers, who should give them their commission, but He whose most inward affairs they manage? Is not GOD alone the FATHER of spirits? Are not souls the purchase of JESUS CHRIST? What angel in heaven could have said to man, as our Lord did unto Peter, "Feed my sheep,—preach—baptize—do this in remembrance of Me. Whose sins ye retain, they are retained; and their offences in heaven pardoned, whose faults you shall on earth forgive?" What think we? Are these terrestrial sounds, or else are they voices uttered out of the clouds above? The power of the ministry of GOD, translateth out of darkness into glory; it raiseth man from the earth, and bringeth GOD Himself from heaven; by blessing visible elements it maketh them invisible graces; it giveth daily the HOLY GHOST; it hath to dispose of that flesh which was given for the life of the world, and that blood which was poured out to redeem souls; when it poureth malediction upon the heads of the wicked, they perish; when it revoketh the same, they revive. O wretched blindness, if we admire not so great power; more wretched if we consider it aright, and, notwithstanding, imagine that any but GOD can bestow it! To whom CHRIST hath imparted power, both over that mystical body which is the society of souls, and over that natural which is Himself, for the knitting of both in one, (a work which antiquity doth call the making of CHRIST'S body,) the same power is in such not amiss both termed a kind of mark or character, and acknowledged to be indelible. . . . "Receive the HOLY GHOST; whose sins soever ye remit, they are remitted; whose sins ye retain, they are retained." Whereas, therefore, the other Evangelists had set down, that CHRIST did before His suffering promise to give His Apostles the keys of the kingdom of heaven, and being risen from the dead, promised moreover at that time a miraculous power of the HOLY GHOST, St. John addeth, that He also invested them even then with the power of

the HOLY GHOST for castigation and relaxation of sin, wherein was fully accomplished that which the promise of the keys did import. Seeing therefore, that the same power is now given, why should the same form of words expressing it be thought foolish ?

*Ibid.* § 68.

Now the privilege of the visible Church of GOD (for of that we speak) is to be herein like the ark of Noah, that, for any thing we know to the contrary, all without it are lost sheep ; yet in this was the ark of Noah privileged above the Church, that whereas none of them which were in the one could perish, numbers in the other are cast away, because to eternal life our profession is not enough.

BANCROFT, ARCHBISHOP.—*Sermon preached at Paul's Cross.*

This hath ever been reckoned a most certain ground and principle in religion, that that Church, which maintaineth without error the faith of CHRIST, which holdeth the true doctrine of the Gospel in matters necessary to salvation, and preacheth the same, which retaineth the lawful use of those Sacraments only which CHRIST hath appointed, and which appointeth vice to be punished, and virtue to be maintained, notwithstanding in some other respects, and in some points, it have many blemishes, imperfections, nay divers and sundry errors, is yet to be acknowledged for the Mother of the faithful, the House of GOD, the Ark of Noah, the pillar of Truth, and the spouse of CHRIST. From which Church whosoever doth separate himself, he is to be reckoned a schismatic or an heretic. . . .

There are many causes set down by the said ancient Fathers, why so many false prophets do go out into the world ; but I will only touch four ; whereof I find the contempt of Bishops especially to be one ; for unto them, as St. Jerome saith, ever since St. Mark's time, the care of Church Government hath been committed ; they had authority over the rest of the ministry. . . . " that the seed of schism might be taken away, &c."

Read the Scriptures, but with sobriety ; if any man presuming upon his knowledge, seek further than is meet for him, besides

that he knoweth nothing as he ought to know, he shall cast himself into a labyrinth, and never find that he seeketh for. GOD hath bound Himself by His promise unto His Church of purpose, that men by her good direction might in this point be relieved; to whose godly determination in matters of question, her dutiful children ought to submit themselves without any curious or wilful contradiction. I could bring many authorities to this effect.

ANDREWS, BISHOP AND DOCTOR.—*Sermons on Whitsunday,*  
No. 9. (*Works*, p. 695.)

The HOLY GHOST may be received more ways than one. He hath many *spiramina*; *πολυτρόπως*, “in many manners” He comes; and *multiformis gratia* He comes with. He and they carry the name of their cause; and to receive them is to receive the SPIRIT. There is a *gratum faciens*, the saving grace of the SPIRIT, for one to save himself by, received by each, without respect to others; and there is a *gratis data* (whatever become of us) serving to save others by, without respect to ourselves. And there is *χάρις διακονίας*, the grace of a holy calling, for it is a grace, to be a conduit of grace any way. All these; and all from one and the same SPIRIT.

That was here conferred, (in John xx. 22.) was not the saving grace of inward sanctimony; they were not “breathed on” to that end. The Church to this day gives this still in her ordinations, but the saving grace the Church cannot give; none but GOD can give that. Nor the *gratis data* it is not. That came by the tongues, both the gift of speaking divine languages, and the gift of *ἀποφθέγγεσθαι*, speaking wisely, and to the purpose: and (we know) none is either the holier or the learner by his ordination.

Yet a grace it is. For the very office itself is a grace; *mihi data est hæc gratia*, saith the Apostle, in more places than one; and speaks of his office and nothing else. The Apostleship was a grace, yet no saving grace. Else, should Judas have been saved. Clearly then, it is the grace of their calling (this) whereby they were sacred and made persons public, and their acts authentical, and they

enabled to do somewhat about the remission of sins, that is not (of like avail) done by others, though perhaps, more learned and virtuous than they, in that they have not the like *mitto vos*, nor the same *accipite* that these have.

*Ibid.*—*Sermon on Absolution.* (*Appendix*, p. 90.)

The power of remitting sin is originally in GOD, and in GOD alone. And CHRIST our SAVIOUR, by means of the union of the Godhead and manhood into one person, by virtue whereof “The Son of man hath power to forgive sins upon earth.”

This power being thus solely vested in GOD, He might, without wrong to any, have retained and kept to Himself, and without means of word or sacrament, and without ministers, either apostles or others, have exercised immediately by Himself from Heaven. But we should then have said of the remission of sins, saith St. Paul, “Who shall go up to heaven for it, and fetch it thence? for which cause,” saith he, “the righteousness of faith speaketh thus, Say not so, &c.”

Partly this, but there should be no such difficulty to shake our faith, as once to imagine to fetch CHRIST from heaven for the remission of our sins; and partly also, because CHRIST, to whom alone this commission was originally granted, having ordained Himself a body, would work by bodily things, and having taken the nature of a man upon Him, would honour the nature He had so taken, for these causes; that which was His, and His alone, He vouchsafed to impart, and out of His commission to grant a commission, and thereby to associate them to Himself, (it is His own word by the prophet) and to make them *συνέργους*, that is *cooperatores*, workers together with Him (as the Apostle speaketh) to the work of salvation, both of themselves and of others. From GOD then it is derived; from GOD and to men. \* \* \*

Now if we ask, to what men? the text is plain. They to whom CHRIST said this *Remiseritis*, were the Apostles.

In the Apostles, (that we may come nearer yet) we find three capacities as we may term them, 1. As Christians in general. 2. As preachers, priests, or ministers, more special. 3. As

those twelve persons, whom in strict propriety of speech, we term the Apostles.

Some things that CHRIST spake to them, He spake to them as representing the whole company of Christians ; as His *Vigilate*.

Some things to them, not as Christians, but as preachers or priests ; as His *Ite prædicate Evangelium* and his *Hoc facite* ; which no man thinketh all Christians may do.

And some things to themselves personally : as that He had appointed them witnesses of His miracles and resurrection, which cannot be applied but to them and them in person. It remaineth we inquire, in which of these three capacities CHRIST imparted to them this commission.

Not to the Apostles properly ; that is, this was no personal privilege to be in them, and to die with them, that they should only execute it for a time, and none ever after them. GOD forbid we should so think it. For, this power being more than needful for the world, (as in the beginning it was said,) it was not to be either personal, or for a time ; then those persons dying, and those times determining, them in the ages following (as we now in this) that should light into this prison or captivity of sin, how could they or we receive any benefit by it ? Of nature, it is said by the heathen philosopher, that it does neither *abundare in superfluis*, nor *deficere in necessariis*. GOD forbid, but we should ascribe as much to GOD at the least, that neither He would ordain power superfluous or more than needed, or else, it being needful, would appropriate it unto one age, and leave all other destitute of it ; and not rather, as all writers both new and old take it, continue it successively to the world's end.

And as not proper to the Apostles' persons, so neither common to all Christians in general, nor in the persons of all Christians conveyed to them. Which thing the very circumstances of the text do evict. For He sent them first, and after inspired them ; and after both these, gave them this commission. Now all Christians are not so sent, nor all Christians inspired with the grace or gift of the SPIRIT, that they were here. Consequently, it was not intended to the whole society of Christians. Yea, I add, that forasmuch as these two, both these two, must go before it, *Missio*

and *Inspiratio*, that though God inspire some laymen, if I may have leave so to term them, with very special graces of knowledge to this end, yet inasmuch as they have not the former, of sending, it agreeth not to them, neither may they exercise it, until they be sent, that is, until they have their calling thereunto.

It being then neither personal, nor peculiar to them as Apostles, nor again common to all as Christians, it must needs be committed to them as ministers, priests, or preachers; and consequently to these that in that office and function do succeed them, to whom this commission is still continued. Neither are they, that are ordained or instituted to that calling, ordained or instituted by any other words or verse than this (John xx. 23). Yet not so, that absolutely without them, God cannot bestow it, on whom or when Him pleaseth; or that He is bound to this means only, and cannot work without it. For, *gratia Dei non alligatur mediis*, the grace of God is not bound but free, and can work without means either of word or sacrament; and as without means, so without ministers, how and when to Him seemeth good. But speaking of that which is proper and ordinary, in the course by Him established, this is an ecclesiastical act, committed as the residue of the ministry of reconciliation to ecclesiastical persons. And if at any time He vouchsafe it by others that are not such, they be in that case *Ministri necessitatis, non officii*, in case of necessity ministers, but by office not so. \* \*

The remission of sins, as it is from God only, so it is by the death and blood-shedding of Christ alone; but for the applying of this unto us, there are divers means established. \* \* \* In the institution of Baptism there is a power to that end. \* \* 2. Again, there is also another power for the remission of sins, in the institution of the Holy Eucharist. \* \* 3. Besides, in the word itself there is a like power ordained. "Now are you clean," saith Christ, (no doubt from their sins) *propter Sermonem hunc*. And the very name giveth as much, that it is entitled, "The Word of Reconciliation." 4. Further there is to the same effect a power in prayer, and that in the priests' prayers, "Call for the Priests," saith the Apostle, "and let them pray for the sick person, and if he have committed sin, it shall be forgiven him." All

and every of them, are acts for the remission of sins : and in all and every of these, is the minister required, and they cannot be dispatched without him.

But the ceremonies and circumstances that here (John xx. 23.) I find used, prevail with me to think, that there is somewhat here imparted to them, that was not before. For it carrieth no likelihood, that our SAVIOUR bestowing on them nothing here, but that which before He had, would use so much solemnity, so diverse and new circumstances, no new or diverse grace being here communicated. \* \* \* I take it to be a power distinct from the former, and (not to hold you long) to be the accomplishment of the promise made (Matt. xvi. 19.) of the power of the keys, which here in this place and in these words is fulfilled ; and have therein for me, the joint consent of the Fathers. Which being a different power in itself, is that which we call the act or benefit of absolution ; in which, as in the rest, there is in the due time and place of it, an use for the remission of sins.

HALL, BISHOP AND CONFESSOR.—*On Episcopacy*, Pt. iii. p. 9.

And for you, my dearly beloved brethren at home, for CHRIST'S sake, for the Church's sake, for your souls' sake be exhorted to hold to this holy institution of your blessed SAVIOUR and His unerring apostles, and bless GOD for Episcopacy. Do but cast your eyes a little back, and see what noble instruments of GOD'S glory He hath been pleased to raise up in this very Church of ours out of this sacred vocation ; what famous servants of GOD, what strong champions of truth, and renowned antagonists of Rome and her superstitions ; what admirable preachers, what incomparable writers, yea, what constant and undaunted martyrs and confessors, &c. . . . Neither doubt I but that it will please GOD, out of the same rod of Aaron, still to raise such blossoms and fruit, as shall win Him glory to all eternity. So you are to honour those your reverend pastors, to hate all factious withdrawals from that government, which comes the nearest of any Church upon earth to the Apostolical. . . . Let me therefore confidently shut up all with that resolute word of that blessed Martyr and



Saint, Ignatius. . . . "Let all things be done to the honour of God, give respect to your bishop as you would God should respect you. My soul for theirs which obey their bishop, presbyters, and deacons ; God grant that my portion may be the same with theirs." And let my soul have the same share with that blessed Martyr that said so. Amen.

LAUD, ARCHBISHOP AND MARTYR.—*Conference with Fisher.*  
xvi. 29.

"I am with you always unto the end of the world." Yes most certain it is,—present by His SPIRIT ; or else in bodily presence He continued not with His Apostles, but during His abode on earth. And this promise of His spiritual presence was to their successors ; else, why "to the end of the world?" The Apostles did not, could not, live so long. But then to the successors the promise goes no farther, than "I am with you always," which reaches to continual assistance, but not to divine and infallible.

"The Comforter the HOLY GHOST shall abide with you for ever." Most true again ; for the HOLY GHOST did abide with the Apostles, according to CHRIST'S promise thus made, and shall abide with their successors for ever, to comfort and preserve them.

*Ibid.*—xxv. 15.

CHRIST promised the Keys to St. Peter. (Matt. xvi.) True ; but so did He to all the rest of the Apostles (Matt. xviii. John xx.) and to their successors as much as to his. . . . St. Augustine is plain, "If this were said only of St. Peter, then the Church hath no power to do it," which God forbid ! The keys therefore were given to St. Peter and the rest in a figure of the Church, to whose power and for whose use they were given. But there's not one key in all that bunch, that can let in St. Peter's successor to a "more powerful principality" universal than the successors of the other Apostles had.

BRAMHALL, ARCHBISHOP AND CONFESSOR.—*Vindication of the Church of England.*—Discourse III.

I do also acknowledge that Episcopacy was comprehended in the Apostolic office, *tanquam trigonus in tetragono*, and the distinction was made by the Apostles, with the approbation of CHRIST; that the angels of the seven Churches in the Revelation were seven Bishops; that it is the most silly ridiculous thing in the world, to calumniate that for a Papal innovation, which was established in the Church before there was a Pope at Rome: which hath been received and approved in all ages since the very cradle of Christianity, by all sorts of Christians, Europeans, Africans, Asiatics, Indians, many of which never had any intercourse with Rome, nor scarcely ever heard of the name of Rome. If *semper, ubique, et ab omnibus* be not a sufficient plea, I know not what is.

But because I esteem them Churches not completely formed, do I, therefore, exclude them from all hopes of salvation? or esteem them aliens and strangers from the commonwealth of Israel? or account them formal schismatics? No such thing. First, I know there are many learned persons among them who do passionately affect Episcopacy; some of which have acknowledged it to myself, that their Church would never be rightly settled, until it was new moulded. Baptism is a sacrament, the door of Christianity, a matriculation into the Church of Christ: yet the very desire of it in case of necessity, is sufficient to excuse from the want of actual Baptism. And is not the desire of Episcopacy sufficient to excuse from the actual want of Episcopacy, in like case of necessity? or should I censure these as Schismatics?

Secondly, there are others, who though they do not long so much for Episcopacy, yet they approve it, and want it only out of invincible necessity. In some places the sovereign prince is of another communion; the Episcopal chairs are filled with Roman Bishops. If they should petition for Bishops of their own, it would not be granted. In other places the magistrates have taken away Bishops: whether out of policy, because they thought that regiment not so proper for their republics, or be-

cause they were ashamed to take away the revenues, and preserve the order, or out of a blind zeal; they have given an account to GOD: they owe none to me. Should I condemn all these as schismatics for want of Episcopacy, who want it out of invincible necessity?

Thirdly, there are others who have neither the same desires, nor the same esteem of Episcopacy, but condemn it as an Anti-christian innovation, and a rag of Popery. I conceive this to be most gross schism materially. It is ten times more schismatical to desert, nay, to take away (so much as lies in them) the whole order of Bishops, than to subtract obedience from one lawful Bishop. All that can be said to mitigate this fault is, that they do it ignorantly, as they have been mistaught and misinformed. And I hope that many of them are free from obstinacy, and hold the truth implicitly in the preparation of their minds, being ready to receive it, when GOD shall reveal it to them. How far this may excuse (not the crime but) their persons from formal schism, either *a toto* or *a tanto*, I determine not, but leave them to stand or fall to their own Master.

But though these Protestants were worthy of this contumely, yet surely the Romanists are no fit persons to object it, whose *opinastrety* did hinder an uniform reformation of the Western Church. Who did invest Presbyters with Episcopal jurisdiction, and the power of ordaining and confirming, but the Court of Rome, by their commissions and delegations, for avaricious ends? And could they think that the world would believe, that necessity is not as strong and effectual a dispensation, as their mercenary Bulls? It is not at all material, whether Episcopacy and Priesthood be two distinct orders, or distinct degrees of the same orders, the one subordinate to the other; whether Episcopal ordination do introduce a new character, or extend the old. For it is generally confessed by both parties, Protestants and Roman Catholics, that the same power and authority is necessary to the extension of a character, or grace given by ordination, which is required to the Institution of a Sacrament that is not human but divine. These avaricious practices of that Court (though it be not commonly observed) were the first source of

these present controversies about Episcopacy, and Ecclesiastical discipline, which do now so much disturb the peace of the Church.

*Ibid.*—*Vindication of Grotius.*—Discourse III.

Excuse me for telling the truth plainly; many who have had their education among Sectaries and Non-conformists have apostated to Rome, but few or no right Episcopal Divines. Hot water freezeth the soonest.

He addeth, that "Grotius himself assures him (whom he hath reason to believe) that there were not a few such among the prelatial men." How! not a few such as these, who have apostated from the Church of England? For ingenuity's sake let him tell us where Grotius saith any such thing. Grotius hath not one word to his purpose, when it is duly examined. But this it is to confute books in less time than wise or modest men would require to read them.

Hitherto, he is not able to show us any tolerable reason of his warning. But he showeth us the occasion, p. 82, "Those that unchurch either all or most of the Protestant Churches, and maintain the Roman Church and not theirs to be true, do call us to a moderate jealousy of them." This is far enough from proving his bold suggestion, that they have a design to introduce the Pope into England. So though all he say were true; yet he can conclude nothing from thence to make good his accusation or insinuation. I wish he would forbear these imperfect enthymematical forms of argument, which serve only to cover deceit, and set down both his propositions expressly. His assumption is wanting, which should be this: but a considerable party of Episcopal divines in England do unchurch all or most of the Protestant Churches, and maintain the Roman Church to be a true Church, and these to be no true Churches. I can assent to neither of his propositions, nor to any part of them, as true, *sub modo*, as they are alleged by him.

First, I cannot assent to his major proposition, that all those who make an ordinary personal uninterrupted succession of Pastors, to be of the integrity of a true Church, (which is the ground of his

exception) have, therefore, an intention, or can justly be suspected thereupon to have any intention to introduce the Pope. The Eastern, Southern, and Northern Churches are all of them for such a personal succession, and yet all of them utter enemies to the Pope. Secondly, I cannot assent to his minor proposition, that either all or any considerable part of the Episcopal divines in England, do unchurch either all or most part of the Protestant Churches. No man is hurt but by himself. They unchurch none at all, but leave them to stand or fall to their own Master. They do not unchurch the Swedish, Danish, Bohemian Churches, and many other Churches in Polonia, Hungaria, and those parts of the world, who have an ordinary uninterrupted succession of Pastors, some by the names of Bishops, others under the name of Seniors, unto this day. (I meddle not with the Socinians :) they unchurch not the Lutheran Churches in Germany, who both assert Episcopacy in their confessions, and have actual superintendents in their practice, and would have Bishops, name and thing, if it were in their power. Let him not mistake himself: those Churches which he is so tender of, though they be better known to us by reason of their vicinity, are so far from being "all or most part of the Protestant Churches," that being all put together, they amount not to so great a proportion as the Britannick Churches alone. And if one secluded out of them all those who want an ordinary succession without their own faults, out of invincible ignorance or necessity, and all those who desire to have an ordinary succession either explicitly or implicitly, they will be reduced to a little flock indeed.

But let him set his heart at rest. I will remove this scruple out of his mind, that he may sleep securely upon both ears. Episcopal divines do not deny those Churches to be true Churches, wherein salvation may be had. We advise them, as it is our duty, to be circumspect for themselves, and not to put it to more question, whether they have ordination or not, or desert the general practice of the universal Church for nothing, when they may clear it if they please. Their case is not the same with those who labour under invincible necessity. What mine

own sense is of it, I have declared many years since to the world in print; and in the same way received thanks, and a public acknowledgment of my moderation from a French divine. And yet more particularly in my reply to the Bishop of Chalcedon, Pres. p. 144. and cap. i. p. 164. Episcopal divines will readily subscribe to the determination of the learned Bishop of Winchester, in his answer to the second epistle of Molineus. "Nevertheless, if our form (of Episcopacy) be of divine right, it doth not follow from thence, that there is not salvation without it, or that a Church cannot consist without it. He is blind who does not see churches consisting without it: he is hard-hearted who denyeth them salvation. We are none of those hard-hearted persons, we put a great difference between these things. There may be something absent in the exterior regiment, which is of divine right, and yet salvation to be had." This mistake proceedeth from not distinguishing between the true nature and essence of a Church, which we do readily grant them, and the integrity or perfection of a Church, which we cannot grant them, without swerving from the judgment of the Catholic Church.

MEDE, PRESBYTER.—*Sermon on Urim and Thummim.* Works, Book I. p. 186.

The Ministers of Christ must be *Lux Mundi*, the light of the world—*Vos estis Lux Mundi*—"Ye are the Light of the World: Ye are the World's Urim," saith Christ unto His Apostles. "For the lips of the priest should preserve knowledge, and they should learn the law at his mouth." This light of knowledge, this teaching knowledge, is the Urim of every Levite; and therefore Christ, when He inspired His Apostles with knowledge of heavenly mysteries, He sent a new Urim from above, even fiery tongues of Urim from heaven. He sent no fiery heads, but fiery tongues; for it is not sufficient for a Levite to have his head full of Urim, unless his tongue be a candle to show it to others. There came, indeed, no Thummim" [integrity or perfection] "from heaven, as there came an Urim; for though the Apostles were secured from errors, they were not freed from sin; and yet we who are Levites

must have such a Thummim as may be gotten upon earth ; for St. Paul bids Titus in all things to show himself an example of good works, and this is a Thummim of Integrity. But, besides this Thummim, the Ministers of the Gospel have received from GOD more especially another Thummim, like unto that which was proper to the High Priest ; namely, the power of binding and loosing, which is, as it were, a power of oracle, to declare unto the people the remission of their sins, by the acceptance of CHRIST's sacrifice.

MASON, PRESBYTER.—*Vindiciæ Ecclesiæ Anglicanæ*, i. 2.

*Anglican.* Our Ministry is agreeable to Divine Scripture, and therefore holy. Nor do we doubt, that, when the Chief Shepherd shall appear, they who turn many to righteousness shall shine as the stars for ever and ever. However, what is your argument against our ministry ?

*Romanist.* Can a man be a lawful minister without a lawful call ?

*Anglican.* Of course not.

*Romanist.* If so, I pray tell me how the Anglican Church can defend her ministry. Surely I may address each of you in Harding's words to Jewel : " What say you, my master ? You bear yourself as though Bishop of Salisbury ; but how will you substantiate your call ? What is your warrant for ministering in the Word and Sacraments ?" &c. &c. . . I ask thee, Is your call inward or outward ?

*Anglican.* Both.

*Romanist.* An outward call, to be lawful, must be either immediately from CHRIST's mouth, as the Apostles were called, or mediately through the Church.

*Anglican.* Well ; we are called by GOD through the Church ; for it is He who gives " Pastors and Doctors for the perfecting of the Saints."

*Romanist.* They who are called by GOD through the Church, must derive their warrant and power by lawful succession from CHRIST and the Apostles. If you maintain you have proceeded from this origin, it is your business to prove it clearly to us ; to set forth and trace your genealogy. . . .

*Anglican.* The Ministers of the Anglican Church derive their imposition of hands in a lawful way from lawful Bishops, possessed of a lawful authority; and therefore their call is ordinary [not extraordinary, by miracles].

*Romanist.* But whence have these Bishops derived their power?

*Anglican.* From GOD, through the hands of Bishops before them, &c. &c.

SANDERSON, BISHOP AND CONFESSOR.—*Divine Right of  
Episcopacy.*

My opinion is, that Episcopal Government is not to be derived merely from Apostolical practice or institution, but that it is originally founded in the Person and Office of the Messiah, our blessed LORD JESUS CHRIST; who, being sent by our heavenly Father to be the Great Apostle (Heb. iii. 1), Bishop, and Pastor (1 Peter ii. 25) of His Church, and anointed to that office immediately after His baptism by John, with power and the HOLY GHOST (Acts x. 37, 38), descending then upon Him in a bodily shape (Luke iii. 22), did afterwards, before His ascension into Heaven, send and empower His holy Apostles, in like manner as His Father had before sent Him (John xx. 21), to execute the same Apostolical, Episcopal, and Pastoral Office, for the ordering and governing of His Church, until His coming again; and so the same office to continue in them and their successors unto the end of the world. (Matt. xxviii. 18—20.) This I take to be so clear, from these and other like texts of Scripture, that if they shall be diligently compared together, both between themselves and with the following practice of the Churches of CHRIST, as well in the Apostles' times as in the purest and primitive times nearest thereunto, there will be left little cause why any man should doubt thereof.

HAMMOND, PRESBYTER, DOCTOR, AND CONFESSOR.—*On the  
Power of the Keys. Preface.*

That the prime act of power enstated by CHRIST on his Apostles, as for the governing of the Church, (and exercising or banishing all devils out of it,) so for the effectual performing that



great act of charity to men's souls, reducing pertinacious sinners to repentance, should be so, either wholly dilapidated, or piteously deformed, as to continue in the Church, only under one of these two notions, either of an empty piece of formality, or of an engine of state and secular contrivance, (the true Christian use of shaming sinners into reformation, being well nigh vanished out of Christendom,) might by an alien, or an heathen, much more by the pondering Christian, be conceived very strange and unreasonable, were it not a little clear that we are fallen into those times, of which it was foretold by two Apostles, that in "these last days, there should come scoffers, walking after their own lusts," &c. . . . I shall design to infer no further conclusion, but only this, that they which live ill in the profession of a most holy faith . . . but especially they that discharge and banish out of the Church those means which might help to make the generality of Christians better, have the spirit of Antichrist working in them, even when they think themselves most zealously busied in beating down his kingdom. What those means are which might most effectually tend to the amending the lives of Christians, I shall need no farther to interpose my judgment, than, 1st, by submitting it to CHRIST, who put the keys into the Apostles' hands, on purpose as a means to exemplify the end of His coming. . . . 2nd, by minding myself and others what the Apostles say of this power, that it was given them *πρὸς οἰκοδομὴν*, to build up the Church of CHRIST, &c.

*Chapter 3.* The only difficulty remaining on the point, will be, who are the Apostles' successors in that power; and when the question is asked of that power, I must be understood of the power of governing the Church peculiarly, (of which the power of the keys was and is a principal branch,) for it must again be remembered that the Apostles are to be considered under a double notion, first, as planters, then as governors, of the Church. . . . Which distinction being premised, the question will now more easily be satisfied, being proposed in these terms; who were the Apostles' successors in that power, which concerned the governing their Churches which they planted? and first, I answer, that it being a matter of fact, or story, later than that the Scripture

can universally reach to, it cannot be fully satisfied or answered from thence. . . but will in the full latitude, through the universal Church in these times, be made clear, from the recent evidences that we have, viz. from the consent of the Greek and Latin Fathers, who generally resolve that Bishops are those successors.

TAYLOR, BISHOP, CONFESSOR, AND DOCTOR.—*On Episcopacy.*  
*Introduction.*

Antichrist must come at last, and the great apostasy foretold must be, and this not without means proportionable to the production of so great declensions of Christianity. "When ye hear of wars and rumours of wars, be not afraid," says our blessed SAVIOUR, "the end is not yet." It is not war that will do "this great work of destruction;" for then it might have been done long ere now. What then will do it? We shall know when we see it. In the mean time, when we shall find a new device, of which, indeed, the platform was laid, in Aërius and the Acephali, brought to a good possibility of completing a thing, that whosoever shall hear, his ears shall tingle, "an abomination of desolation standing where it ought not," "*in sacris*," in holy persons, and places, and offices, it is too probable that this is preparatory for the Antichrist, and grand apostasy.

For if Antichrist shall exalt himself above all that is called GOD, and in Scripture none but kings and priests are such, "*dii vocati, dii facti*," I think we have great reason to be suspicious, that he that divests both of their power, (and they are, if the king be Christian, in very near conjunction,) does the work of Antichrist for him; especially if the men whom it most concerns will but call to mind, that if the discipline or government which CHRIST hath instituted is that kingdom by which He governs all Christendom, (so themselves have taught us,) when they (to use their own expressions) throw CHRIST out of His kingdom; and then either they leave the Church without a head, or else put Antichrist in substitution.

We all wish that our fears in this and all things else may be vain, that what we fear may not come upon us; but yet that the abolition of episcopacy is the forerunner, and preparatory to the

great Apostasy, I have these reasons to show, at least, the probability. First, &c. \* \* \*

*Sections 2 and 3.* This government was by immediate substitution delegated to the Apostles, by CHRIST Himself, "in traditione clavium, inspiratione Spiritûs, in missione in Pentecosto." . . . . This power so delegated, was not to expire with their persons; for when the great Shepherd had reduced His wandering sheep into a fold, He would not leave them without "guides to govern" them, so long as the wolf might possibly prey upon them, and that is, till the last separation of the sheep from the goats. And this CHRIST intimates in that promise, "Ero vobiscum (Apostolis) usque ad consummationem seculi." "Vobiscum;" not with your persons, for they died long ago: but "vobiscum et vestri similibus," with Apostles to the end of the world. And, therefore, that the Apostolate might be successive and perpetual, CHRIST gave them a power of Ordination, that by imposing hands on others, they might impart that power which they received from CHRIST.

HEYLIN, PRESBYTER AND CONFESSOR.—*On Episcopacy*, i. 6.

The Church, at his (St. John's) departure, he left firmly grounded in all the points of faith and doctrine, taught by CHRIST our SAVIOUR, as well settled in the outward government, the polity and administration of the same, which had been framed by the Apostles, according to the pattern and example of their LORD and Master. For being that the Church was born of seed immortal, and they themselves, though excellent and divine, yet still mortal men, it did concern the Church, in a high degree, to be provided of a perpetuity, or, if you will, the immortality of overseers, both for the sowing of this seed, and for the ordering of the Church, or the field itself. This, since they could not do in person, they were to do it by successors, who by their office were to be the ordinary pastors of the Church, and the Vicars of CHRIST. Now, if you ask the Fathers who they were that were accounted in their times and ages the successors of the Apostles, they will with one accord make answer, that the Bishops were.

ALLESTRIE, PRESBYTER.—*Sermons, No. 16.*

The separateness of the functions of the Clergy, the incommunicableness of their offices to persons not separated for them, is so express a doctrine both of the letter of the text, and of the HOLY GHOST, that sure I need not to say more, though several heads of probation offer themselves; as first the condition of the callings, which does divide from the community and sets them up above it. And here I might tell you of “bearing rule,” of “thrones,” of “stars,” and “Angels,” and other words of a high sense, and yet not go out of the Scripture bounds, although the dignity did not die with the Scripture age, or expire with the Apostles; the age as low as Photius words it thus, *Τὸ ἀποστολικὸν, κ. τ. λ.* “That Apostolical and Divine dignity, which the Chief Priests are acknowledged to be possessed of by right of succession.” Styles which I could derive yet lower, and they are of a prouder sound than those the modest humble ears of this our age are so offended with. But these heights, it may be, would give umbrages; although it is strange that men should envy them to those, who are only exalted to them, that they may with the more advantage take them by the hands and lift them up to heaven. Those nearnesses to things above do but more qualify them to draw near to God, on your behalf, that these your Angels also may see the face of your FATHER which is in heaven, and those stars are, therefore, set in CHRIST’S right hand, that they may shed a blessing [blessed?] influence on you from thence. . . .

The censures of the Church, the burden of the keys, which (passing by the private use of them in voluntary penitences, and discipline upon the sick,) as they signify public exclusion out of the Church, for scandalous enormities, and re-admission into it upon repentance, have been sufficiently evinced to belong to the governors of the Church. The exercise of them is so much their work, that St. Paul calls them “the weapons of their spiritual warfare, by which they do cast down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bring into captivity every thought to the obedience of CHRIST,” (2 Cor. x. 4, 5.) a blessed victory, even for the conquered, and

these the only weapons to achieve it with. If those who sin scandalously, and will not hear the admonition of the Church, were cast out of the Church, if not religion, reputation would restrain them somewhat; not to be thought fit company for Christians, would surely make them proud against their vices. Shame, the designed effect of their censures, hath great pungen-  
cies; the fear of it does goad men into actions of the greatest hazard, and the most unacceptable; such as have nothing lovely in them, but are wholly distasteful. . . . Now, the infliction of these censures is so much the work to which Church governors are called by the HOLY GHOST, that they are equally called by Him to it and to Himself; both are alike bestowed upon them. "Receive the HOLY GHOST; whose sins ye retain, they are retained." (John xx. 22.) And in the first derivations of this office, it was performed with severities, such as this age, I doubt, will not believe; and when they had no temporal sword to be auxiliary to these spiritual weapons.

PEARSON, BISHOP AND DOCTOR.—*On the Creed*, Article ix.

[After considering the Church as one, by reason of its one foundation, faith, ministry of sacrament, hope, and charity, he continues,—]

Lastly, all the Churches of GOD are united into one by the unity of discipline and government, by virtue whereof the same CHRIST ruleth in them all. For they have all the same pastoral guides appointed, authorized, sanctified, and set apart by the appointment of GOD, by the direction of the SPIRIT, to direct and lead the people of GOD in the same way of eternal salvation: as, therefore, there is no Church where there is no order, no ministry; so, where the same order and ministry is, there is the same Church. \* \* \*

The necessity of believing the Holy Catholick Church appeareth first in this, that CHRIST hath appointed it as the only way unto eternal life. We read at the first, "The LORD added to the Church daily such as should be saved;" and what was then daily done hath been done since continually. CHRIST never appointed two ways to heaven; nor did He build a Church to save some,

and make another institution for other men's salvation. "There is none other name under Heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved," but the name of JESUS; and that is no otherwise given under Heaven than in the Church. As none were saved from the Deluge but such as were within the ark of Noah, formed for their reception by the command of GOD; as none of the first-born of Egypt lived, but such as were within those habitations whose door-posts were sprinkled with blood by the appointment of GOD for their preservation; as none of the inhabitants of Jericho could escape the fire or sword, but such as were within the house of Rahab, for whose protection a covenant was made; so none shall ever escape the eternal wrath of GOD, which belong not to the Church of GOD. This is the congregation of those persons here on earth which shall hereafter meet in heaven. These are the vessels of the tabernacle carried up and down, at last to be translated into and fixed in the Temple.

Next, it is necessary to believe the Church of CHRIST, which is but one, that, being in it, we may take care never to cast ourselves, or be ejected, out of it. There is a power within the Church to cast those out which do belong to it: for if any neglect to hear the Church, saith our SAVIOUR, let him be unto thee as a heathen man and a publican. By great and scandalous offences, by incorrigible misdemeanors, we may incur the censure of the Church of GOD; and while we are shut out by them, we stand excluded out of Heaven. For our SAVIOUR said to His Apostles, upon whom He built His Church, "Whosoever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them; and whosoever sins ye retain, they are retained." Again, a man may not only passively and involuntarily be ejected, but also may, by an act of his own, cast out or eject himself, not only by plain and complete apostasy, but by a defection from the unity of truth, falling into some damnable heresy; or by an active separation, deserting all which are in communion with the Catholick Church, and falling into an irrevocable schism.

FELL, BISHOP AND CONFESSOR.—*On Ephesians, v. 9.*

Apostles, . . . Prophets, . . . Evangelists, . . . Pastors, . . .

and Teachers . . . . For the three first, some part of their function was temporary and extraordinary ; in what was ordinary and perpetual, Bishops succeeded.

BULL, BISHOP AND DOCTOR.—*Vindication of the English Church*, § 24.

We proceed, in the next place, to the constant visibility and succession of Pastors in our Church . . . . . And here I make him this fair proposal: let him, or any one of his party, produce any one solid argument to demonstrate such a succession of Pastors in the Church of Rome, and I will undertake by the very same argument to prove a like succession in our Church. Indeed, . . . . the Author of the Letter is concerned, no less than we are, to acknowledge such a succession of lawful pastors in our Church, till the time of the Reformation ; and if we cannot derive our succession since, it is a hard case. But our records, faithfully kept and preserved, do evidence to all the world an uninterrupted succession of Bishops in our Church, canonically ordained, derived from such persons in whom a lawful power of ordination was seated by the confession of the Papists themselves. For the story of the Nag's Head Ordination is so putrid a fable, so often and so clearly refuted by the writers of our Church, that the more learned and ingenuous Papists are now ashamed to make use of it.

STILLINGFLEET, BISHOP.—*Unreasonableness of Separation* ;  
*Preface*.

. . . . Unthinking people . . . . are carried away with mere noise and pretences, and hope these will secure them most against the fears of Popery, who talk with most passion, and with least understanding, against it ; whereas no persons do really give them greater advantages than these do. For, where they meet only with intemperate railings, and gross misunderstandings of the state of the controversies between them and us (which commonly go together), the most subtle priests let such alone to spend their rage and fury ; and when the heat is over, they will calmly endeavour to let them see how grossly they have been deceived

in some things, and so will more easily make them believe, they are as much deceived in all the rest. And thus the East and West may meet at last, and the most furious antagonists may become some of the easiest converts. This I do really fear will be the case of many thousands among us, who now pass for most zealous Protestants; if ever, which God forbid, that religion should come to be uppermost in England. It is, therefore, of mighty consequence for preventing the return of Popery, that men rightly understand what it is. For, when they are as much afraid of an innocent ceremony as of real idolatry, and think they can worship images and adore the Host on the same grounds that they may use the sign of the cross, or kneel at the Communion, when they are brought to see their mistake in one case, they will suspect themselves deceived in the other also. . . . When they find undoubted practices of the Ancient Church condemned as Popish and Antichristian by their teachers, they must conclude Popery to be of much greater antiquity than really it is; and when they can trace it so very near the Apostles' times, they will soon believe it settled by the Apostles themselves. For it will be very hard to persuade any considering men, that the Christian Church should degenerate so soon, so unanimously, so universally, as it must do, if Episcopal government, and the use of some significant ceremonies, were any parts of that apostasy. . . . Three ways, Bishop Sanderson observes, our dissenting brethren, though not intentionally and purposely, yet really and eventually, have been the great promoters of the Roman interest among us; (1) by putting-to their helping hand to the pulling down of Episcopacy. . . . (2) by opposing the interest of Rome with more violence than reason; (3) by frequently mistaking the question, but especially through the necessity of some false principle or other, which, having once imbibed, they think themselves bound to maintain, whatever becomes of the common cause of our Reformation.

KEN, BISHOP AND CONFESSOR.—*Exposition of the Church Catechism.*

I believe, O blessed and adorable Mediator, that the Church is



a society of persons, founded by Thy love to sinners, united into one body of which Thou art the head, initiated by baptism, nourished by the Eucharist, governed by pastors commissioned by Thee, and endowed with the power of the keys, professing the doctrine taught by Thee and delivered to the saints, and devoted to praise and to love Thee.

I believe, O holy JESUS, that Thy Church is holy like Thee its Author; holy by the original design of its institution, holy by baptismal dedication, holy in all its administrations which tend to produce holiness; and though there will be always a mixture of good and bad in it in this world, yet that it has always many real saints in it; and, therefore, all love, all glory, be to Thee. . . .

Glory be to Thee, O LORD my GOD, who hast made me a member of the particular Church of England, whose faith, government, and worship are Holy, and Catholic, and Apostolic, and free from the extremes of irreverence and superstition, and which I firmly believe to be a sound part of Thy Church universal, and which teaches me charity to those who dissent from me; and, therefore, all love, all glory be to Thee.

BEVERIDGE, BISHOP AND DOCTOR.—*Sermon on Christ's Presence with His Ministers.*

In the first place, I observe, how much we are all bound to acknowledge the goodness, to praise, magnify, and adore the name of the most high GOD, in that we were born and bred, and still live in a Church, wherein the Apostolical line hath, through all ages, been preserved entire, there having been a constant succession of such Bishops in it, as were truly and properly successors to the Apostles, by virtue of that Apostolical imposition of hands, which, being begun by the Apostles, hath been continued from one to another, ever since their time, down to ours. By which means, the same SPIRIT which was breathed by our LORD into His Apostles is, together with their office, transmitted to their lawful successors, the pastors and governors of our Church at this time; and acts, moves, and assists at the administration of the several parts of the Apostolical office in our days, as much as ever.

From whence it follows, that the means of grace which we now enjoy are in themselves as powerful and effectual as they were in the Apostles' days, &c. . . .

And this, I verily believe, is the great reason why the devil has such a great spite at our Church, still stirring up adversaries of all sorts against it,—Papists on the one hand, and Sectaries on the other, and all, if possible, to destroy it; even because the SPIRIT which is ministered in it, is so contrary to his nature, and so destructive of his kingdom, that he can never expect to domineer and tyrannize over the people of the land, so long as such a Church is settled among them, and they continue firm to it. . . .

As for schism, they certainly hazard their salvation at a strange rate, who separate themselves from such a Church as ours is, wherein the Apostolical succession, the root of all Christian communion, hath been so entirely preserved, and the word and sacraments are so effectually administered; and all to go into such assemblies and meetings, as can have no pretence to the great promise in my text. For it is manifest, that this promise was made only to the Apostles and their successors to the end of the world. Whereas, in the private meetings, where their teachers have no Apostolical or Episcopal imposition of hands, they have no ground to succeed the Apostles, nor by consequence any right to the SPIRIT which our LORD hath; without which, although they preach their hearts out, I do not see what spiritual advantage can accrue to their hearers by it, &c. . . .

SHARP, ARCHBISHOP.—*Sermons*, Vol. vii. *Of the Church*.

“Go,” He says, “and make disciples of all nations, baptizing them,” &c. . . . This commission of our SAVIOUR we may properly style the Charter of the Church; and mind, I pray, what is contained in it. Our SAVIOUR here declares the extent of His Church, and of what persons He would have it constituted. It was to extend throughout all the world, and to be made up of all nations. He here declares by whom He would have it built and constituted, viz., the Apostles. He here declares upon what grounds He would have it constituted, or upon what conditions any person was to be received into it, viz., their becoming the

disciples of JESUS CHRIST, and undertaking to observe all that He has commanded. He here likewise declares the form or the method by which persons were to be admitted into this Church, and that was by being baptized in the name of the FATHER, and of the SON, and of the HOLY GHOST. And, lastly, He here promises the perpetual presence of His HOLY SPIRIT, both to assist the apostles and their successors in the building and governing this Church, and to actuate and enliven all the members of it. . . . Thus, I am sure, I have given the true notion of the Church, which the Scripture always intends, when it speaks of the Church as the Body of CHRIST, when it speaks of the Church which CHRIST purchased with His blood, when it speaks of the Church into which we are baptized, when it speaks of the Church to which all those glorious promises are made of the forgiveness of sins, of the perpetual presence and assistance of the HOLY SPIRIT, of the gates of hell never prevailing against it, and of everlasting salvation in the world to come; I say, that Church is always meant of the whole company of Christians dispersed over all the world, that profess the common faith, (though perhaps none of them without mixture of error,) and enjoy the administration of the word and sacrament, under their lawful pastors and governors: all these people, wherever they live, or by what name soever they call themselves, make up together that one Body of CHRIST which we call the Catholic Church.

SCOTT, PRESBYTER.—*Christian Life*, Part ii. ch. 7.

Another thing wherein those particular Churches, into which the Catholic Church is distributed, do communicate with each other, is, in the essentials of Christian regiment and discipline: for though the particular modes and circumstances of Christian government and discipline are not determined by divine institution, but left for the most part free to the prudent ordering and disposal of the governors of particular Churches, yet there is a standing form of government and discipline in the Church, instituted by our SAVIOUR Himself, which, as I shall show hereafter, is this; that there should be an episcopacy, or order of men, authorized in a continual succession from the Apostles, (who were

authorized by Himself) to oversee and govern all those particular Churches into which the Church Catholic should be hereafter distributed ; to ordain, &c. &c. And this being the standing government and discipline of the Catholic Church, no particular Church or community of Christians can refuse to communicate in it, without dividing itself from the communion of the Church Catholic ; I say, “ refuse to communicate in it,” because it is possible for a Church to be without this government and discipline, which yet doth neither refuse it, nor the communion of any other Church for the sake of it. A Church may be debarred of it by unavoidable necessities, in despite of its power and against its consent. . . . Though this instituted government is necessary to the perfection of a Church, yet it doth not therefore follow, that it is necessary to the being of it. . . . But though a community of Christians *may* be a true part of the Catholic Church, and in communion with it, though it hath no episcopacy ; yet it is a plain case, that if it *rejects* the episcopacy, and separates from the communion of it, it thereby wholly divides itself from the communion of the Catholic Church.

WAKE, ARCHBISHOP.—*Exposition of the Doctrine of the English Church.* Art. 15.

The imposition of hands in Holy Orders, being accompanied with a blessing of the HOLY SPIRIT, may, perhaps, upon that account, be called a kind of particular sacrament. Yet since that grace, which is thereby conferred, whatever it be, is not common to all Christians, nor by consequence any part of that federal blessing which our blessed SAVIOUR has purchased for us, but only a separation of him who receives it to a special employ, we think it ought not to be esteemed a common sacrament of the whole Church, as Baptism and the LORD'S Supper are. . . . We confess that no man ought to exercise the ministerial office till he be first consecrated to it. We believe that it is the Bishop's part only to ordain. We maintain the distinction of the several orders in the Church ; and though we have none of them below a deacon, because we do not read that the Apostles had any, yet

we acknowledge the rest to have been anciently received in the Church, and shall not therefore raise any controversy about them.

WAKE.—Art. 25.

Professing in our Creed a Holy Catholic Church, we profess to believe not only that there was a Church planted by our SAVIOUR at the beginning, that has hitherto been preserved by Him, and ever shall be to the end of the world; but do in consequence undoubtedly believe too, that this universal Church is so secured by the promises of CHRIST, that there shall always be retained so much truth in it, the want of which would argue that there could be no such Church.

POTTER, ARCHBISHOP.—*On Church Government.* Chap. v.

First, then, it must be shown, that the office and character of all persons, who are admitted into holy orders, extends over the whole world, and it is manifest, in the first place, that the Apostles had a general commission to “teach and baptize,” and to execute all other parts of their office in all nations. As the bishops of the Church have been shown to succeed the Apostles in all the parts of their office which are of standing and constant use in the Church; so we might reasonably conclude, though we have no farther proof of it, that the office and character of bishop, and consequently of inferior ministers, extends over all the world, because those of the Apostles, their predecessors, did so; since there is scarce any reason why the Apostles’ authority should be universal, which will not hold, at least in some degree, for the same extent of authority in the bishops, as will appear from some of the following considerations:—

There is but one Catholic Church, whereof all particular Churches are members, and therefore, when any spiritual privilege or character is conferred on any particular Church, it must be understood to extend over the whole Catholic Church: thus by Baptism, men are not only made members of the particular Church where they happen to be baptized, but of the Catholic Church over the world; and therefore whoever has been lawfully

baptized in one Church, has a right to partake of the LORD'S Supper, and other Church privileges, in all other Churches, where he happens to come; whereas if baptism only admitted men into some particular Church, they must be re-baptized, before they can lawfully be received to communion in any diocese, where they have not been baptized already.

If it was not thus in holy orders, that they who have received them in one place, retain them in others; no minister could have authority to preach the Gospel or to administer the sacraments, or to exercise any other part of his functions beyond the particular district in which he was ordained; the consequence whereas is manifestly this, that the gospel of CHRIST must not be propagated, nor any churches erected, in countries where they had not stood even since the Apostles' times. For since there can be no ministers without ordination, as was before proved, so then they, who have been ordained in one country, may lawfully exercise their respective functions in others, where there are no ordained ministers already settled, or else those countries must remain for ever without ministers, and consequently without sacraments and other public offices of religion.

#### NELSON, CONFESSOR.—*Festivals and Fasts.*

The Church being a regular society founded by CHRIST, distinct from and independent of all other worldly societies, must naturally make us suppose that He instituted some Officers for the government of it. . . . [The] Powers peculiar to the superior Order being necessary for the good government of the Church, it is plain in fact they did not expire with the Apostles. But, as our SAVIOUR "glorified not Himself to be made an High Priest," but had His commission from GOD the FATHER, so after His resurrection, He invested the Apostles with the same commission His FATHER had given unto Him: "As My FATHER hath sent Me, even so send I you: and He breathed on them, and said unto them, Receive ye the HOLY GHOST." In which commission is plainly contained the authority of ordaining others, and a power to transfer that commission upon others, and those upon others to the end of the world. And to show that it was not

merely personal to the Apostles, our SAVIOUR promises to be with them and their successors in the execution of this commission, “even unto the end of the world.” . . . This commission the Apostles and their successors exercised in all places, and even in opposition to the Rulers that then were; so that the Church subsisted as a distinct society from the state, for above three hundred years, when the civil government was only concerned to suppress and destroy it. Indeed when the Church received the benefit of incorporation and protection from the state, she was content to suffer some limitation as to the exercise of these powers, and thought herself sufficiently recompensed by the advantages that accrued to her by the incorporation.

KETTLEWELL, PRESBYTER AND CONFESSOR.—*Practical Believer*, ii. 6.

*Question.* There remains yet one instance of the Communion of the Primitive Christians, mentioned by St. Luke, viz. their “continuing in the Apostles’ fellowship.” (Acts ii. 42.) I pray you what is meant by that?

*Answer.* Owing their authority and continuing under their government. They were appointed by CHRIST, as His deputies, to govern His Church; and, therefore, to adhere to them, as the delegates of CHRIST, is called living “in their fellowship.”

Q. But how can we live in their fellowship, and adhere to their government, now they are dead?

A. By adhering to and owing the authority of our own Bishops, who are their successors, and rule the Church in their stead.

HICKS, BISHOP AND CONFESSOR.—*Treatise on the Episcopal Order*, § 2.

Can you, Sir, when you consider that Bishops are appointed to succeed the Apostles, and, like them, to stand in CHRIST’s place, and exercise their kingly, priestly, and prophetic office over their flocks; can you, when you consider this, think it novel, or improper, or uncouth, to call them spiritual princes, and their dioceses principalities?—when they have every thing in their

office which can denominate a prince? For what is a prince but the chief ruler of a society, that hath authority over the rest to make laws for it, to challenge the obedience of all the members, and all ranks of men in it, and power to coerce them, if they will not obey? And now, Sir, I pray you attend to what follows, and then tell me, if the office of a Bishop contains not every thing that is in the definition of a chief or a prince. St. Ignatius, who was St. John's disciple, writes of the Bishop in his Epistle, &c.

*LAW.—Second letter to the Bishop of Bangor.*

“The priests of the sons of Levi shall come near; for them hath the LORD thy GOD chosen to minister unto Him, and to bless in the name of the Lord.” (Deut. xxi. 5.) Now, my LORD, this is what we mean by the authoritative administration of the Christian clergy: whether they be by way of benediction, or of any other kind. We take them to be persons whom GOD has chosen to minister unto Him, and to bless in His name. We imagine that our SAVIOUR was a greater priest and mediator than Aaron, or any of GOD's former ministers. We are assured that CHRIST sent His Apostles, as His FATHER had sent Him; and that, therefore, they were His true successors; and since they did commission others to succeed them in their office by the imposition of hands, as Moses commissioned Joshua to succeed him, the clergy who have succeeded the Apostles, have as divine a call and commission to their work, as those who were called by our SAVIOUR; and are as truly His successors as the Apostles themselves were.

*IBID.—Postscript.*

The third objection against this uninterrupted succession is this: that it is a popish doctrine, and “gives Papists advantage over us.” The objection proceeds thus: “We must not assert the necessity of this succession, because the Papists say it is only to be found in them.” I might add, because some mighty zealous Protestants say so too.

But if this be good argumentation, we ought not to tell the Jews, or Deists, &c., that there is any necessity of embracing Christ-



ianity, because the Papists say, Christians can only be saved in their Church. Again, we ought not to insist upon a true faith, because the Papists say, that a true faith is only in their communion. So that there is just as much Popery in teaching this doctrine, as in asserting the necessity of Christianity to a Jew, or the necessity of a right faith to a Socinian, &c.

JOHNSON, PRESBYTER.—*Unbloody Sacrifice*, Part II. Chap. 3.

The Eucharist is one, as offered by priests, who are one by their commission. It is very evident that it was not only our SAVIOUR'S intention, but His most passionate desire, that, as all His Apostles received their commission from Him, so they might execute it with such a harmony and consent of mind, that there might not be the least jarring between them; for thus He prays for them; "Keep through Thine own name those whom Thou hast given Me, that they may be one, as We are." And the foundation of our SAVIOUR'S wishes and expectations for so perfect an union between His Apostles was this, as is expressed by Himself, "I have given them the Words which Thou gavest Me," that is, He had committed to them the same treasures of Divine truth which the FATHER had before committed to him, &c. . . . After His resurrection, He does, with great solemnity, tell them, "As My FATHER sent Me, even so send I you;" from which words it is evident, that the commission of all the Apostles was one and the same; that it was such a commission as CHRIST Himself in His human nature, had received from His FATHER; and even they who were not of the same order with the Apostles, but only inferior Presbyters under them, yet by deriving their authority from the same fountain-head, and exercising it in conformity to the instructions which they received from them, they still kept the "unity of the Spirit in the bond of peace." . . It was upon this account that Ignatius, Cyprian, and others, represent the whole college of Bishops throughout the whole world as one person, sitting in one chair, attending one altar; and that, therefore, is the one Eucharist which is celebrated by this one priesthood: and St. Clement of Rome allows nothing to be offered without the inspection of the high priest; and, therefore, when a new altar is erected, a new

Bishop ordained in opposition to the former, then there is just occasion to ask that question, as St. Paul did, "Is CHRIST divided?" When two several pastors assume to themselves the privilege of offering and consecrating the Sacrament not only in two distinct places, but in contradiction to each other, and by two several inconsistent claims; then it is evident, that one of them acts by no commission, for if the true Eucharist can be had in two opposite assemblies, then CHRIST's flesh ceases to be one.

DODWELL, CONFESSOR.—*Discourse on the one Priesthood, one Altar.* Ch. 12.

I observe that the Hierophanta, in their mysteries represented a Divine Person. The same, in all probability, were the thoughts of the primitive Christians, concerning their Bishops. This I take to be the true design of that description of the Majestatic Presence in the Revelations, to represent the Divine Presence, and assistance in the Church, in as lively a way as possible, according to the ways of Mystical Representation received in those times. . . . St. John being particularly to affect the Churches he writes to, those of the Lydian or Proconsular Asia, with a very feeling sense of the Divine presence among them, (which might add the greater authority to his several exhortations respectively,) he represents our SAVIOUR in a human visible shape; and that the rest of the scene might be suitable, (that is, sensible also as well as Himself,) he personates the Angels by their visible Bishops, that so CHRIST might be apprehended as present with the Bishops, as GOD was supposed to be wherever these Seven Spirits were, which were peculiarly deputed to represent the Majestatic Presence. This I take to be the reason why he confines his number, not that by any geographical distinction those seven cities were incorporated into a body, more than others of that province, but that he had a particular regard to that number of those Angels of the presence. Therefore he makes seven candlesticks, alluding, as I have said, to the like number of those in the tabernacle, as emblems of those seven Churches. Therefore seven stars, alluding to the number of the Planets and the Angels who presided over them, as emblems of the Bishops of those Churches. . . . Thus it appears

plainly, that the Bishops are here represented in a mystical way ; and how particularly suitable it was, in this way, to personate them by the name of Angels. They were, indeed, to perform the same office under CHRIST, as a *visible* human person, which the Angels were under Him as the Logos, in reference to the restitution of souls to their original dignity . . . .

But because even His human nature, though visible in itself, is yet invisible to us, therefore another way was thought of for copying out that heavenly *τελετη*, even in the ordinary external visible government of the Church. And here the Bishop was to personate CHRIST Himself, as the High Priest had, formerly, represented the Logos. The seven deacons were to represent the Seven Mystical Angels, as I am very apt to think, they were designed from the very original. I cannot think it casual that the number first pitched on was exactly *seven*. But, that which more confirms me in this opinion is the real suitability of the office of the Deacon to the Bishops, as representing the Logos in a visible way, with that of those Angels to the same Logos, as He was invisible. The office of the Angels in general is thus described, by the Author of the Hebrews, that they are [“ministering spirits, sent out for a diaconate.”] These are exactly the very terms by which the Church would have expressed the office of these Deacons, if she had been to have described the same office as vested in mortal men. . . . They (the Angels) were to stand before the presence of GOD, in a posture of readiness to be sent on messages by Him ; and so were the Deacons to stand before the Bishop, to be sent by him on his messages. They were the “eyes of the LORD which ran to and fro through the whole earth.” So also the Deacons are, in the language of the Ancient Church, called the *Oculi Episcopi*, for the same reason. . . . Now we may not wonder why the Bishops are called Angels, in the forementioned mystical immediate relation to our SAVIOUR Himself as the chief “Bishop of our souls ;” because, indeed, in regard of Him, they bear no higher office than that of Deacons. . . . Accordingly the Primitive Church were extremely rigorous in insisting on this very number of their Deacons, in all places, as I

have elsewhere showed. The council of Neocæsarea imposed it as a universal rule, how great soever the Church were to which the Deacons were to serve ; . . . a canon, which, though it were at first designed only for their own province of Cappadocia, was, notwithstanding, afterwards extended, first, to the Eastern Empire . . . afterwards to the Western. . . Therefore, even then it is much more probable that this number was already received in more Churches than otherwise.

And now the comparisons of the Bishops in Ignatius cannot seem so strange, these things being considered, as they did to Blondell, who had considered none of them. They are generally designed to express the sacredness and excellency of the *persons* which the clergy bore in these mystical performances. Nor is there any thing in them that is really affected or strained, much less blasphemous, no, nor any extravagant flights of fancy. . . . If he were to compare them with the first invisible archetypes of unity, (as that is, indeed, his great design in those epistles, in opposition to the schisms then rising,) then it was very proper for him to take notice only of the two orders which were then immediately concerned in the office of ministration, and then to compare them with God the Father, and the Logos ; because as this unity consists in the unity of the Head, and the Scripture tells us that the Head of every man is CHRIST, so also the same Scripture tells us that the Head of CHRIST is GOD. . . These things, therefore, being thus solidly laid down by the first fathers, in their disputes against their contemporary Heretics and Schismatics, all the inferences thence deduced against them, will follow naturally and undeniably. . . It will follow, that disunion from the Bishop was a disunion from CHRIST and the FATHER, and from all the invisible heavenly Priesthood, and sacrifice, and intercession. It will follow that disunion from any one ordinary, must consequently be a disunion from the whole Catholic Church, seeing it is impossible for any to continue a member of CHRIST'S mystical body, who is disunited from the mystical head of it. It will follow that visible disunion from the external sacraments of the Bishop, is in the consequence a disunion from the Bishop, and

from the whole Catholic Church in communion with him, who ought to ratify each other's censures under pain of schism if they do not.

COLLIER, BISHOP AND CONFESSOR.—*Moral Essays*, Part III.

'Tis the bulk and serviceableness of business, and the use it has in the world, which makes an employment honourable. And can any thing compare with the Apostles in this particular? Were they not to form and instruct the Church, and to govern the most noble society upon earth? Were they not to publish the Mysteries of Redemption, the offers of the New Covenant, and the glories of the other world! . . . Fire in the figure of tongues sat upon the heads of each of them. This was an emblem of the gift of languages, and the miracle was as bright as the flame. . . . This was a glorious attestation, this must needs make their commission undisputed, and their character indelible. Should a Prince be proclaimed from the sky, anointed out of the Ampoul, and crowned by an Angel, his authority could not be more visible. . . . I can't help saying, that, in my opinion, a Prince made but a lean figure in comparison with an Apostle. What is the magnificence of palaces, the richness of furniture, the quality of attendance, what is all this to the pomp of miracles, and the grandeur of supernatural power? . . . A Prince can bestow marks of distinction, and posts of honour and authority; but he can't give the HOLY GHOST, he can't register his favourites among the quality of heaven, nor entitle them to the bliss of eternity. No, —these powers were Apostolic privileges, and the enclosure of the Church. The prerogative royal cannot stretch thus far; these jewels are not to be found in the imperial crown. . . . I need not tell you how much they suffered through their progress, and how gloriously they went off into the other world. But before their departure they took care to perpetuate their authority, and provide governors for the Church. Thus the jurisdiction was conveyed to Bishops and Priests; this succession has continued without interruption for above sixteen hundred years.

LESLIE, PRESBYTER AND CONFESSOR.—*Case of the Regale and Pontificate.*

When any constitution of civil government dissolves itself, another immediately succeeds ; or, if a Monarchy be turned into a Commonwealth, or a Commonwealth into a Monarchy : and consequently that which was dissolved, is no more ; but we cannot say that the Church is no more. There is still a Church, though in servitude, and nothing succeeds to it ; if it were dissolved, there would be no Church, but nothing would come in its room, unless you will say a privation, that is, the want of a Church. . . . The Church is a society spread over the earth ; and, therefore, cannot be dissolved in any one kingdom or state ; nor can the concessions of any national Church oblige the Church Catholic ; no, nor oblige that national Church herself, otherwise than according to the rules of the Catholic Church ; more than a Committee of the House of Lords or Commons can oblige the whole House, or govern themselves by any other rules than those which are prescribed by the House. . . .

The Church is laid as low and fenceless as the sand under their [Atheism, Deism, &c.] storms, which had long since overwhelmed the City of God, (after the change of her governors) if the Almighty promise (Matt. xvi. 18 ; xxviii. 20.) had not interposed to preserve some embers alive in the midst of these torrents. And they will be preserved till the time appointed by God shall come, when His breath shall put new life in them, to lick up that sea that now covers, but cannot drown them. . . . This is the city, the society, over which the temporal governments of the earth have assumed the dominion ; and have said, “ Let us break their bonds asunder, and cast away their cords from us.” . . .

And let not so weak a thought arise in your minds, as if all this were only the self-seeking of the Clergy, out of pride to advance themselves. Alas ! it must have the quite contrary effect with any of them who consider what a heavy charge they have undertaken, and what account will be exacted from them, for their faithful discharge of it ! That the blood of all those souls who perish through their negligence or default, will be required at their

hands! That they have to wrestle, not only with flesh and blood, but against principalities and powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against wicked spirits that are set up in high places! And whoever opposes these with that truth and freedom that is necessary, instead of honour must expect reproach and persecution; of which it is not the least that they cannot vindicate the honour of CHRIST'S commission without being thought to seek their own glory. Yet that must not hinder; the successors of the Holy Apostles must be content to pass, as they did, "through evil report and good report, as deceivers, and yet true."

WILSON, BISHOP, CONFESSOR AND DOCTOR.—*Private Thoughts.*

"He that entereth not by the door into the sheepfold," &c. A lawful entrance, upon motives which aim at the glory of God and the good of souls; an external call and mission, from the apostolic authority of Bishops.

"A stranger will they not follow;" that is, they ought not to follow such as break Catholic Unity. . . .

Whoever is associated in the Priesthood of CHRIST, ought, in imitation of Him, to sacrifice himself for the advantage of His Church and for all the designs of God. . . .

"Bishops and Priests," saith St. Ambrose, "are honourable on account of the sacrifice they offer." The power of the keys and the exercise of that power, the due use of confirmation, and previous to that of examination . . . . are matters of infinite and eternal concern. . . . (*At the Lord's Supper. Before the Service begins.*) May it please Thee, O GOD, who hast called us to this ministry, to make us worthy to offer unto Thee this sacrifice for our own sins and for the sins of the people. Accept our service and our persons, through our LORD JESUS CHRIST, who liveth and reigneth with Thee and the HOLY GHOST, One GOD, world without end.—O reject not this people for me and for my sins. Amen.

(*Upon placing the Elements upon the Altar.*) Vouchsafe to receive these Thy creatures from the hands of us sinners, O Thou self-sufficient GOD!

(*Immediately after the Consecration.*) We offer unto Thee, our King and our God, this bread and this cup. We give Thee thanks for these and for all Thy mercies, beseeching Thee to send down Thy HOLY SPIRIT upon this sacrifice, that He may make this bread the Body of Thy CHRIST, and this cup the blood of Thy CHRIST; and that all we, who are partakers thereof, may thereby obtain remission of our sins and all other benefits of His passion. And together with us, remember, O God, for good, the whole mystical body of Thy Son; that such as are yet alive may finish their course with joy, and that we, with all such as are dead in the LORD, may rest in hope and rise in glory, for Thy Son's sake, whose death we now commemorate. Amen. May I adore Thee, O God, by offering to Thee the pure and unbloody sacrifice, which Thou hast ordained by JESUS CHRIST. Amen.

Whenever Church discipline meets with discountenance, impieties of all kinds are sure to get head and abound. And impieties unpunished do always draw down judgments. The same JESUS CHRIST, who appointed baptism for the receiving men into His Church and family, has appointed excommunication, to shut such out as are judged unworthy to continue in it. . . . If baptism be a blessing, excommunication is a real punishment; there being the same authority for excommunication as for baptism. And if men ridicule it, they do it at the peril of their souls.

BINGHAM, PRESBYTER.—*Sermons on Absolution.* No. 2.

In the first place, the commission of power to ministers to retain and remit other men's sins, in whatever sense we take it, is a great engagement on them to lead holy and pure lives themselves. For it looks like an absurdity in practice, and is too often really thought so, that men should be qualified to forgive other men's sins, who are loaded with guilt and impurity themselves. There is nothing so natural and obvious to us as, Physician, heal thyself: and, therefore, if it be not a real objection against their office, yet it is an unanswerable one against their persons. If it do not destroy the tenor of their commission in the nature of the thing, yet it certainly diminishes their authority and reputation in the opinion of men; when every



profligate sinner can retort upon them and say, "Thou that teachest another, teachest thou not thyself? Thou that preachest a man should not steal, dost thou steal? Thou that sayest a man should not commit adultery, dost thou commit adultery? Thou that makest thy boast of the law, through breaking the law, dishonourest thou God?" It must needs take off very much from the veneration of the Sacrament of Baptism, to have a man pretend to wash away the sins of others, who is himself polluted and profane; and equally diminishes the reverence which is due to the tremendous mystery of the Eucharist, to have it ministered with unholy hands. It cannot relish well with men, to hear an unsanctified mouth giving blessing to others, who in effect is cursing himself; praying that the blood of CHRIST may preserve others to eternal life, while he himself is eating and drinking his own damnation, not discerning the LORD's body. But above all, such a man cannot with any tolerable decency or freedom, discharge the office of punishing and correcting others, who is himself more justly liable to rebuke and censure. With what face can he debar others from Baptism or the Eucharist, who is himself unqualified to receive either? or exclude others from the Church, who is himself unworthy to enter into it? Nothing can be a greater engagement upon Ministers to lead holy and pure lives, than the consideration of the commission which CHRIST has given them, to retain or remit other men's sins, whether in a sacramental way, or a declaratory way, or a precatory way, or a judicial way: because without purity, they can by no means answer the end of this office, and the nature of their trust; but their mal-administration will rise up in judgment against them and condemn them.

2. A second thing which this office of retaining and remitting sins requires of Ministers, is great diligence in their studies and labours, without which they can never be able sufficiently to discharge it. The Church, indeed, has made some part of this work tolerably easy, by a prudent provision of many proper general forms of absolution: to which in her wisdom she may add proper forms of excommunication and judicial absolution. But when this is done, there still remains a great deal more belong-

ing to the full discharge of this office, for which the Church can make no particular provision : and, therefore, that must be left to the industry and diligence of Ministers, in their particular studies and labours. And this requires both a diffused knowledge, and great application; to be able to understand the nature of all God's laws, and the bounds and distinctions betwixt every virtue and vice; to be able to resolve all ordinary cases of conscience, and answer such doubts and scruples as are apt to arise in men's minds; to know the qualifications of particular men, and the nature and degrees and sincerity of their repentance, in order to give them a satisfactory answer to their demands, and grant or refuse them the several sorts of absolution, as they shall think proper, upon an impartial view of their state and condition. He that thinks all this may be done without any great labour and study, and a diligent search of the Holy Scriptures, the rule and record of God's will, seems neither to understand the nature of his office, nor the needs of men; nor what it is to stand in the place of CHRIST, and judge for Him between God and man. The Priest's lips should preserve knowledge: and a man that considers the large extent of that knowledge, together with the great variety of cases and persons to which he may have occasion to apply it, would rather be tempted to cry out with the Apostle, "Who is sufficient for these things?" And if this be not an argument to engage a man to industry in the office of a spiritual physician, it is hard to say what is so.

SKELTON, PRESBYTER.—Discourse 71.

The next thing the Puritans took offence at, was the Hierarchy of the Church. They looked on the Bishops as the instruments of papal tyranny, and the corrupters of true religion. . . . They . . . were, it seems, so ignorant, as not to know, that the Bishops, of all men, had most reason to oppose the usurpation of the Bishop of Rome, who had made himself the only Bishop, and reduced all the rest to ciphers. Nor did they consider, whether it was in the power of man to abolish, at his discretion, an order of the Church, instituted by God Himself, merely because the men who filled this order had degenerated, together with all the rest of the Church,

into superstition and luxury. Here again the scheme of our opposers was not to reform, but to destroy; and what was equally bold, to begin a new ministry, with hardly any other mission than such as a number of men, and sometimes one man only, wholly unauthorized, for aught that others could perceive, should assume. From men thus sending themselves, or sent by we know not whom, we are to receive the sacraments. . . . We must not forget, however, that these new orders lay claim to scriptural institution and primitive example. What, all of them? And without succession? Do we hear of any man in Scripture who ordained himself, or who presumed to take the ministry of God's word and sacraments upon him, without being sent either immediately or successively by CHRIST? Or, can an instance of this kind be assigned during the first fourteen centuries of the Church? . . . So sacred a thing is the succession of ordination, that the HOLY GHOST, who had already enabled Barnabas and Saul to preach the word, ordered them to be "separated for the work whereunto He had called them, by fasting, prayer, and imposition of hands,"—that is, to be ordained: the SPIRIT of GOD hereby plainly showing, that He himself would not break the successive order of mission established in the Church.

SAMUEL JOHNSON.—*ἐν φιλοσόφου σχήματι πρεσβέων τὸν θεῖον λόγον.* Sermon 7.

With regard to the order and government of the Primitive Church, we may doubtless follow their [the ancients'] authority with perfect security; they could not possibly be ignorant of laws executed, and customs practised by themselves; nor would they, even supposing them corrupt, serve any interest of their own, by handing down false accounts to posterity. We are, therefore, to inquire from them the different Orders established in the Ministry from the Apostolic ages; the different employments of each, and their several ranks, subordinations, and degrees of authority. From their writings, we are to vindicate the establishment of our Church, and by the same writings are those who differ from us in these particulars to defend their conduct.

Nor is this the only, though perhaps the chief use of these

writers ; for, in matters of faith and points of doctrine, those at least who lived in the ages nearest to the times of the Apostles undoubtedly deserve to be consulted. The oral doctrines and occasional explications of the Apostles would not be immediately forgotten, in the Churches to which they had preached, and which had attended to them with the diligence and reverence which their mission and character demanded. Their solution of difficulties, and determinations of doubtful questions, must have been treasured up in the memory of their audiences, and transmitted for some time from father to son. Every thing, at least, that was declared by the inspired teachers to be necessary to salvation, must have been carefully recorded ; and, therefore, what we find no traces of in Scripture, or the early Fathers, as most of the peculiar tenets of the Romish Church, must certainly be concluded to be not necessary. Thus, by consulting first the Holy Scriptures, and next the writers of the Primitive Church, we shall make ourselves acquainted with the will of GOD ; thus shall we discover the good way, and find that rest for our souls, which will amply recompense our studies and inquiries.

HORNE, BISHOP AND DOCTOR.—*Charge at Primary Visitation of his Diocese.*

The Constitution and use of the Church of CHRIST is another subject, on which our principles, for some years past, have been very unsettled, and our knowledge precarious and superficial. Ignorance is dangerous here, because there are so many whose interest it is to flatter us in it, and take advantage of it. The definition of the Church, contained in our Articles, was purposely less definitive than it might have been, to avoid giving further offence to those whom we rather wished to reconcile ; but it does not appear, that the Church hath gained any thing by its moderation ; it hath rather lost ; because in virtue of that moderation, it hath been pleaded against us, that Ecclesiastical Unity may be dispensed with, and that all our differences in this matter are only problematical and immaterial.

But salvation is a gift of grace ; that is, it is a free gift, to which we have no natural claim. It is not to be conceived within our-

selves, but to be received, in consequence of our Christian calling, from God Himself, through the means of His Ordinances. These can no man administer to effect, but by God's own appointment; at first, by His immediate appointment, and afterwards, by succession and derivation from thence to the end of the world. Without this rule we are open to imposture, and can be sure of nothing; we cannot be sure that our ministry is effective, and that our Sacraments are realities. We are very sensible the spirit of division will never admit this doctrine; yet the spirit of charity must never part with it. Writers and teachers who make it a point to give no offence, treat these things very tenderly; but he who, in certain cases, gives men no offence, will for that reason give them no instruction. *Light itself is painful to weak eyes; but delightful to them when grown stronger, and reconciled to it with use; and he who was instrumental in bringing them to a more perfect state of vision, though less acceptable at first, may yet, for his real kindness, be more cordially thanked afterwards, than if he had made the ease and safety of his own person the measure of his duty.* It is by no means evident, that the Church hath ever recommended itself the more by receding from any of its just pretensions: generosity obliges and secures a friend; but an enemy construes it into weakness, and then it never does any good. Yet the adversaries of the Church of England have always been persuading her to make the experiment, and have promised great things from it; with what views, it cannot be difficult to discover. It was an unhappy circumstance, and had very ill effects, when some pious men<sup>1</sup>, of more zeal than discretion, who set out on the work of reforming this nation, opened an asylum for penitents, which took in people of all persuasions, without exception of any. It came to be inferred from hence, that souls might be saved as well without as with a Church; perhaps better; and when men have once begun to neglect rules, they go on to despise them, and know not where to stop, till all things are brought into confusion. . . .

The ancient Church is the standard by which all modern ones

<sup>1</sup> Mr. Wesley, &c.

are to be examined; and unless a man knows what the Church was in centuries before the Reformation, he will see but darkly into the troubled waters of later times, in which faction and party have confounded things; and it hath become as much the interest of some, that the Church of CHRIST should be found every where, as it is the desire of others that it should be found no where. . . . If we would guard against popular mistakes in the subject at large, it will be necessary to examine first, what the Church was under the Old Testament; for there we find its original establishment, its form, its authority, its ministry, its unity and uniformity, its maintenance, its independence; which things being so particularly laid down, no new establishment is to be found in the Epistles or the Gospels of the New Testament, but the ancient constitution is referred to, to show us, in certain cases, what ought to be from what had been. . . . From the Scripture we should proceed next to observe, what the Church was in the first ages of the Gospel, before worldly policy, miscalled moderation, had any influence upon the opinions of Christians. There is an epistle of St. Clement, on Church unity and Church authority, with which all students in divinity should be acquainted. It will teach them what the Christian society then was, and what it ought to be. Ignatius and Cyprian, both of them martyrs, will give further instruction. The latter is so particular and copious, that a code of discipline might nearly be formed upon his authority. With these preparations, we shall be the better able to judge, of what happened at the Reformation, when many things were right and many wrong; when the Church of England, by the singular blessing of God, preserved its constitution and its doctrines, while many of the reformed fell off by degrees, some into disorder, some into dissolution. What remains with us we must defend and preserve; trusting that the same God who hath raised this Church, when trodden down to the dust, will never forsake us till we forsake Him. . . .

But I must now hasten, in the last place, to a subject of more quietness or less suspicion [than the subject of civil government], in which wise men of all persuasions are more nearly of a mind; I mean, the conduct of the Christian life. Modern times and

new modes of education have given too great a latitude in the articles of dress, and dissipation, and self-indulgence. Every thing is to be avoided which tends to diminish that gravity and seriousness which God expects to find in all those who are flying from the wrath to come. It was observed of old, that when inconsiderate people are avoiding one extreme, they commonly fall into another, while reason and discretion keep the middle way. When Protestants laid aside the austerities of superstition, they began to see less harm in the liberties taken by the world. The kind of life to which the first Christians conformed, hath been considered as a sort of heroic piety, which had more of suffering and mortification than are now required of us ; as if the way to heaven could be easier, while the number of our temptations is probably increasing from the refinement of modern times, which, instead of giving us more liberty, call upon us for a greater degree of caution and reserve. . . . .

To us JESUS CHRIST is the pattern of holiness, the great exemplar of perfection, of whom we are first to learn, what no heathen ever professed, to be "meek and lowly in heart ;" and accordingly, one of the best books extant on the Spiritual life, is entitled, "The Imitation of JESUS CHRIST." Its language is barbarous, but its matter is divine and heavenly, and hath administered instruction and consolation to thousands of devout Christians. The way of true devotion must still be understood to be the same humble, secret, unaffected, un aspiring practice of piety, as it used to be of old. The Cross, which JESUS CHRIST carried for our salvation, is still the true emblem of our profession, from our baptism to our departure out of this life, and is to be borne by us in our minds, as a daily admonition to patient suffering and self-denial.

To assist us in the great duties of prayer and meditation, books of devotion have their use ; but to us of the clergy, the liturgy of our Church is the best companion ; and the daily use of it in our churches and families is required by the canons. It cannot be denied, that from various reasons prevailing amongst us, we are much fallen off, of late years, from the practice of weekly prayers in our churches. Wherever this has been neglected, we should

exhort the people to the revival of it, if circumstances will possibly permit; and alarm them against a mistake, to which they are all exposed, from a fanatical prejudice of baneful influence, namely, that they come to Church only to hear preaching; and hence they are indifferent, even on a Sunday, to the prayers of the Church, unless there is a sermon.

JONES OF NAYLAND, PRESBYTER.—*Lectures on Hebrews* iii.

The Church, in its nature, always was what it is now, a society comprehending the souls as well as the bodies of men; and, therefore, consisting of two parts, the one spiritual, answering to the soul, and the other outward, answering to the body. Hence, some have written much upon a visible Church and an invisible, as if they were two things; but they are more properly one, as the soul and body make a single person.

In the twelfth chapter of the Epistle to the Hebrews, the Apostle gives such a description of that society, into which Christians are admitted, as will show us the nature of it. "Ye are come," says he, "unto Mount Zion," &c. . . . . The terms here used give us a true prospect of the Church. . . . . This is that Zion of the Holy One of Israel, to which the forces of the Gentiles were to flow from all parts of the world . . . . the city of the living GOD, distinguished from the cities of the world, as Jerusalem was from the cities of the heathens, who dedicated their cities not to the living GOD, but to the names of their dead idols. . . . . This, being the city of the living GOD, must be an immortal society, for the living GOD does not preside over dead citizens; He is not the GOD of the dead, but the GOD of the living, and all the members of this society live unto Him. . . . . It is, therefore, called the Heavenly Jerusalem, because it is of a heavenly nature; and it is called the Jerusalem which is above, which is free, and is the mother of us all. . . Its spiritual nature is further declared, in that it is said to comprehend an innumerable company of angels. . . . In the communion of the Church the spirits of just men made perfect are also included. It is a society which admits only the spirits of the living, and as such cannot exclude the spirits of the dead; and this confirms what we said



above, that the Church is a spiritual community, comprehending the dead as well as the living. . . . .

But it is now to be shown, secondly, that as the Church of God hath always been the same in its nature, it hath likewise preserved the same form in its external economy: the wisdom of God having so ordained, that the Christian Church under the Gospel should not depart from the model of the Church under the Law. For as the congregation of Israel was divided into twelve tribes, under the twelve Patriarchs, so is the Church of CHRIST founded on the twelve Apostles, who raised to themselves a spiritual seed amongst all the nations of the world. . . . . There were then three orders of priests in the Jewish Church; there was the high priest, and the sons of Aaron and the Levites. In the Church of CHRIST, there was the order of the Apostles, besides whom there were the seventy Disciples sent out after them; and, last of all, the Deacons were ordained to serve under both in the lower offices of the Church. The same form is still preserved in every regular Church of the world, which derives its succession and authority from the Church of the Apostles: after whom the Bishops succeeded by their appointment, such as Timothy and Titus, in their respective churches. This authority has been opposed to the Christian as it was in the Jewish Church: Corah and his company rose up against Moses and Aaron for usurping a lordly authority over the people; so, in the later ages of the Christian Church, a levelling principle hath prevailed, which has appeared in many different shapes. . . . .

The Church has also been remarkably conformable to itself in its sufferings. There never was a time, so far as we can learn, when the true Church of God, with its doctrines and institutions, was not hated and opposed by the world: either persecuted and oppressed by powerful tyrants, or traduced and insulted by lying historians.

*Horsley* BISHOP.—*Sermon on Matt. xvi. 18, 19.*

The keys of the kingdom of Heaven here promised to St. Peter . . . . must be something quite distinct from that with which it hath generally been confounded, the power of remission and retention of sins, conferred by our LORD, after His resur-

rection, upon the apostles in general, and transmitted through them to the perpetual succession of the priesthood. *This* is the discretionary power lodged in the priesthood, of dispensing the sacraments, and of granting to the penitent and refusing to the obdurate the benefit and comfort of absolution. The object of this power is the individual upon whom it is exercised, according to the particular circumstances of each man's case. It was exercised by the Apostles in many striking instances. It is exercised now by every priest, when he administers or withholds the sacraments of baptism and the LORD'S Supper, or, upon just grounds, pronounces or refuses to pronounce upon an individual the sentence of absolution.

HEBER, BISHOP.—*Sermons in England*, No. xii.

We must return then, after all, (in ordinary cases, and where an immediate and supernatural commission from the HOLY GHOST is neither proved nor pretended,) to the appointment and ordination of those among our fellow-creatures who exercise a legitimate authority in the Church of CHRIST, and who, as being appointed by GOD, are placed in GOD'S stead, and commissioned by Him to dispense those graces which are necessary for the feeding of His flock, and to designate those labourers who are henceforth to work in His harvest.

And having arrived at this point of the discussion, even if that discussion were to proceed no further, and if the Scriptures had given us no information as to the persons by whom this authority was to be exercised, the validity of our ordinations would still be sufficiently plain, and the danger of separation from, or rebellion against, our Church would be sufficiently great and alarming, inasmuch as, where no distinct religious officer was instituted by GOD, the appointment of such officers must necessarily have devolved on the collective Christian Church, and on those supreme magistrates who, in every Christian country, are the recognized organs of the public will and wisdom. . . . . It happens, however, to be in our power to show (if not an explicit direction of CHRIST for the form of our Church government, and the manner of appointing our spiritual guides), yet a precedent so clear and

a pattern so definite, as to leave little doubt of the intentions of our Divine Master, or of the manner in which those intentions were fulfilled by His immediate and inspired Disciples. Nor will the force of such precedent and example on the practice of succeeding Christians be regarded as trifling by those who consider that it is on such grounds as these that the obligation rests of many observances which are allowed by all parties to be essential; among which may be classed the baptism of infants, the observance of the LORD'S Day, and our participation in the LORD'S Supper.

But, without entering into the question of the absolute necessity of this rule, and without judging those other national Churches which have departed from it, it is evident that those Churches are most wise and most fortunate, who have continued in the path which CHRIST and His Apostles have trodden before; and that religious insubordination is then most unreasonable and most dangerous, when exerted against a form of polity which the majority of our fellow-Christians, the wisdom of our civil governors, and the full stream of precedent, from the time of the Apostles themselves, combine to recommend to our reverence.

We find, accordingly, that our LORD, on His own departure from the world, committed, in most solemn terms, the government of His Church to His Apostles. We find these Apostles, in the exercise of the authority thus received, appointing Elders in every city, as dispensers of the word and the sacraments of religion; and we find them also appointing other Ecclesiastical Officers, who were to have the oversight of these Elders themselves; and who, in addition to the powers which they enjoyed in common with them, had the privilege, which the others had not, of admitting, by the imposition of hands, those whom they thought fit to the ministerial office. . . .

And it is not too much to say, that we may challenge those who differ from us, to point out any single period at which the Church has been destitute of such a body of officers, laying claim to an authority derived by the imposition of hands from the Apostles themselves; or any single instance of a Church without this form of government, till the Church of Geneva, at first from necessity, and afterwards from a mistaken exposition of Scrip-

ture, supplied the place of a single Bishop by the rule of an oligarchical presbytery.

JEBB, BISHOP.—*Pastoral Instructions.* Discourse i.

“And lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world;”—a promise not occasional or temporary, like that of miraculous powers; but conveying an assurance that CHRIST Himself, will, in spirit and in power, be continually present with His Catholic and Apostolick Church; with the bishops of that Church, who derive from the Apostles by uninterrupted succession, and with those inferior, but essential orders of the Church, which are constituted by the same authority, and dedicated to the same service.

VAN MILDERT, BISHOP.—*Bampton Lectures.* Sermon viii.

The system, of which the Apostles had laid the foundation, was to be carried on through succeeding generations; but with a gradual diminution of that extraordinary aid, which the circumstances of the case rendered no longer necessary. . . . Yet since the object to be attained was not temporary, but to continue from age to age, the mode, the form, and the instrument to be employed, were still to be conformable to the primitive institution. Accordingly, the Apostles ordained successors to themselves, and took measures for perpetuating in the Church a standing ministry of diverse orders and gradations. In so doing, they showed in what sense we are to interpret our LORD’s assurance, that He would “be with them always, even unto the end of the world.”. . . .

The evidences, from the best historical records, to the simple fact that a visible Church of this description has actually subsisted from the time of our LORD and His Apostles to this moment, are too well known to require a detail. Nor is there any defect of similar evidence, to show that, whatever errors or corruptions may have occasionally found admittance into it, the Church itself has proved a successful instrument in the hands of Providence, both of transmitting the unadulterated Word of GOD from generation to generation, and also of promulgating and

maintaining all its great fundamental truths; nay, perhaps, of preserving even the very name as well as substance of Christianity, which, humanly speaking, would probably have been long since extinct, had it not been nurtured and cherished by this its appointed guardian and protector. . . .

Let us take, for instance, those articles of faith which have already been shown to be essential to the Christian Covenant:—the doctrines of the Trinity, of our LORD'S Divinity and Incarnation, of His Atonement and Intercession, of our sanctification by the HOLY SPIRIT, of the terms of acceptance, and the ordinances of the Christian Sacraments and Priesthood. At what period of the Church have these doctrines, or either of them, been by any public act disowned or called in question! We are speaking now, it will be recollected, of what in the language of Ecclesiastical history, is emphatically called THE CHURCH; that, which has from age to age borne rule, upon the ground of its pretensions to Apostolical succession. And to this our inquiry is necessarily restricted. . . .

Surely, here is something to arrest attention; something to awaken reflection; something which they who sincerely profess Christianity, and are tenacious of the inviolability of its doctrines, must contemplate with sentiments of awe and veneration. For, though a sceptic may contend that this species of evidence does not amount to a direct and demonstrative proof of the truth of the doctrines; yet if they be not true, how shall we account for their having been so uninterruptedly transmitted to these latter times? How they have withstood the assaults of continued opponents? opponents, wanting neither talents nor inclination to effect their overthrow? If these considerations be deemed insufficient, let the adversary point out by what surer tokens we shall discover any Christian community, duly answering the Apostle's description, that it is "built upon the foundation of the Apostles and Prophets, JESUS CHRIST Himself being the chief Corner-Stone?"

MANT, BISHOP.—*Parochial Sermons*, xxvii.

Nor had He in this appointment a view to those times only, in which the appointment was made; but He designed that it should be extended to all future ages; for so we must understand the words which He pronounced immediately after giving His apostles their authority to baptize: "Lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world." A promise this which cannot be supposed to have respect to the persons of the Apostles alone, who in the common course of nature were soon to be taken from the world, to the end of which the promise itself was to extend. . . . In conformity with this meaning, the Apostles, who were themselves holy men and full of the HOLY GHOST, did send other persons; to whom again, they gave power and authority to send others, through whom the office of ministers of the Gospel has been handed down in regular and uninterrupted succession from the Apostles to the present time.

OXFORD,  
*The Feast of St. Mark.*

[NEW EDITION.]

---

*These Tracts are continued in Numbers, and sold at the price of 2d. for each sheet, or 7s. for 50 copies.*

LONDON: PRINTED FOR J. G. F. & J. RIVINGTON,  
ST. PAUL'S CHURCH YARD AND WATERLOO PLACE.

1839.

---

GILBERT & RIVINGTON, Printers, St. John's Square, London.

## TRACTS FOR THE TIMES.

ON THE ROMAN BREVIARY AS EMBODYING THE SUBSTANCE OF THE DEVOTIONAL SERVICES OF THE CHURCH CATHOLIC.

---

Teach her to know and love her hour of prayer,  
And evermore,  
As faith grows rare,  
Unlock her heart, and offer all its store,  
In holier love and humbler vows,  
As suits a lost returning spouse.

---

THERE is so much of excellence and beauty in the services of the Breviary, that were it skilfully set before the Protestant by Roman controversialists as the book of devotions received in their communion, it would undoubtedly raise a prejudice in their favour, if he were ignorant of the circumstances of the case, and but ordinarily candid and unprejudiced. To meet this danger is one principal object of the following pages ; in which, whatever is good and true in those Devotions will be claimed, and on reasonable grounds, for the Church Catholic in opposition to the Roman Church, whose only real claim above other Churches is that of having, on the one hand, preserved the Service with less of mutilation or abridgment, and, on the other, having adopted into it certain additions and novelties, ascertainable to be such in history, as well as being corruptions doctrinally. In a word, it will be attempted to wrest a weapon out of our adversaries' hands ; who have in this, as in many other instances, appropriated to themselves a treasure which was ours as much as theirs ; and then, on our attempting to recover it, accuse us of borrowing what we have but lost through inadvertence. The publication then of the selections, which it is proposed presently to give from these Services, is, as it were, an act of re-appropriation. Were, however, the Breviary ever so much the property of the Romanists, by retaining it in its ancient Latin form, they have defrauded the Church of that benefit which, in the vernacular tongue, it might have afforded to the people at large.

Another reason for the selections which are to follow, lies in the circumstance, that our own daily Service is confessedly formed upon the Breviary; so that an inspection of the latter will be found materially to illustrate and explain our own Prayer-Book.

It may suggest, moreover, character and matter for our *private* devotions, over and above what our Reformers have thought fit to adopt into our public Services; a use of it which will be but carrying out and completing what they have begun.

And there is a further benefit which, it is hoped, will result from an acquaintance with the Breviary Services, viz. that the adaptation and arrangement of the Psalms therein made, will impress many persons with a truer sense of the excellence and profitableness of those inspired compositions than it is the fashion of this age to entertain.

Lastly, if it can be shown, as was above intimated, that the corruptions, whatever they be, are of a late date, another fact will have been ascertained, in addition to those which are ordinarily insisted on, discriminating and separating off the Roman from the primitive Church.

With these views a sketch shall first be given of the history of the Breviary; then the selections from it shall follow.

## INTRODUCTION.

### *On the history of the Breviary*<sup>1</sup>.

The word *Breviarium* first occurs in the work of an author of the eleventh century, and is used to denote a compendium or systematic arrangement of the devotional offices of the Church. Till that time they were contained in several independent volumes according to the nature of each. Such, for instance, were the *Psalteria*, *Homilaria*, *Hymnaria*, and the like, to be used in the service in due course. But at this memorable era, and under the auspices of the Pontiff who makes it memorable, Gregory VII., an order was drawn up, for the use of the Roman Church, containing in one all these different collections, introducing the separate members of each in its proper place, and harmonizing them together by the use of rubrics. Indeed, some have been

<sup>1</sup> The authorities used in this account are Gavanti's *Thesaurus Rituum, cum notis Merari*; Zaccaria's *Bibliotheca Ritualis*; and Mr. Palmer's *Origines Liturgicæ*.



led to conclude that in its first origin the word *Breviary* was appropriated to a mere collection of rubrics, not to the offices connected by them. But even taking it in its present sense, it will be obvious to any one who inspects the Breviary how well it answers to its name. Yet even thus digested, it occupies four thick volumes of duodecimo size.

Gregory VII. did but restore and harmonize these offices ; which seem to have existed more or less the same in their constituent parts, though not in order and system, from Apostolic times. In their present shape they are appointed for seven distinct seasons in the twenty-four hours, and consist of prayers, praises, and thanksgivings of various forms ; and, as regards both contents and hours, are the continuation of a system of worship observed by the Apostles and their converts. As to *contents*, the Breviary Services consist of the Psalms ; of Hymns, and Canticles ; of Lessons and Texts from inspired and ecclesiastical authors ; of Antiphons, Verses and Responses, and Sentences ; and of Collects. And analogous to this seems to have been the usage of the Corinthian Christians, whom St. Paul blames for refusing to agree in some *common* order of worship ; when they came together, *every one of them* having a Psalm, a doctrine, a tongue, a revelation, an interpretation<sup>1</sup>. On the other hand, the Catholic *seasons* of devotions are certainly derived from Apostolic usage. The Jewish observance of the third, sixth, and ninth hours for prayer, was continued by the inspired founders of the Christian Church. What Daniel had practised, even when the decree was signed forbidding it, "kneeling on his knees three times a day, and praying, and giving thanks unto his God," St. Peter and the other Apostles were solicitous in preserving. It was when "they were all with one accord in one place," at "the *third* hour of the day," that the HOLY GHOST came down upon them at Pentecost. It was at the *sixth* hour, that St. Peter, "went up upon the house-top to pray," and saw the vision revealing to him the admission of the Gentiles into the Church. And it was at the *ninth* hour that "Peter and John went up together into the temple," being "the hour of prayer." But though these were the more remarkable seasons

<sup>1</sup> 1 Cor. xiv. 26.

of devotion, there certainly were others besides them, in that first age of the Church. After our SAVIOUR'S departure, the Apostles, we are informed, "all *continued* with one accord in prayer and supplication, with the women, and Mary the mother of Jesus, and with His brethren:" and with this accords the repeated exhortation to pray together without ceasing, which occurs in St. Paul's Epistles. It will be observed that he insists in one passage on prayer to the abridgment of sleep<sup>1</sup>; and one recorded passage of his life exemplifies his precept. "And at midnight Paul and Silas prayed, and sang praises unto God, and the prisoners heard them." Surely it is more natural to suppose that this act of worship came in course, according to their wont, and was only not omitted because of their imprisonment, somewhat after Daniel's pattern, than that they should have gone aside to bear this sort of indirect testimony to the Gospel.

Such was the Apostolic worship as far as Scripture happens to have preserved it; that it was as systematic, and as apportioned to particular times of the day, as in the aftertimes of peace and prosperity, is not to be supposed; yet it seems to have been, under ordinary circumstances, as ample and extended, as then. If St. Paul thought a prison and a prison's inmates no impediment to vocal prayer, we may believe it was no common difficulty which ever kept him from it.

In subsequent times the Hours of prayer were gradually developed from the three, or (with midnight) the four seasons, above enumerated, to seven, viz. by the addition of Prime (the first-hour), Vespers, (the evening), and Compline (bed-time); according to the words of the Psalm, "Seven times a day do I praise Thee, because of Thy righteous judgments." Other pious and instructive reasons existed, or have since been perceived, for this number. It was a memorial of the seven days of creation; it was an honour done to the seven petitions given us by our LORD in His prayer; it was a mode of pleading for the influence of that Spirit who is revealed to us as sevenfold; on the other hand, it was a preservative against those seven evil spirits, which are apt to return to the exorcised soul more

<sup>1</sup> Eph. vi. 18.

wicked than he who has been driven out of it ; and it was a fit remedy of those seven successive falls, which the Scripture says happen to " the just man " daily.

And, as the particular number of their Services admitted of various pious meanings, so did each in its turn suggest separate events in our SAVIOUR'S history. He was born, and He rose again at midnight. At Prime, (or 7 A.M. according to our reckoning,) He was brought before Pilate. At the third, (or 9 A.M.) He was devoted to crucifixion by the Jews, and scourged. At the sixth, (or noon,) He was crucified. At the ninth, (or 3 P.M.) He expired. At Vespers, He was taken down from the cross ; at which hour He had the day before eat the Passover, washed His Apostles' feet, and consecrated the Eucharist. At Completorium, or Compline, He endured the agony in the garden.

These separate Hours, however, require a more distinct notice. The night Service was intended for the end of the night, when it was still dark, but drawing towards day ; and, considering that the hour for rest was placed soon after sunset, it did not infringe upon the time necessary for repose. Supposing the time of sleep to extend from 8 or 9 P.M. to 3 or 4 in the morning, the worshipper might then rise without inconvenience to perform the service which was called variously by the name of Nocturns, or Matins, as we still differently describe the hours in which it took place, as night or morning. It consists, when full, of three parts or Nocturns, each made up of Psalms and Lessons ; and it ended in a Service, supposed to be used shortly before sunrise, and called Lauds or Praises. This termination of the Nocturn Service is sometimes considered distinct from it, so as to make eight instead of seven Hours in the day ; as if in accordance with the text, " Give a portion to seven, and also to eight." Accordingly it is sometimes called by the name of Matins, instead of the Nocturns ; and sometimes both together are so called.

This subdivision of the night service has the effect of dividing the course of worship into two distinct parts, of similar structure with each other ; the three Nocturns, Lauds, and Prime, corresponding respectively to the three day hours (of the 3d, 6th, and 9th) Vespers and Compline. Of these the three day hours are made up of Psalms, Hymns, and Sentences. These are the

simplest of the Services, and differ very little from each other through the year. Lauds answer to Vespers, the sun being about to rise or about to set in the one or the other respectively. Each contains five Psalms, a Text, Hymn, Evangelical Canticle, Collect, and Commemoration of Saints. These hours are the most ornate of the Services, and are considered to answer to the morning and evening sacrifices of the Jews.

Prime and Compline were introduced at the same time (the fifth century), and are placed respectively at the beginning of day and the beginning of night. In each there is a Confession, four Psalms, a Hymn, Text, and Sentences.

The ecclesiastical day is considered to begin with the evening or Vesper service ; according to the Jewish reckoning, as alluded to in the text, " In the evening, and morning, and at noon-day, will I pray, and that instantly." The ancient Vespers are regarded by some to be the most solemn hour of the day. They were sometimes called the *Officium Lucernarum*<sup>1</sup>. Prayers were in some places offered while the lamps were lighting ; and this rite was called *lumen offerre*<sup>2</sup>. The Mozarabic service supplies an instance of this, in which the Office ran as follows :

" Kyrie eleyson, Christe eleyson, Kyrie eleyson. Pater noster, &c. In nomine Domini Jesu Christi, lumen cum pace. R. Amen. Hoc est lumen oblatum. R. Deo gratias."

On Festivals, the appropriate Services, beginning on the evening of the preceding day, are continued over the evening of the day itself ; so that there are in such cases two Vespers, called the First and the Second, of which the First are the more solemn.

This is the stated succession of the sacred offices through the day, but the observance of the precise hours has not been generally insisted on at any time, but has varied with local usages or individual convenience. Thus the Matin and Laud Services may be celebrated on the preceding evening, as is done (for instance) in the Sistine Chapel at Rome during Passion week,

<sup>1</sup> Vid. Socr. Hist. 22. Vide also *Lyra Apostolica*, xv.

<sup>2</sup> This ceremony must not be confused with the *Lucernarium*, or prayers at lighting the lamps ; which took place before the evening.

the celebrated *Miserere* being one of the Psalms in Lauds. Prime may be used just before or after sunrise; the Third soon after; and soon after, the Sixth; the Ninth, near dinner; Vespers and Compline, after dinner. Or Prime, the Third, Sixth, and Ninth may come together two or three hours after sunrise. Noon, which in most ages has been the hour for the meal of the day, is made to divide the Services; there is a rule, for instance, against Compline coming before dinner.

Such is the present order and use of the Breviary Services, as derived more or less directly from Apostolic practice. Impressed with their antiquity, our Reformers did not venture to write a Prayer-Book of their own, but availed themselves of what was ready to their hands: in consequence, our Daily Service is a compound of portions of this primitive ritual, Matins being made up of the Catholic Matins, Lauds, and Prime, and Even-song of Vespers and Compline. The reason why these changes were brought about will be seen in the following sketch of the history of the Breviary from the time of Gregory VII.

The word has been already explained to mean something between a directory and an harmony of offices; but it is to be feared there was another, and not so satisfactory reason for the use of it. It implied an abridgment or curtailment of Services, and so in particular of the Scripture readings, whether Psalms, or Lessons, at least in practice. Of course there is no reason why the Church might not, in the use of her discretion, limit as well as select the portions of the inspired volume, which were to be introduced into her devotions; but there were serious reasons why she should not defraud her children of "their portion of meat in due season;" and it would seem, as if the eleventh or at least the twelfth century, a time fertile in other false steps in religion, must be charged also, as far as concerns Rome and its more intimate dependencies, with a partial removal of the light of the written Word from the Sanctuary. Whatsoever benefit attended the adjustment of the offices in other respects, so far as the reading of Scripture was omitted, it was productive of evil, at least in prospect. An impulse was given, however slight in itself, which was followed up in the centuries which succeeded, and in all those churches which either then, or in the course of time, adopted the usage of Rome.

Even now that usage is not universally received in the Latin Communion, and it was in no sense enjoined on the whole Communion till after the Council of Trent ; but from the influence of the papal see and of the monastic orders, it seems to have affected other countries from a much earlier date. This influence would naturally be increased by the circumstance that the old Roman Breviary had long before Gregory's time been received in various parts of Europe : in England, since the time of Gregory the Great, who, after the pattern of Leo, and Gelasius before him, had been a Reformer of it ; in Basle, since the ninth century ; in France and Germany by means of Pepin and Charlemagne ; while Gregory VII. himself effected its reception in Spain. Other Breviaries however still were in use, as they are at this day. The Ambrosian Breviary used in the Church of Milan, derives its name from the great St. Ambrose ; and in the ninth century Charles the Bald, while sanctioning the use of the Roman, speaks also of the usage of Jerusalem, of Constantinople, of Gaul, of Italy, and of Toledo.

In Gregory's Breviary there are no symptoms of a neglect of Scripture. It contains the offices for festival-days, Sundays, and week-days ; Matins on festivals having nine Psalms and nine Lessons, and on Sundays eighteen Psalms and nine Lessons, as at present. The course of the Scripture Lessons was the same as it had been before his time ; as it is preserved in a manuscript of the thirteenth century. It will be found to agree in great measure both with the order of the present Breviary and with our own. From Advent to Christmas were read portions of the prophet Isaiah ; from the Octave of the Epiphany to Septuagesima, St. Paul's Epistle to the Romans ; from Septuagesima to the third Sunday in Lent, the book of Genesis, the i. xii. and xxvii. on the Sundays to which they are allotted in our own offices ; on the fourth in Lent to Wednesday in Passion week, Jeremiah ; from Easter to the third Sunday after, the Apocalypse ; from the third to the fifth, St. James ; from the Octave of the Ascension to Pentecost, the Acts ; after the Octave of Trinity to the last Sunday in July, the books of Kings ; in August, Proverbs ; in September, Job, Tobit, Judith, and Esther ; in October, Maccabees ; and in November, Ezekiel, Daniel, and other prophets.

Well would it have been if this laudable usage, received from the first ages, and confirmed by Pope Gregory VII., had been observed, according to his design, in the Roman Church; but his own successors were the first to depart from it. The example was set in the Pope's chapel of curtailing the sacred Services, and by the end of the twelfth century it had been followed in all the churches in Rome, except that of St. John Lateran. The *Fratres Minores* (Minorists or Franciscans) adopted the new usage, and their Breviaries were in consequence remarkable for the title "*secundum consuetudinem Romanæ Curiaë*," contrary to the usage of such countries as conformed to the Roman Ritual, which were guided by the custom of the churches in the city. Haymo, the chief of this order, had the sanction of Gregory X., in the middle of the thirteenth century, to correct and complete a change, which, as having begun in irregularity, was little likely to have fallen of itself into an orderly system; and his arrangements, which were conducted on the pattern of the Franciscan devotions, nearly correspond with the Breviary, as it at present stands.

Haymo's edition, which was introduced into the Roman Church by Nicholas III. A.D. 1278, is memorable for another and still more serious fault. Graver and sounder matter being excluded, apocryphal legends of Saints were used to stimulate and occupy the popular mind; and a way was made for the use of those Invocations to the Virgin and other Saints, which heretofore were unknown in public worship. The addresses to the Blessed Mary in the Breviary, as it is at present constituted, are such as the following: the Ave Mary, before commencing every office through the day and at the end of Compline; at the end of Lauds and Vespers, an Antiphon invocatory of the Virgin; the *Officium B. Mariæ*, on the Sabbath or Saturday, and sundry other offices, containing Hymns and Antiphons in her honour. These portions of the Breviary carry with them their own plain condemnation, in the judgment of an English Christian; no commendation of the general structure and matter of the Breviary itself will have any tendency to reconcile him to them; and it has been the strong feeling that this is really the case, that has led the writer of these pages fearlessly and securely to admit the real excellences, and to dwell upon the antiquity, of the Roman

Ritual. He has felt that, since the Romanists required an unqualified assent to the *whole* of the Breviary, and that there were passages which no Anglican ever could admit, praise the true Catholic portion of it as much as he might, he did not in the slightest degree approximate to a recommendation of Romanism. But to return;—these Invocations and Services to the Blessed Virgin have been above enumerated, with a view of observing that, on the very face of them, they do not enter into the *structure* of the Breviary; they are really, as they are placed, additions, and might easily have been added at some future period, as (e. g.) was the case with our own Thanksgiving, or the Prayer for the Parliament. This remark seems to apply to all the intrinsically-exceptionable Addresses in the Breviary; for as to the Confession at Prime and Compline, in which is introduced the name of the Blessed Virgin and other Saints, this practice stands on a different ground. It is not a simple gratuitous Invocation made to them, but it is an address to ALMIGHTY GOD *in His heavenly court*, as surrounded by His Saints and Angels, answering to St. Paul's charge to Timothy, "before GOD and the LORD JESUS CHRIST and the elect Angels," and to Daniel and St. John's address to the Angels who were sent to them. The same may even be said of the Invocation "Holy Mary and all Saints<sup>1</sup>," &c. in the Prime Service, which Gavanti describes as being of very great antiquity. These usages certainly *now* do but sanction and encourage that direct worship of the Blessed Virgin and the Saints, which is the great practical offence of the Latin Church, and so are a serious evil; but it is worth pointing out, that, as on the one hand they have more claim to be considered an integral part of the service, so on the other, more can be said towards their justification than for those addresses which are now especially under our consideration.

This is what occurs to observe on the first sight of these Invocations; but we are not left to draw a conjectural judgment about them. Their history is actually known, and their recent introduction into the Church Services is distinctly confessed by Roman ritualists.

<sup>1</sup> It is observable that the words "Holy Mary" do not occur in the ancient Monastic Breviaries. The Confession at Prime and Compline does not occur in the Paris Breviary, 1735.



The Ave Mary, for instance, is made up of the Angel's salutation, "Hail, thou," &c. Elizabeth's "Blessed art thou among women," &c. and the words, "Holy Mary, Mother of God, pray for us sinners, now and in the hour of our death." The last clause "now and," &c. was confessedly added by the Franciscans in the beginning of the sixteenth century; and the words preceding it, "Holy Mary," &c. which Gavanti, after Baronius, wishes to attribute to the Council of Ephesus (A.D. 431), are acknowledged by the later critics, Grancolas and Merari, to have had no place in any form of prayer till the year 1508. Even the Scripture portion of the Ave Mary, which, as Merari observes, is an Antiphon rather than Prayer, and which occurs as such in the lesser office of the Blessed Virgin, and in St. Gregory's Sacramentary in the Mass Service for the fourth Sunday in Advent, is not mentioned by any devotional writer, nor by Councils, nor Fathers, up to the eleventh century, though they do enjoin the universal and daily use of the Creed and LORD'S Prayer, which are in the present Breviary used with it. It first occurs among forms of prayer prescribed for the people in the statutes of Otho, Bishop of Paris, A. D. 1195, who was followed, after the interval of a hundred years, by the regulations of Councils at Oxford and elsewhere. Another space of at least fifty years intervenes before the introduction of rosaries and crowns in honour of the Virgin. As to the Roman Breviary, it did not contain any part of the Ave Mary, till the promulgation of it by Pope Pius V., after the Tridentine Council, A.D. 1550.

The four Antiphons to the Blessed Virgin, used at the termination of the offices, are known respectively by their first words; the *Alma Redemptoris*, the *Ave Regina*, the *Regina cæli*, and the *Salve Regina*. Gavanti and Merari plainly tell us that they are not to be found in ancient authors. The *Alma Redemptoris* is the composition of Hermannus Contractus, who died A. D. 1054. The author of the *Ave Regina* is unknown, as is that of the *Regina cæli*. The *Salve Regina* is to be attributed either to Hermannus, or to Peter of Compostella. Gavanti would ascribe the last words "O clemens, O pia, O dulcis," &c. to St. Bernard, but Merari corrects him, the work in which they are contained being supposititious. These Antiphons seem to have

been used by the Franciscans after Compline from the thirteenth century: but are found in no Breviary before A. D. 1520.

The Saturday or Sabbath office of the Blessed Virgin was introduced, according to Baronius, by the monks of the Western church, about A. D. 1056.

The Officium Parvum B. V. M. was instituted by the celebrated Peter Damiani at the same date. It is said indeed to have been the restoration of a practice three hundred years old, and observed by John Damascene; which it may well have been: but there is nothing to show the identity of the Service itself with the ancient one, and that is the only point on which evidence would be important. Thirty years after its introduction by Damiani, it was made part of the daily worship by decree of Urban II.

The Breviary then, as it is now received, is pretty nearly what the Services became *in practice* in Rome, and among the Franciscans by the middle of the thirteenth century; the two chief points of difference between it and the ancient Catholic Devotions, being on the one hand its diminished allowance of Scripture reading, on the other its adoption of uncertain legends, and of Hymns and Prayers to the Virgin. However, the more grievous of these changes were not formally made in the Breviary itself, till the Pontificate of Pius V., after the Tridentine Council; at which time also it was imposed in its new form upon all the Churches in communion with Rome, except such as had used some other Ritual for above two hundred years. Not even at the present day, however, is this Roman novelty, as it may be called, in universal reception; the Paris Breviary, as corrected by the Archbishop of that city, A. D. 1735, differs from it considerably in detail, though still disfigured by the Invocations.

Before concluding this account of the Roman Breviary, it is necessary to notice one attempt which was made in the first part of the sixteenth century to restore it to a more primitive form. In the year 1536, Quignonius, Cardinal of Santa Crux, compiled a Breviary under the sanction of Clement VII., and published it under his successor, Paul III. This Ritual, the use of which was permitted, but not formally enjoined by the Holy See, was extensively adopted for forty years, when it was superseded by

the Franciscan Breviary, as the now authorized one may be called, in consequence of a Bull of Pius V. The Cardinal's Breviary was drawn up on principles far more agreeable to those on which the Reformation was conducted, and apparently with the same mixture of right and wrong in the execution. With a desire of promoting the knowledge of Scripture, it showed somewhat of a rude dealing with received usages, and but a deficient sense of what is improperly called the *imaginative* part of religion. His object was to adapt the Devotions of the Church for private reading, rather than chanting in choir, and so to encourage something higher than that almost theatrical style of worship, which, when reverence is away, will prevail, alternately with a slovenly and hurried performance, in the performance of Church Music. Accordingly he left out the Versicles, Responses, and Texts, which, however suitable in Church, yet in private took more time, as he says, to find out in the existing formularies than to read when found. He speaks in his preface expressly of the "perplexus ordo," on which the offices were framed. But his great reform was as regards the reading of Scripture. He complains that, whereas it was the ancient rule that the Psalms should be read through weekly and the Bible yearly, both practices had been omitted. The Ferial or week-day service had been superseded by the service for feast-days, as being shorter: and for that reason every day, even through Lent, was turned into a festival. To obviate the temptation which led to this irregularity, he made the Ferial service about the length of that of the old feast day; and he found space in these contracted limits for the reading of the Psalms, and the whole Bible, except part of the Apocalypse, in the week and the year respectively, by omitting the popular legends of the Saints which had been substituted for them. He observes, that these compositions had been sometimes introduced without any public authority, or sanction of the Popes, merely at the will of individuals. Those which he retained, he selected from authors of weight, whether of the Greek or Latin Church. Besides, he omitted the *Officium Parvum B. M. V.*, on the ground that there were sufficient services in her honour independently of it. In all his reforms he professes to be returning to the practice of antiquity; and he

made use of the assistance of men versed “in Latin and Greek, in divinity, and the jus pontificium.”

This Breviary was published in Rome, A. D. 1536, under the sanction, as has been said, of Paul III. However, it was not of a nature to please the divines of an age which had been brought up in the practice of the depraved Catholicism then prevalent; and its real faults, as they would appear to be, even enabled them to oppose it with justice. The Doctors of the Sorbonne proceeded to censure it as running counter in its structure to antiquity and the Fathers; and though they seem at length to have got over their objections to it, and various editions at Venice, Antwerp, Lyons, and Paris, showed that it was not displeasing to numbers in the Roman Communion, it was at length superseded by the Bull of Pius V. establishing the Franciscan Breviary, which had more or less grown into use in the course of the preceding three hundred years.

This account of Cardinal Quignonius's Breviary, and the circumstances under which it was compiled, will remind the English reader of the introductory remarks concerning the Service of the Church, prefixed to our Ritual; which he may read more profitably than heretofore, after the above illustrations of their meaning. For this reason they shall be here cited:

“There was never any thing by the wit of man so well devised, or so sure established, which in continuance of time hath not been corrupted; as, among other things, it may plainly appear by the Common Prayers, in the Church, commonly called Divine Service. The first original and ground whereof, if a man would search out by the Ancient Fathers, he shall find that the same was not ordained but of a good purpose, and for a great advancement of godliness. For they so ordered the matter, that all the whole Bible, (or the greatest part thereof,) should be read over once every year; intending thereby that the Clergy, and especially such as were Ministers in the Congregation, should (by often reading and meditating on God's Word) be stirred up to godliness themselves, and be more able to exhort others by wholesome doctrine, not to confute them that were adversaries to the truth; and further, that the people (by daily hearing of Holy Scripture read in the Church,) might continually

profit more and more in the knowledge of God, and be the more inflamed with the love of His true religion.

“ But these many years past, this godly and decent order of the ancient Fathers hath been so altered, broken, and neglected, by planting in uncertain Stories and Legends, with multitude of Responds, Verses, vain Repetitions, Commemorations, and Synodals; that commonly when any book of the Bible was begun, after three or four chapters were read out, all the rest were unread. And in this sort the book of Isaiah was begun in Advent, and the book of Genesis in Septuagesima; but they were only begun, and never read through. After like sort were other books of Holy Scripture used. And furthermore, notwithstanding that the ancient Fathers have divided the Psalms into seven portions, whereof every one was called a Nocturn, now of late time a few of them have been daily said, and the rest utterly omitted. Moreover, the number and hardness of the rules called the Pie, and the manifold changings of the service, was the cause, that, to turn the book only was so hard and intricate a matter, that many times there was more business to find out what should be read, than to read it when it was found out.

“ These inconveniences therefore considered, here is set forth such an Order, whereby the same shall be redressed. And for a readiness in this matter, here is drawn out a Calendar for that purpose, which is plain and easy to be understood; wherein (so much as may be) the reading of Holy Scripture is so set forth, that all things shall be done in order, without breaking one piece from another. For this cause be cut off Anthems, Responds, Invitatories, and such like things as did break the continual course of the reading of the Scripture.”

It remains but to enumerate the selections from the Breviary which follow. First has been drawn out, an Analysis of the Weekly Service, as well for Sunday as other days. This is followed by an ordinary Sunday Service at length, as it runs when unaffected by the occurrence of special feast or season, in order to ground the reader, who chooses to pursue the subject, in the course of daily worship as a whole. With the same object a Week-day Service has also been drawn out. Two por-

tions of extraordinary Services are then added, one from the Service for the Transfiguration, the other for the Festival of St. Lawrence, with a view of supplying specimens of a more elevated and impressive character. Next follows a design for a Service for March 21st, the day on which Bishop Ken was taken from the Church below, and another for a Service of thanksgiving and commemoration for the anniversaries of the days of death of friends or relations. These have been added, to suggest to individual Christians a means of carrying out in private the principle and spirit of those inestimable forms of devotion which are contained in our authorized Prayer-Book. The series is closed with an abstract of the Services for every day in Advent, fitting on to sections 2 and 3, which contain respectively the types of the Sunday and Week-day Service. Except by means of some such extended portion, it is impossible for the reader to understand the general structure, and appreciate the harmony of the Breviary.

Lastly, the writer of these pages feels he shall have to ask indulgence for such chance mistakes, in the detail of the following Services, as are sure to occur when an intricate system is drawn out and set in order, with no other knowledge of it than is supplied by the necessarily insufficient directions of a Rubric.

§ 1. *Analysis of the Seven Daily Services of the Church Catholic, as preserved in the Breviary.*

EVERY Service but Compline is commenced with privately saying the Lord's Prayer, and the Ave Mary, to which the Creed is added before Matins and Prime. In like manner, after Compline, all three are repeated. Every other Service ends with the Lord's Prayer in private, unless another Service immediately follows. Concerning the introduction of the Ave Mary, *vid. supra*, p. 11. This use of the Lord's prayer in private before the beginning of the Service seems to have led the compilers of King Edward's First Book to open with the Lord's Prayer, only said aloud, not in private; but a pious custom has brought in again the private prayer, as before, though without prescribing any particular form. The compilers of King Edward's Second Book prefixed to the Lord's Prayer, the Sentences, and an Exhortation, Confession, and Absolution of their own. *After* these follows, "O Lord, open thou our lips," &c. which stands *first* in the Breviary Service.

1. MATINS, or *Night Service*, (*after One, A.M.*)

*Introduction.*

*Verse.* O Lord, open Thou my lips.

*Resp.* And my mouth shall shew forth Thy praise.

(*Each person to sign his lips with the Cross.*)

*Verse.* O God, make speed to save me.

*Resp.* O Lord, make haste to help me.

(*Each person to sign himself from the forehead to the breast.*)

Glory be to the Father, &c.

As it was, &c. Amen.

(*Ordinarily added*) Hallelujah. (*i. e.* Praise ye the Lord.)

*Psalm 95.*—"O come let us sing," &c. with a verse called an Invitatory, "Let us worship the Lord: our Maker," divided into two parts, the whole being used before the 1st, 3rd, and 8th verse, and at the end, and again after the *Gloria Patri*, and the latter part after the 4th and 9th, and between the *Gloria* and the whole. This Invitatory varies with the season, but its general character is always preserved; e. g. in Advent, "O come

let us worship: the Lord, the King to come;" or "the Lord is at hand, O come let us worship;" again in Lent, "It is not to you lost labour that ye haste to rise up early: for the Lord hath promised a crown to those who wait for Him." At Pentecost, "Hallelujah, the Spirit of the Lord hath filled the round world: O come let us worship, Hallelujah."

A Hymn follows according to the day, and terminates the Introduction; then follow Psalms and Lessons, in one or three Nocturns, according as the Service is for Weekday or Sunday.

*On Sunday*, Eighteen Psalms with Nine Lessons; viz.

Psalms 1, 2, 3, 6, 7, 8, 9, & 10, 11, 12, 13, 14, 15.

A passage from Scripture, in three parts—(*according to the time of the Year.*)

Psalms 16, 17, 18.

A passage from some Father of the Church, in three parts.

Psalms 19, 20, 21.

A comment on some passage of the Gospel, in three parts.

On Weekdays, Twelve Psalms with Three Lessons, viz.

*On Monday.*

Psalms 27, 28, 29, 30, 31, 32, 33, 34, 35, 36, 37, 38.

A passage in three parts from Scripture or the Fathers.

*On Tuesday.*

Psalms 39, 40, 41, 42, 44, 45, 46, 47, 48, 49, 50, 52.

A passage in three parts, &c. as on *Monday*.

*On Wednesday.*

Psalms 53, 55, 56, 57, 58, 59, 60, 61, 62, 64, 66, 68.

A passage, &c.

*On Thursday.*

Psalms 69, 70, 71, 72, 73, 74, 75, 76, 77, 78, 79, 80.

A passage, &c.



*On Friday.*

Psalms 81, 82, 83, 84, 85, 86, 87, 88, 89. 94. 96, 97.

A passage, &c.

*On Saturday.*

Psalms 98, 99, 100, or 92. (*according to the day*) 101, 102, 103, 104, 105, 106, 107, 108, 109.

A passage, &c.

---

Then on every day of the week follows the

Te Deum Laudamus.

This noble Hymn follows in this place with especial propriety, on Sundays and other Festivals; viz. after the reading the words of Prophets and Apostles, and the writings and histories of Saints and Martyrs, all of whom are commemorated in it. On all days it impressively winds up the Service which precedes.

---

LAUDS ;—(*appended to the Matins towards the first twilight.*)

*Verse.* "O God, make speed, &c.

*Resp.* O Lord, make haste,"

Glory be, &c.

As it was, &c. Amen. Hallelujah.

*Then five Psalms, viz. on*

*Sunday.*

Psalms 93. 100. 63 and 67.

The Song of the Three Children.

Psalms 148—150.

*Monday.*

Psalms 51. 5. 63. Song of Isaiah. (Is. xii.) Psalm 148.

*Tuesday.*

Psalms 51. 43. 63. Song of Hezekiah. (Is. xxxviii.) Psalm 148.

*Wednesday.*

Psalms 51. 65. 63. Song of Hannah. (1 Sam. ii. Psalm 148.)

*Thursday.*

Psalms 51. 90. 63. Song of Moses. (Ex. xv.) Psalm 148.

*Friday.*

Psalms 51. 143. 63. Song of Habakkuk. (Hab. iii.) Psalm 148.

*Saturday.*

Psalms 51. 92. 63. Song of Moses. (Deut. xxxii.) Psalm 148.

*The Service ends on all days with a Text (Capitulum), a Hymn and a Collect (Oratio), varying with the day and season; the Song of Zacharias (Benedictus) being interposed between the Hymn and Collect, and several stated Collects, Invocations, and Sentences following.*

2. PRIME, *on the Rising of the Sun.*

*Verse.* "O God, make speed, &c.

*Resp.* O Lord, make haste, &c." and the *Gloria Patri*, &c. as before.

*A Hymn, the same every day in the year. Then four Psalms (except Saturday when there are three,) viz.*

Psalm 54 ;—

*Sunday.*—Psalm 118, or (sometimes) 93.

*Monday.*—Psalm 24.

*Tuesday.*—Psalm 25.

*Wednesday.*—Psalm 26.

*Thursday.*—Psalm 23.

*Friday.*—Psalm 22.

*Saturday.*—Psalm is omitted.

Then, throughout the week,—

Psalm 119, v. 1.—32. in two parts.

Then, on *Saturday* only, follows the Psalm Quicumque, commonly called the Athanasian Creed. It is a far truer view of this venerable composition, to consider it a Psalm or Hymn of praise, and of concurrence in God's appointments, as Psalm 118

or 139, or the Te Deum, than as a formal Creed; and by using it weekly, its living character and spirit are incorporated into the Christian's devotions, and its influence on the heart, as far as may be, secured. The time, too, should be observed. The dawn of the first day of the week.

*The Service concludes with a Text (Capitulum); with the Lord's Prayer, privately: a Confession of Priest to People, and in turn of People to Priest, and a corresponding Absolution; Sentences; Collect, the Third, for grace in our own Morning Service, a Lesson from the Book of Martyrs; an Invocation of St. Mary and All Saints; Sentences, with the Lord's Prayer, privately; Collect, the Second, at the end of our Communion Service; a Short Lesson; and Sentences.*

3. The THIRD (*Nine A.M.*) 4. SIXTH (*noon.*) 5. NINTH  
(*Three P.M.*)

“O God, make speed,” &c. *as before.*

*A Hymn, the same throughout the year, at the same hours respectively: then—*

*At the Third.*—Psalm 119, v. 33—80. in three parts.

*At the Sixth.*—Psalm 119, v. 81—128. in three parts.

*At the Ninth.*—Psalm 119, v. 129—176. in three parts.

Thus the whole of the 119th Psalm is gone through every day in the year.

*Then a Text (Capitulum) and Sentences, with the Lord's Prayer, privately, varying with the time of the year. Then the Collect for the day or week.*

#### 6. VESPERS. (*Evening.*)

“O God, make speed,” &c. *as before; then Five Psalms, viz. on*

*Sunday.*—Psalms 110, 111, 112, 113, 114, and 115.

*Monday.*—Psalms 116, *in two parts*, 117. 120, 121.

*Tuesday.*—Psalms 122, 123, 124, 125, 126.

*Wednesday.*—Psalms 127, 128, 129, 130, 131.

*Thursday.*—Psalms 132, 133, 135, 136, 137.

*Friday.*—Psalms 138, 139, 140, 141, 142.

*Saturday.*—Psalms 144, 145, 146, 147, *in two parts.*

*Then on every day a Text (Capitulum), a Hymn, and the Collect, all varying with the day and season; between the Hymn and Collect always is interposed the Magnificat, sometimes with Sentences after it. The Service ends, as Lauds, with Collects and Invocations.*

#### 7. COMPLINE. (*Bed-time.*)

This Service is almost invariable throughout the year.

*It begins with a Blessing for the ensuing night; a Short Lesson; the Confession and Absolution as at Prime; Sentences; then four Psalms, viz.*

Psalms 4, 31, *down to v.* 6, 91, 134.

*A Hymn: Text (Capitulum); Sentences; Song of Simeon (Luke ii); Sentences with the Lord's Prayer and Creed, privately; Collect for safety during the night. The Service ends with an Antiphon in praise of the Virgin, and Collect upon it.*

To this Sketch of the Services must be added a few words concerning the Antiphons and Benedictions which occur throughout them, but have not been noticed in their places.

The Antiphons or Anthems are sentences preceding and succeeding the Separate Psalms and Songs, and are ordinarily verses taken from the particular compositions to which they are attached. They seem to answer the purpose of calling attention to what is coming, of interpreting it, or of pointing out the particular part of it which is intended to bear on the Service of the day; in all respects answering the place of what is called by musicians a key note. They are repeated at the end, as if to fix the impression or the lesson intended.

Antiphons are introduced in other connexions, as before Collects; such are those, for instance, in the Commemorations of

the Blessed Virgin and the Apostles in Vespers and Lauds. Such, too, are the Antiphons to the Blessed Virgin placed at the end of Compline, to which especial attention was above directed (p. 11), on the ground of their objectionable nature. They shall be here given, in order to show clearly, as a simple inspection of them will suffice to do, the utter contrariety between the Roman system, as actually existing, and our own; which, however similar in certain respects, are in others so at variance, as to make any attempt to reconcile them together in their present state perfectly nugatory. Till Rome moves towards us, it is quite impossible that we should move towards Rome; however closely we may approximate to her in particular doctrines, principles, or views. In reading the following, it should be recollected, indeed, that Antiphons are not, strictly speaking, Prayers, but Sentences applied to the particular purpose of meditation, thanksgiving, &c.; yet the following, taken together, are quite beyond the power of any defence which might thence be available for less explicit compositions.

*From Advent to the Purification.*

Alma Redemptoris Mater quæ pervia cæli	Kindly Mother of the Redeemer, who art ever of heaven
Porta manes, et stella maris, succurre cadenti,	The open gate, and the star of the sea, aid a fallen people,
Surgere qui curat, populo; tu quæ genuisti,	Which is trying to rise again; thou who didst give birth,
Naturâ mirante, tuum sanctum Geni- torem,	While Nature marvelled how, to thy Holy Creator,
Virgo prius ac posterius, Gabrielis ab ore,	Virgin both before and after, from Gabriel's mouth
Sumens illud Ave, peccatorum mi- serere.	Accepting the All hail, be merciful towards sinners.

*From the Purification to Good Friday.*

Ave, Regina cœlorum!	Hail, O Queen of the heavens!
Ave, Domina Angelorum!	Hail, Lady of Angels!
Salve radix, salve porta!	Hail, the root! hail, the gate!
Ex quâ mundo lux est orta.	Whence to the world light is risen.
Gaude, Virgo gloriosa,	Rejoice, O glorious Virgin,
Super omnes speciosa;	Beautiful above all;
Vale, o valde decora,	Farewell, O thou most comely,
Et pro nobis Christum exora.	And prevail on Christ for us by thy prayer.

*From Easter to the First Week complete after Pentecost.*

Regina cœli, lætare, Alleluia.	Rejoice, O queen of heaven, Hallelujah.
Quia quem meruisti portare, Alleluia.	For He, whom for thy obedience' sake thou didst bear, Hallelujah.
Resurrexit, sicut dixit, Alleluia.	Is risen, as he said, Hallelujah.
Ora pro nobis Deum. Alleluia.	Pray thou God for us. Hallelujah.

*From Trinity tide to Advent.*

Salve Regina, mater misericordiæ, vita, dulcedo et spes nostra, salve. Ad te clamamus exules, filii Hevæ. Ad te suspiramus, gementes et flentes in hac lachrymarum valle. Eja ergo ad- vocata nostra, illos tuos misericordes oculos ad nos converte, et Jesum, benedictum fructum ventris tui, nobis post hoc exilium ostende. O clemens, O pia, O dulcis Virgo Maria.	Hail, O Queen, the mother of mercy, our life, sweetness, and hope, hail. To Thee we exiles cry out, the sons of Eve. To Thee we sigh, groaning and weeping in this valley of tears. Come then, O our Patroness, turn thou on us those merciful eyes of thine, and show to us, after this exile, Jesus the blessed fruit of thy womb. O gracious, O pitiful, O sweet Virgin Mary.
--	---

These Antiphons have already been shown to be of comparatively modern origin; which, indeed, is sufficiently clear from their composition, independently of the question of doctrine. The Absolutions and Benedictions on the other hand seem, from their doctrinal character, to come from high antiquity. Wheatly remarks, that the precise *indicative* Absolution, such as it occurs in our Visitation for the Sick, though altogether justifiable and edifying, did not come into use till the twelfth century; that is, about the time of the above innovations in commemorating the Blessed Virgin. Now the Absolutions and Benedictions in the Breviary happen, on the contrary, to be of a remarkably simple character; they are uniformly in the shape of *petitions* to ALMIGHTY GOD, and they include the minister using them, being worded in the first, not the second person. Again, in the *quasi* Absolution, after the stated Confession at Prime and Compline, it is to be noticed, that the People absolve the Priest, before, and in the same words in which the Priest absolves the People, as if vindicating to the *body* of Christians that sacramental

power, (whatever may be its degree,) which might have seemed inconsistent with the special stress laid by Romanism on Sacerdotal gifts. An Absolution occurs in each Nocturn between the Psalms and Lessons: a short Benediction is pronounced before the reading of each of the latter, being first asked for by the Reader.

§ 2. SERVICE FOR SUNDAY, JUNE 21, 1801.

*Fourth Sunday after Pentecost.*

1. MATIN SERVICE.

O LORD, open Thou my lips.

*And my mouth shall show forth Thy praise.*

O God, make speed to save me.

*O Lord make haste to help me.*

Glory be, &c. *Amen.*

Praise ye the Lord. (Hallelujah.)

(a) *Invitatory.*

Let us worship the Lord: our Maker.

Let us worship, &c.

*Psalm 95.*

O come, let us sing unto the Lord: let us heartily rejoice in the strength of our salvation.

Let us come before his presence with thanksgiving: and shew ourselves glad in him with psalms.

Let us worship the Lord our Maker.

For the Lord is a great God: and a great King above all gods.

In his hand are all the corners of the earth: and the strength of the hills is his also.

Our Maker.

The sea is his, and he made it: and his hands prepared the dry land.

O come, let us worship and fall down: and kneel before the Lord our Maker;

For he is the Lord our God: and we are the people of his pasture, and the sheep of his hand.

Let us worship the Lord our Maker.

To-day if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts: as in the provocation, and as in the day of temptation in the wilderness.

When your fathers tempted me: proved me,<sup>2</sup> and saw my works.



Our Maker.

Forty years long was I grieved with this generation, and said: It is a people that do err in their hearts; for they have not known my ways.

Unto whom I swear in my wrath: that they should not enter into my rest.

Let us worship the Lord our Maker.

Glory be, &c.

As it was in the beginning, &c. *Amen.*

Our Maker.

Let us worship the Lord our Maker.

(b) *Hymn.*

Let us arise, and watch by night,<sup>1</sup>

And meditate always;

[Nocte surgentes.] And chant, as in our Maker's sight,

United hymns of praise.

So, singing with the Saints in bliss,

With them we may attain

Life everlasting after this,

And heaven for earthly pain.

Grant it to us, O Father, Son,

And Spirit, God of grace,

To whom all worship shall be done

In every time and place. *Amen.*

---

NOCTURN I.

(c) *Antiphon.*

Serve ye the Lord.

*Psalm 1. (1)*

BLESSED is the man that hath not walked in the counsel of the ungodly, nor stood in the way of sinners: and hath not sat in the seat of the scornful;

But his delight is in the law of the Lord: and in his law will he exercise himself day and night.

And he shall be like a tree planted by the water-side: that will bring forth his fruit in due season.

His leaf also shall not wither: and look, whatsoever he doeth, it shall prosper.

As for the ungodly, it is not so with them: but they are like the chaff, which the wind scattereth away from the face of the earth.

Therefore the ungodly shall not be able to stand in the judgment: neither the sinners in the congregation of the righteous.

But the Lord knoweth the way of the righteous: and the way of the ungodly shall perish. Glory be, &c.

*Psalm 2. (2)*

Why do the heathen so furiously rage together: and why do the people imagine a vain thing?

The kings of the earth stand up, and the rulers take counsel together: against the Lord, and against his Anointed.

Let us break their bonds asunder: and cast away their cords from us.

He that dwelleth in heaven shall laugh them to scorn: the Lord shall have them in derision.

Then shall he speak unto them in his wrath: and vex them in his sore displeasure.

Yet have I set my King: upon my holy hill of Sion.

I will preach the law, whereof the Lord hath said unto me: Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee.

Desire of me, and I shall give thee the heathen for thine inheritance: and the utmost parts of the earth for thy possession.

Thou shalt bruise them with a rod of iron: and break them in pieces like a potter's vessel.

Be wise now therefore, O ye kings: be learned, ye that are judges of the earth.

Serve the Lord in fear: and rejoice unto him with reverence.

Kiss the Son, lest he be angry, and so ye perish from the right way: if his wrath be kindled, (yea, but a little) blessed are all they that put their trust in him. Glory be, &c.

*Psalm 3. (3)*

Lord, how are they increased that trouble me: many are they that rise against me.

Many one there be that say of my soul: There is no help for him in his God.

But thou, O Lord, art my defender: thou art my worship, and the lifter up of my head.

I did call upon the Lord with my voice: and he heard me out of his holy hill.

I laid me down and slept, and rose up again: for the Lord sustained me.

I will not be afraid for ten thousands of the people: that have set themselves against me round about.

Up, Lord, and help me, O my God: for thou smitest all mine enemies upon the cheek-bone; thou hast broken the teeth of the ungodly.

Salvation belongeth unto the Lord: and thy blessing is upon thy people. Glory be, &c.

*Psalm 6. (4)*

O Lord, rebuke me not in thine indignation ; neither chasten me in thy displeasure.

Have mercy upon me, O Lord, for I am weak : O Lord heal me, for my bones are vexed.

My soul also is sore troubled : but, Lord, how long wilt thou punish me ?

Turn thee, O Lord, and deliver my soul : O save me for thy mercies' sake.

For in death no man remembereth thee : and who will give thee thanks in the pit ?

I am weary of my groaning ; every night wash I my bed : and water my couch with my tears.

My beauty is gone for very trouble : and worn away because of all mine enemies.

Away from me, all ye that work vanity ; for the Lord hath heard the voice of my weeping.

The Lord hath heard my petition : the Lord will receive my prayer.

All mine enemies shall be confounded, and sore vexed : they shall be turned back, and put to shame suddenly. Glory be, &c.

*(c) Antiphon.*

Serve the Lord in fear, and rejoice unto Him with reverence.

*(d) Antiphon.*

God is a righteous judge.

*Psalm 7. (5)*

O Lord my God, in Thee have I put my trust : save me from all them that persecute me, and deliver me.

Lest he devour my soul like a lion, and tear it in pieces : while there is none to help.

O Lord my God, if I have done any such thing : or if there be any wickedness in my hands ;

If I have rewarded evil unto him that dealt friendly with me : yea, I have delivered him that without any cause is mine enemy :

Then let mine enemy persecute my soul, and take me : yea, let him tread my life down upon the earth, and lay mine honour in the dust.

Stand up, O Lord, in thy wrath, and lift up thyself, because of the indignation of mine enemies : arise up for me in the judgment that thou hast commanded.

And so shall the congregation of the people come about thee : for their sakes therefore lift up thyself again.

The Lord shall judge the people ; give sentence with me, O Lord : according to my righteousness, and according to the innocency that is in me.

O let the wickedness of the ungodly come to an end : but guide thou the just.

For the righteous God trieth the very hearts and reins.

My help cometh of God : who preserveth them that are true of heart.

God is a righteous judge, strong and patient ; and God is provoked every day.

If a man will not turn, he will whet his sword : he hath bent his bow, and made it ready.

He hath prepared for him the instruments of death : he ordaineth his arrows against the persecutors.

Behold, he travaileth with mischief : he hath conceived sorrow, and brought forth ungodliness.

He hath graven and digged up a pit : and is fallen himself into the destruction that he made for other.

For his travail shall come upon his own head : and his wickedness shall fall on his own pate.

I will give thanks unto the Lord, according to his righteousness : and I will praise the name of the Lord most High. Glory be, &c.

*Psalm 8. (6)*

O Lord our Governor, how excellent is thy Name in all the world : thou that hast set thy glory above the heavens !

Out of the mouth of very babes and sucklings hast thou ordained strength, because of thine enemies : that thou mightest still the enemy, and the avenger.

For I will consider thy heavens, even the works of thy fingers : the moon and the stars, which thou hast ordained.

What is man, that thou art mindful of him : and the son of man, that thou visitest him ?

Thou madest him lower than the angels : to crown him with glory and worship.

Thou makest him to have dominion of the works of thy hands : and thou hast put all things in subjection under his feet ;

All sheep and oxen : yea, and the beasts of the field ;

The fowls of the air, and the fishes of the sea : and whatsoever walketh through the paths of the seas.

O Lord our Governor : how excellent is thy Name in all the world ! Glory be, &c.

*Psalms 9 & 10. (7)*

I will give thanks unto thee, O Lord, with my whole heart : I will speak of all thy marvellous works.

I will be glad and rejoice in thee : yea, my songs will I make of thy name, O thou most Highest.

While mine enemies are driven back ; they shall fall and perish at thy presence.

For thou hast maintained my right and my cause : thou art set in the throne that judgest right.

Thou hast rebuked the heathen, and destroyed the ungodly : thou hast put out their name for ever and ever.

O thou enemy, destructions are come to a perpetual end : even as the cities which thou hast destroyed ; their memorial is perished with them.

But the Lord shall endure for ever : he hath also prepared his seat for judgment.

For he shall judge the world in righteousness : and minister true judgment unto the people.

The Lord also will be a defence for the oppressed : even a refuge in due time of trouble.

And they that know thy Name will put their trust in thee : for thou, Lord, hast never failed them that seek thee.

O praise the Lord which dwelleth in Sion : shew the people of his doings.

For when he maketh inquisition for blood, he remembereth them : and forgetteth not the complaint of the poor.

Have mercy upon me, O Lord ; consider the trouble which I suffer of them that hate me : thou that liftest me up from the gates of death.

That I may shew all thy praises within the ports of the daughter of Sion : I will rejoice in thy salvation.

The heathen are sunk down in the pit that they made : in the same net which they hid privily, is their foot taken.

The Lord is known to execute judgment : the ungodly is trapped in the work of his own hands.

The wicked shall be turned into hell : and all the people that forget God.

For the poor shall not alway be forgotten : the patient abiding of the meek shall not perish for ever.

Up, Lord, and let not man have the upper hand : let the heathen be judged in thy sight.

Put them in fear, O Lord : that the heathen may know themselves to be but men.

Why standest thou so far off, O Lord : and hidest thy face in the needful time of trouble ?

The ungodly for his own lust doth persecute the poor : let them be taken in the crafty wiliness that they have imagined.

For the ungodly hath made boast of his own heart's desire : and speaketh good of the covetous, whom God abhorreth.

The ungodly is so proud, that he careth not for God : neither is God in all his thoughts.

His ways are always grievous : thy judgments are far above out of his sight, and therefore defieth he all his enemies.

For he hath said in his heart, Tush, I shall never be cast down : there shall no harm happen unto me.

His mouth is full of cursing, deceit, and fraud : under his tongue is ungodliness and vanity.

He sitteth lurking in the thievish corners of the streets :  
and privily in his lurking dens doth he murder the innocent :  
his eyes are set against the poor.

For he lieth waiting secretly, even as a lion lurketh he in  
his den : that he may ravish the poor.

He doth ravish the poor : when he getteth him into his  
net.

He falleth down, and humbleth himself : that the congrega-  
tion of the poor may fall into the hands of his captains.

He hath said in his heart, Tush, God hath forgotten : he  
hideth away his face, and he will never see it.

Arise, O Lord God, and lift up thine hand : forget not  
the poor.

Wherefore should the wicked blaspheme God : while he  
doth say in his heart, Tush, thou God carest not for it.

Surely thou hast seen it : for thou beholdest ungodliness  
and wrong.

That thou mayest take the matter into thy hand : the  
poor committeth himself unto thee ; for thou art the helper  
of the friendless.

Break thou the power of the ungodly and malicious : take  
away his ungodliness, and thou shalt find none.

The Lord is King for ever and ever : and the heathen are  
perished out of the land.

Lord, thou hast heard the desire of the poor : thou pre-  
parest their heart, and thine ear hearkeneth thereto.

To help the fatherless and poor unto their right : that the  
man of the earth be no more exalted against them. Glory  
be, &c.

*Psalm 11. (8)*

In the Lord put I my trust : how say ye then to my soul,  
that she should flee as a bird unto the hill ?

For, lo, the ungodly bend their bow, and make ready their  
arrows within the quiver : that they may privily shoot at  
them which are true of heart.

For the foundations will be cast down : and what hath the  
righteous done ?

The Lord is in his holy temple : the Lord's seat is in  
heaven.

His eyes consider the poor : and his eyelids try the chil-  
dren of men.

The Lord alloweth the righteous : but the ungodly, and  
him that delighteth in wickedness, doth his soul abhor.

Upon the ungodly he shall rain snares, fire and brimstone,  
storm and tempest : this shall be their portion to drink.

For the righteous Lord loveth righteousness : his counte-  
nance will behold the thing that is just. Glory be, &c.

(d) *Antiphon.*

God is a righteous judge, strong and patient: shall God be angry every day?

(e) *Antiphon.*

Thou shalt keep them, O Lord.

*Psalm 12. (9)*

Help me, Lord, for there is not one godly man left: for the faithful are minished from among the children of men.

They talk of vanity every one with his neighbour: they do but flatter with their lips, and dissemble in their double heart.

The Lord shall root out all deceitful lips: and the tongue that speaketh proud things.

Which have said, with our tongue will we prevail: we are they that ought to speak; who is Lord over us?

Now for the comfortless troubles' sake of the needy: and because of the deep sighing of the poor;

I will up, saith the Lord: and will help every one from him that swelleth against him, and will set him at rest.

The words of the Lord are pure words: even as the silver which from the earth is tried, and purified seven times in the fire.

Thou shalt keep them, O Lord: thou shalt preserve him from this generation for ever.

The ungodly walk on every side: when they are exalted, the children of men are put to rebuke. Glory be, &c.

*Psalm 13. (10)*

How long wilt thou forget me, O Lord, for ever: how long wilt thou hide thy face from me?

How long shall I seek counsel in my soul, and be so vexed in my heart: how long shall mine enemies triumph over me?

Consider and hear me, O Lord my God: lighten mine eyes that I sleep not in death;

Lest mine enemy say, I have prevailed against him: for if I be cast down, they that trouble me will rejoice at it.

But my trust is in thy mercy: and my heart is joyful in thy salvation.

I will sing of the Lord, because he hath dealt so lovingly with me: yea, I will praise the Name of the Lord most Highest. Glory be, &c.

*Psalm 14. (11)*

The fool hath said in his heart: There is no God.

They are corrupt, and become abominable in their doings: there is none that doeth good, no, not one.

The Lord looked down from heaven upon the children of men: to see if there were any that would understand, and seek after God.

But they are all gone out of the way, they are altogether become abominable: there is none that doeth good, no not one.

Their throat is an open sepulchre; with their tongues have they deceived: the poison of asps is under their lips.

Their mouth is full of cursing and bitterness: their feet are swift to shed blood.

Destruction and unhappiness is in their ways, and the way of peace have they not known: there is no fear of God before their eyes.

Have they no knowledge, that they are all such workers of mischief: eating up my people as it were bread, and call not upon the Lord?

There were they brought in great fear, even where no fear was: for God is in the generation of the righteous.

As for you, ye have made a mock at the counsel of the poor: because he putteth his trust in the Lord.

Who shall give salvation unto Israel out of Sion? when the Lord turneth the captivity of his people: then shall Jacob rejoice, and Israel shall be glad. Glory be, &c.

*Psalm 15. (12)*

Lord, who shall dwell in thy tabernacle: or who shall rest upon thy holy hill?

Even he that leadeth an uncorrupt life: and doeth the thing which is right, and speaketh the truth from his heart.

He that hath used no deceit in his tongue, nor done evil to his neighbour: and hath not slandered his neighbour.

He that setteth not by himself, but is lowly in his own eyes: and maketh much of them that fear the Lord.

He that sweareth unto his neighbour, and disappointeth him not: though it were to his own hindrance.

He that hath not given his money upon usury: nor taken reward against the innocent.

Whoso doeth these things shall never fall. Glory be, &c.

(e) *Antiphon.*

Thou shalt keep them, O Lord: thou shalt preserve him.

(f) *Verse and Response.*

I have thought upon thy Name, O Lord, in the night season.

*And have kept thy law.*

*The Lord's Prayer.  
(Privately till the last two petitions.)*

Our Father, &c.

And lead us not into temptation,

*But deliver us from evil.*

*Absolution.*

O Lord Jesu Christ, hear the prayers of thy servants, and have mercy upon us, who with the Father and the Holy Ghost, livest and reignest world without end. *Amen.*



[Jube, Domine,  
benedicere.]

*Reader.*—Sir, pray for a blessing.

*Benediction 1.*

*Minister.*—The Father everlasting, bless us with a perpetual blessing. *Amen.*

*Lesson 1.*

1 Sam. xvii. 1—7.

Now the Philistines gathered together their armies to battle, and were gathered together at Shochoh, which *belongeth* to Judah, and pitched between Shochoh and Azekah, in Ephes-dammim.

And Saul and the men of Israel were gathered together and pitched by the valley of Elah, and set the battle in array against the Philistines.

And the Philistines stood on a mountain on the one side, and Israel stood on a mountain on the other side: and *there was* a valley between them.

And there went out a champion out of the camp of the Philistines, named Goliath, of Gath, whose height *was* six cubits and a span.

And *he had* an helmet of brass upon his head, and he *was* armed with a coat of mail; and the weight of the coat *was* five thousand shekels of brass.

And *he had* greaves of brass upon his legs, and a target of brass between his shoulders.

And the staff of his spear *was* like a weaver's beam; and his spear's head *weighed* six hundred shekels of iron; and one bearing a shield went before him.

But Thou, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

*Response 1.*

*Prepare your hearts unto the Lord, and serve Him only; and He will deliver you out of the hand of the Philistines.*

If ye do return unto the Lord with all your hearts, then put away the strange gods from among you.

*And He will deliver you out of the hands of the Philistines.*

*Reader.*—Sir, pray for a blessing.

*Benediction 2.*

*Minister.*—The only-begotten Son of God, vouchsafe to bless and succour us. *Amen.*

*Lesson 2.*

1 Sam. xvii. 8—11.

And he stood and cried unto the armies of Israel, and said unto them, Why are ye come out to set *your* battle in array? *am* not I a Philistine, and ye servants to Saul? choose you a man for you, and let him come down to me.

If he be able to fight with me, and to kill me, then will

we be your servants: but if I prevail against him, and kill him, then shall ye be our servants, and serve us.

And the Philistine said, I defy the armies of Israel this day: give me a man that we may fight together.

When Saul and all Israel heard those words of the Philistine, they were dismayed, and greatly afraid.

But Thou, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

*Response 2.*

*God is the avenger of all men. He hath sent His angel, and taken me from my Father's sheep; and hath anointed me with the oil of His mercy.*

The Lord hath delivered me out of the mouth of the lion, and out of the paw of the bear.

*And hath anointed me with the oil of His mercy.*

*Reader.*—Sir, pray for a blessing.

*The Benediction. 3.* *Minister.*—The grace of the Holy Ghost illuminate our minds and hearts. *Amen.*

*Lesson 3.* Now David was the son of that Ephrathite of Beth-lehem-1 Sam. xvii. 12—16. judah, whose name was Jesse; and he had eight sons: and the man went among men for an old man in the days of Saul.

And the three eldest sons of Jesse went, and followed Saul to the battle: and the names of his three sons that went to the battle were Eliab the first-born; and next unto him, Abinadab; and the third, Shammah.

And David was the youngest; and the three eldest followed Saul.

But David went and returned from Saul, to feed his father's sheep at Bethlehem.

And the Philistine drew near, morning and evening, and presented himself forty days.

But thou, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

*Response 3.*

*The Lord, who delivered me out of the mouth of the lion, and out of the paw of the bear, He shall deliver me from the hands of mine enemies.*

God hath sent forth His mercy and truth; my soul is among lions.

*He shall deliver me from the hands of mine enemies.*

Glory be, &c.

*He shall deliver me from the hands of mine enemies.*

NOCTURN II.

(g) *Antiphon.*

*Psalm 16.* (13)

My goods.

Preserve me, O God : for in thee I have put my trust.

O my soul, thou hast said unto the Lord : thou art my God, my goods are nothing unto thee.

All my delight is upon the saints, that are in the earth : and upon such as excel in virtue.

But they that run after another god : shall have great trouble.

Their drink-offerings of blood will I not offer : neither make mention of their names within my lips.

The Lord himself is the portion of mine inheritance, and of my cup : thou shalt maintain my lot.

The lot is fallen unto me in a fair ground : yea, I have a goodly heritage.

I will thank the Lord for giving me warning : my reins also chasten me in the night-season.

I have set God always before me : for he is on my right hand, therefore I shall not fall.

Wherefore my heart was glad, and my glory rejoiced : my flesh also shall rest in hope.

For why ? thou shalt not leave my soul in hell : neither shalt thou suffer thy Holy One to see corruption.

Thou shalt show me the path of life : in thy presence is the fulness of joy : and at thy right hand there is pleasure for evermore. Glory be, &c.

(g) *Antiphon.*

My goods are nothing unto Thee ; in Thee have I put my trust, preserve me, O God.

(h) *Antiphon.*

*Psalm 17.* (14)

Because of the words of Thy lips.

Hear the right, O Lord, consider my complaint : and hearken unto my prayer, that goeth not out of feigned lips.

Let my sentence come forth from thy presence : and let thine eyes look upon the thing that is equal.

Thou hast proved and visited mine heart in the night season ; thou hast tried me, and shalt find no wickedness in me : for I am utterly purposed that my mouth shall not offend.

Because of men's works that are done against the words of thy lips : I have kept me from the ways of the destroyer.

O hold thou up my goings in thy paths : that my footsteps slip not.

I have called upon thee, O God, for thou shalt hear me : incline thine ear to me, and hearken unto my words.

Show thy marvellous loving-kindness, thou that art the Saviour of them which put their trust in thee: from such as resist thy right hand.

Keep me as the apple of an eye: hide me under the shadow of thy wings.

From the ungodly that trouble me: mine enemies compass me round about to take away my soul.

They are inclosed in their own fat: and their mouth speaketh proud things.

They lie waiting in our way on every side: turning their eyes down to the ground;

Like as a lion that is greedy of his prey: and as it were a lion's whelp lurking in secret places.

Up, Lord, disappoint him, and cast him down: deliver my soul from the ungodly, which is a sword of thine;

From the men of thy hand, O Lord, from the men, I say, and from the evil world: which have their portion in this life, whose bellies thou fillest with thy hid treasure.

They have children at their desire: and leave the rest of their substance for their babes.

But as for me, I will behold thy presence in righteousness: and when I awake up after thy likeness, I shall be satisfied with it. Glory be, &c.

(h) *Antiphon.*

Because of the words of Thy lips, I have kept me from the ways of the destroyer.

(i) *Antiphon.*

*Psalm 18. (15)*

I will love Thee.

... O Lord, my strength; the Lord is my stony rock, and my defence: my Saviour, my God, and my might, in whom I will trust: my buckler, the horn also of my salvation, and my refuge.

I will call upon the Lord, which is worthy to be praised: so shall I be safe from mine enemies.

The sorrows of death compassed me: and the overflowings of ungodliness made me afraid.

The pains of hell came about me: the snares of death overtook me.

In my trouble I will call upon the Lord: and complain unto my God.

So shall he hear my voice out of his holy temple: and my complaint shall come before him, it shall enter even into his ears.

The earth trembled and quaked: the very foundations also of the hills shook, and were removed, because he was wroth.

There went a smoke out in his presence: and a consuming fire out of his mouth, so that coals were kindled at it.

He bowed the heavens also, and came down: and it was dark under his feet.

He rode upon the cherubims, and did fly: he came flying upon the wings of the wind.

He made darkness his secret place: his pavilion round about him with dark water, and thick clouds to cover him.

At the brightness of his presence his clouds removed: hailstones, and coals of fire.

The Lord also thundered out of heaven, and the Highest gave his thunder: hail-stones, and coals of fire.

He sent out his arrows, and scattered them: he cast forth lightnings and destroyed them.

The springs of waters were seen, and the foundations of the round world were discovered, at thy chiding, O Lord: at the blasting of the breath of thy displeasure.

He shall send down from on high to fetch me: and shall take me out of many waters.

He shall deliver me from my strongest enemy, and from them which hate me: for they are too mighty for me.

They prevented me in the day of my trouble: but the Lord was my upholder.

He brought me forth also into a place of liberty: he brought me forth, even because he had a favour unto me.

The Lord shall reward me after my righteous dealing: according to the cleanness of my hands shall he recompense me.

Because I have kept the ways of the Lord: and have not forsaken my God, as the wicked doeth.

For I have an eye unto all his laws: and will not cast out his commandments from me.

I was also uncorrupt before him: and eschewed mine own wickedness.

Therefore shall the Lord reward me after my righteous dealing: and according unto the cleanness of my hands in his eye-sight.

With the holy thou shalt be holy: and with a perfect man thou shalt be perfect.

With the clean thou shalt be clean: and with the froward thou shalt learn frowardness.

For thou shalt save the people that are in adversity: and shalt bring down the high looks of the proud.

Thou also shalt light my candle: the Lord my God shall make my darkness to be light.

For in thee I shall discomfit an host of men: and with the help of my God I shall leap over the wall.

The way of God is an undefiled way: the word of the Lord also is tried in the fire; he is the defender of all them that put their trust in him.

For who is God, but the Lord: or who hath any strength, except our God?

It is God that girdeth me with strength of war; and maketh my way perfect.

He maketh my feet like harts' feet: and setteth me up on high.

He teacheth mine hands to fight: and mine arms shall break even a bow of steel.

Thou hast given me the defence of thy salvation: thy right hand also shall hold me up, and thy loving correction shall make me great.

Thou shalt make room enough under me for to go: that my footsteps shall not slide.

I will follow upon mine enemies, and overtake them: neither will I turn again till I have destroyed them.

I will smite them, that they shall not be able to stand: but fall under my feet.

Thou hast girded me with strength unto the battle: thou shalt throw down mine enemies under me.

Thou hast made mine enemies also to turn their backs upon me: and I shall destroy them that hate me.

They shall cry, but there shall be none to help them: yea, even unto the Lord shall they cry, but he shall not hear them.

I will beat them as small as the dust before the wind: I will cast them out as the clay in the streets.

Thou shalt deliver me from the strivings of the people: and thou shalt make me the head of the heathen.

A people whom I have not known: shall serve me.

As soon as they hear of me, they shall obey me: but the strange children shall dissemble with me.

The strange children shall fail: and be afraid out of their prisons.

The Lord liveth, and blessed be my strong helper: and praised be the God of my salvation.

Even the God that seeth that I be avenged: and subdueth the people unto me.

It is he that delivereth me from my cruel enemies, and setteth me up above mine adversaries: thou shalt rid me from the wicked man.

For this cause will I give thanks unto thee, O Lord, among the Gentiles: and sing praises unto thy Name.

Great prosperity giveth he unto his king: and sheweth

loving-kindness unto David his Anointed, and unto his seed for evermore. Glory be, &c.

(i) *Antiphon.* I will love Thee, O Lord, my strength.

(j) *Verse and* Thou also, O Lord, shalt light my candle.

*Response.* *The Lord my God shall make my darkness to be light.*

*The Lord's Prayer.* Our Father, &c.

(*Privately.*) And lead us not into temptation.

*But deliver us from evil.*

*Absolution 2.* His pity and mercy succour us, who with the Father and the Holy Ghost liveth and reigneth world without end. *Amen.*

*Reader.*—Sir, pray for a blessing.

*Benediction 4.* *Minister.*—God the Father Almighty, be favourable and gracious to us. *Amen.*

*Lesson 4.* The children of Israel presented themselves against their  
(*Sermon of St. Augustin, Bishop.*) adversaries forty days. Which signifieth the present world having four seasons and four parts of the earth, and in which

the Christian people ceaseth not to war against Goliath and his host, that is, with the devil and his angels. Yet they could not conquer, except that Christ, the true David, had descended with his staff, even the mystery of His Cross. For before the coming of Christ, dearly beloved brethren, the devil was at liberty; but when Christ came, He did towards him what the Gospel speaketh of, "No man can enter into a strong man's house and spoil his goods, unless first he bind the strong man." Christ therefore came, and bound the devil.

Thou then, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

*Response 4.* *Saul hath slain his thousands, and David his ten thousands; for the hand of the Lord was with him, and he slew the Philistines, and took away the reproach from Israel.*

Is not this he of whom they sang in the dance, saying, Saul hath slain his thousands, and David his ten thousands.

*For the hand of the Lord was with him, and he slew the Philistines, and took away the reproach from Israel.*

*Reader.*—Sir, pray for a blessing

*Benediction 5.* *Minister.*—Christ grant to us the joys of endless life. *Amen.*

*Lesson 5.* But some one will say, If the devil be bound, how hath he (*Sermon continued.*) still such dominion? It is true, dearly beloved, that he hath much dominion, but it is over the lukewarm and careless, and those who fear not the Lord in truth. For he is bound, as a dog that is chained, able to bite none but such as are led by a fatal recklessness to close with him. Ye know, my brethren, the foolishness of him whom a chained dog biteth. Only beware thou of closing with him in the likings and lusts of this world, and he will not dare to come to thee. He can bark, he can vex; he can in no wise bite except those that be willing. Not his violence, but his blandishments hurt us; he doth not extort, he winneth our consent.

But thou, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

*Response 5.*

*Ye mountains of Gilboa, let there be no dew, neither let there be rain upon you; for there the mighty men of Israel are fallen.*

All ye mountains which are in his border, the Lord shall visit you, and ye shall pass from Gilboa.

*For there the mighty men of Israel are fallen.*

*Reader.*—Sir, pray for a blessing.

*Benediction 6.*

*Minister.*—God kindle the fire of his love in our hearts.

*Amen.*

*Lesson 6.*

*(Sermon continued.)* Therefore David came, and found the Jewish people fighting against the devil; and when there was no one to undertake the single combat, he, bearing the figure of Christ, proceeded to the battle, with a staff in his hand, and went out against Goliath. And then was shadowed out in him, what was fulfilled in the Lord Jesus Christ. For Christ, the true David, came, who, being to fight against the spiritual Goliath, that is, the devil, bare his own Cross. Ye see, my brethren, where David struck the Philistine, in the forehead, which had not been signed by the sign of the Cross. For as the staff was the type of the Cross, so also the stone wherewith he was struck, was a type of the Lord Christ.

Thou therefore, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

*Response 6.*

*I took thee from the sheepcote, saith the Lord, to be Shepherd over my people, and I was with thee whithersoever thou wentest, and have cut off all thine enemies out of thy sight.*

And I have made thee a great name, like unto the name



of the great men that are in the earth, and have caused thee to rest from all thine enemies.

*And I was with thee whithersoever thou wentest, and have cut off all thine enemies out of Thy sight.*

Glory be to the Father, &c.

*And I was with thee whithersoever thou wentest, and have cut off all thine enemies out of Thy sight.*

### NOCTURN III.

(k) *Antiphon.*

*Psalm 19. (16)*

There is no speech.

The heavens declare the glory of God : and the firmament sheweth his handy work.

One day telleth another : and one night certifieth another.

There is neither speech nor language : but their voices are heard among them.

Their sound is gone out into all lands : and their words into the ends of the world.

In them hath he set a tabernacle for the sun : which cometh forth as a bridegroom out of his chamber, and rejoiceth as a giant to run his course.

It goeth from the uttermost part of the heaven, and runneth about unto the end of it again : and there is nothing hid from the heat thereof.

The law of the Lord is an undefiled law, converting the soul : the testimony of the Lord is sure, and giveth wisdom unto the simple.

The statutes of the Lord are right, and rejoice the heart, the commandment of the Lord is pure, and giveth light unto the eyes.

The fear of the Lord is clean, and endureth for ever ; the judgments of the Lord are true, and righteous altogether.

More to be desired are they than gold, yea, than much fine gold : sweeter also than honey, and the honeycomb.

Moreover by them is thy servant taught : and in keeping of them there is great reward.

Who can tell how oft he offendeth : O cleanse thou me from my secret faults !

Keep thy servant also from presumptuous sins, lest they get the dominion over me : so shall I be undefiled, and innocent from the great offence.

Let the words of my mouth, and the meditation of my heart : be always acceptable in thy sight.

O Lord : my strength, and my redeemer. Glory be, &c.

*(k) Antiphon.*

There is neither speech nor language, but their voices are heard among them.

*(l) Antiphon.*

The Lord hear thee.

*Psalm 20 (17)*

..... in the day of trouble: the name of the God of Jacob defend thee.

Send thee help from the sanctuary: and strengthen thee out of Sion.

Remember all thy offerings: and accept thy burnt sacrifice.

Grant thee thy heart's desire: and fulfil all thy mind.

We will rejoice in thy salvation, and triumph in the Name of the Lord our God: the Lord perform all thy petitions.

Now know I that the Lord helpeth his Anointed, and will hear him from his holy heaven: even with the wholesome strength of his right hand.

Some put their trust in chariots, and some in horses: but we will remember the name of the Lord our God.

They are brought down, and fallen: but we are risen, and stand upright.

Save, Lord, and hear us, O king of heaven: when we call upon thee. Glory be, &c.

*(l) Antiphon.*

The Lord hear thee in the day of trouble.

*(m) Antiphon.*

The king.

*Psalm 21. (18)*

..... shall rejoice in thy strength, O Lord: exceeding glad shall he be of thy salvation.

Thou hast given him his heart's desire: and hast not denied him the request of his lips.

For thou shalt prevent him with the blessings of goodness: and shalt set a crown of pure gold upon his head.

He asked life of thee, and thou gavest him a long life; even for ever and ever.

His honour is great in thy salvation: glory and great worship shalt thou lay upon him.

For thou shalt give him everlasting felicity: and make him glad with the joy of thy countenance.

And why? because the king putteth his trust in the Lord: and in the mercy of the Most Highest he shall not miscarry.

All thine enemies shall feel thy hand; thy right hand shall find out them that hate thee.

Thou shalt make them like a fiery oven in time of thy wrath: the Lord shall destroy them in his displeasure, and the fire shall consume them.

Their fruit shalt thou root out of the earth: and their seed from among the children of men.

For they intended mischief against thee: and imagined such a device as they are not able to perform.

Therefore shalt thou put them to flight: and the strings of thy bow shalt thou make ready against the face of them.

Be thou exalted, Lord, in thine own strength: so will we sing, and praise thy power. Glory be, &c.

(m) *Antiphon.*

The King shall rejoice in Thy strength, O Lord.

(n) *Verse and Response.*

Be Thou exalted, Lord, in thine own strength.

*So will we sing and praise Thy power.*

*The Lord's Prayer.*

Our Father, &c.

(*Privately.*)

And lead us not into temptation,

*But deliver us from evil.*

*Absolution 3.*

The Almighty and merciful Lord, absolve us from the bonds of our sins. *Amen.*

*Reader.*—Sir, pray for a blessing.

*Benediction 7.*

*Minister.*—The reading of the Gospel be to us salvation and a defence. *Amen.*

*Lesson 7.*

(Luke v.)

At that time, as the people pressed upon Jesus to hear the word of God, he stood by the lake of Gennesareth.

And saw two ships standing by the lake; but the fishermen were gone out of them, and were washing their nets.

And he entered into one of the ships, which was Simon's, and prayed him that he would thrust out a little from the land. And he sat down and taught the people out of the ship.

Now when he had left speaking, he said unto Simon, Launch out into the deep, and let down your nets for a draught.

And Simon answering, said unto him, Master, we have toiled all the night, and have taken nothing: nevertheless, at thy word I will let down the net.

And when they had this done, they enclosed a great multitude of fishes: and their net brake.

And they beckoned unto *their* partners which were in the other ship, that they should come and help them. And they came, and filled both the ships, so that they began to sink.

When Simon Peter saw *it*, he fell down at Jesus' knees, saying, Depart from me; for I am a sinful man, O Lord, &c.

*Homily of St. Ambrose, Bishop.*

When the Lord wrought His various kinds of healing among many, the multitude could not be restrained, either by time or place, from their eagerness to be healed. The evening fell on them; they followed. The water met them: they pressed on. Therefore he entered into the ship of Peter. This is that ship, which according to St. Matthew ever tosseth, according to St. Luke is filled with fishes, as an

emblem of the Church labouring in its beginning, overflowing in its latter time; for by fishes are meant those who escape the surge of this life. Christ still sleeps in the one amid His disciples, and still directs them in the other; for He sleeps to the fearful, but he watches over the perfect.

Thou then, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

*Response 7.*

*My transgressions are more in number than the sands of the sea, and my sins have multiplied; and I am not worthy to look up to the height of heaven for the multitude of mine iniquities, for I have provoked Thine anger; and done evil in Thy sight.*

For I acknowledge my faults and my sin is ever before thee, for against Thee only have I sinned.

*And done evil in Thy sight.*

*Reader.*—Sir, pray for a blessing.

*Benediction 8.*

*Minister.*—The help of God abide with us for ever. *Amen.*

*Lesson 8.*

*(Homily continued.)*

misbelief is unknown, faith fills the sails. For how can she be in distress, being governed by Him who is the very stay of the Church? Therefore distress is only there where there is scanty faith; where love is perfect, there is security. Though others were told to let down their nets, to Peter alone He said, Launch out into the deep, that is, the depth of contemplation. For what is so deep as to see the depth of His riches, to know the Son of God, to confess His Divine Generation? Which, though man's understanding cannot compass fully by searching out, the full assurance of faith embraceth.

But thou, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

*Response 8 (used on the Sundays after Trinity.)*

*The two Seraphims cried one to the other, Holy, holy, holy, Lord God of hosts: all the earth is full of His glory.*

There are three that bear record in heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost, and these Three are One.

*Holy, holy, holy, Lord God of Hosts, all the earth is full of His glory.*

Glory be, &c.

*All the earth is full of His glory.*

*Reader.*—Sir, pray for a blessing.

*Benediction 9.*

*Minister.*—The King of Angels lead us on to the society of the inhabitants of heaven. *Amen.*

*Lesson 9.* For though I may not know how He was born, yet I may  
*(Homily continued.)* not be ignorant that He was born. The mode of His generation I know not, the Author of it I confess. We were not witnesses of it, but we are witnesses of its revelation. If we believe not God, whom shall we believe? For all belief comes from sight or hearing. Sight is often deceived, hearing is of faith.

*Te Deum.* We praise thee, O God: we acknowledge thee to be the Lord.

All the earth doth worship thee: the Father everlasting.  
 To thee all Angels cry aloud: the Heavens, and all the Powers therein.

To thee Cherubin and Seraphin: continually do cry,  
 Holy, Holy, Holy: Lord God of Sabaoth;  
 Heaven and earth are full of the Majesty: of thy Glory.  
 The glorious company of the Apostles: praise thee.  
 The goodly fellowship of the Prophets: praise thee.  
 The noble army of Martyrs: praise thee.  
 The holy Church throughout all the world: doth acknowledge thee;

The Father: of an infinite Majesty;  
 Thine honourable, true: and only Son;  
 Also the Holy Ghost: The Comforter.  
 Thou art the King of Glory: O Christ.  
 Thou art the everlasting Son: of the Father.

When thou tookest upon thee to deliver man: thou didst not abhor the Virgin's womb.

When thou hadst overcome the sharpness of death: thou didst open the Kingdom of Heaven to all believers.

Thou sittest at the right hand of God: in the Glory of the Father.

We believe that thou shalt come: to be our Judge.

We therefore pray thee, help thy servants: whom thou hast redeemed with thy precious blood.

Make them to be numbered with thy Saints: in glory everlasting.

O Lord, save thy people: and bless thine heritage.

Govern them: and lift them up for ever.

Day by day: we magnify thee;

And we worship thy Name: ever world without end.

Vouchsafe, O Lord: to keep us this day without sin.

O Lord, have mercy upon us: have mercy upon us.

O Lord, let thy mercy lighten upon us: as our trust is in thee.

O Lord, in thee have I trusted: let me never be confounded.

## LAUDS SERVICE.

O God, make speed to save me.

*O Lord, make haste to help me.*

Glory be, &c. Amen.

Hallelujah.

(o) *Antiphon.*

Praise ye the Lord.

*Psalm 93.* (1)

The Lord is King, and hath put on glorious apparel: the Lord hath put on his apparel, and girded himself with strength.

He hath made the round world so sure: that it cannot be moved.

Ever since the world began, hath thy seat been prepared: thou art from everlasting.

The floods are risen, O Lord, the floods have lift up their voice: the floods lift up their waves.

The waves of the sea are mighty, and rage horribly: but yet the Lord, who dwelleth on high, is mightier.

Thy testimonies, O Lord, are very sure: holiness becometh thine house for ever. Glory be, &c.

(o) *Ant.*

(p) *Ant.*

*Psalm 100.* (2)

O be joyful in the Lord, all ye lands: serve the Lord with gladness, and come before his presence with a song.

Be ye sure that the Lord he is God: it is he that hath made us, and not we ourselves; we are his people, and the sheep of his pasture.

O go your way into his gates with thanksgiving, and into his courts with praise: be thankful unto him, and speak good of his name.

For the Lord is gracious, his mercy is everlasting: and his truth endureth from generation to generation. Glory be, &c.

(p) *Ant.*

(q) *Ant.*

*Psalm 63. and*

67. (3)

O God, thou art my God: early will I seek thee.

My soul thirsteth for thee: my flesh also longeth after thee: in a barren and dry land, where no water is.

Thus have I looked for thee in holiness: that I might behold thy power and glory.

For thy loving-kindness is better than the life itself: my lips shall praise thee.

As long as I live, will I magnify thee on this manner: and lift up my hands in thy name.

My soul shall be satisfied, [even as it were with marrow and fatness: when my mouth praiseth thee with joyful lips.

Have I not remembered thee in my bed, and thought upon thee when I was waking ?

Because thou hast been my helper : therefore under the shadow of thy wings will I rejoice.

My soul hangeth upon thee : thy right hand hath up-holden me.

These also that seek the hurt of my soul : they shall go under the earth.

Let them fall upon the edge of the sword : that they may be a portion for foxes.

But the King shall rejoice in God ; all they also that swear by him, shall be commended : for the mouth of them that speak lies shall be stopped.

God be merciful unto us, and bless us : and shew us the light of his countenance, and be merciful unto us ;

That thy way may be known upon earth : thy saving health among all nations.

Let the people praise thee, O God : yea, let all the people praise thee.

O let the nations rejoice and be glad : for thou shalt judge the folk righteously, and govern the nations upon earth.

Let the people praise thee, O God ; let all the people praise thee.

Then shall the earth bring forth her increase ; and God, even our own God, shall give us his blessing.

God shall bless us : and all the ends of the world shall fear him. Glory be, &c.

Praise ye the Lord. Praise ye the Lord.

The three children.

O all ye works of the Lord, bless ye the Lord : praise him and magnify him for ever.

O ye angels of the Lord, bless ye the Lord : praise him, and magnify him for ever.

O ye Heavens, bless ye the Lord : praise him, and magnify him for ever.

O ye Waters that be above the firmament, bless ye the Lord : praise him, and magnify him for ever.

O all ye Powers of the Lord, bless ye the Lord : praise him, and magnify him for ever.

O ye Sun and Moon, bless ye the Lord : praise him, and magnify him for ever.

O ye Stars of Heaven, bless ye the Lord : praise him, and magnify him for ever.

O ye Showers and Dew, bless ye the Lord : praise him, and magnify him for ever.

(q) *Antiphon.*

(r) *Antiphon.*

*Song of the Three  
Children. (4)*

O ye Winds of God, bless ye the Lord : praise him, and magnify him for ever.

O ye Fire and Heat, bless ye the Lord : praise him, and magnify him for ever.

O ye Winter and Summer, bless ye the Lord ; praise him, and magnify him for ever.

O ye Dews and Frosts, bless ye the Lord : praise him, and magnify him for ever.

O ye Frost and Cold, bless ye the Lord : praise him, and magnify him for ever.

O ye Ice and Snow, bless ye the Lord : praise him, and magnify him for ever.

O ye Nights and Days, bless ye the Lord : praise him, and magnify him for ever.

O ye Light and Darkness, bless ye the Lord : praise him, and magnify him for ever.

O ye Lightnings and Clouds, bless ye the Lord : praise him, and magnify him for ever.

O let the Earth bless the Lord : yea, let it praise him, and magnify him for ever.

O ye Mountains and Hills, bless ye the Lord : praise him, and magnify him for ever.

O all ye Green Things upon the Earth, bless ye the Lord : praise him, and magnify him for ever.

O ye Wells, bless ye the Lord : praise him, and magnify him for ever.

O ye Seas and Floods, bless ye the Lord : praise him, and magnify him for ever.

O ye Whales, and all that move in the waters, bless ye the Lord : praise him, and magnify him for ever.

O all ye Fowls of the air, bless ye the Lord : praise him, and magnify him for ever.

O all ye Beasts and Cattle, bless ye the Lord : praise him, and magnify him for ever.

O ye children of Men, bless ye the Lord : praise him, and magnify him for ever.

O let Israel bless the Lord : praise him, and magnify him for ever.

O ye Priests of the Lord, bless ye the Lord : praise him, and magnify him for ever.

O ye Servants of the Lord, bless ye the Lord : praise him, and magnify him for ever.

O ye Spirits and Souls of the Righteous, bless ye the Lord : praise him, and magnify him for ever.

O ye holy and humble Men of heart, bless ye the Lord : praise him, and magnify him for ever.



O Ananias, Azarias, and Misael, bless ye the Lord : praise him, and magnify him for ever.

(r) *Antiphon.*

The three children, by command of the King, were thrown into the furnace, not fearing the flame of the fire, but saying, Blessed be God.

(s) *Antiphon.*

*Psalm 148, 149,  
and 150. (5)*

Praise ye the Lord.

O praise the Lord of heaven : praise him in the height.

Praise him, all ye angels of his : praise him, all his host.

Praise him, sun and moon ; praise him, all ye stars and light.

Praise him, all ye heavens : and ye waters that are above the heavens.

Let them praise the Name of the Lord : for he spake the word, and they were made ; he commanded, and they were created.

He hath made them fast for ever and ever : he hath given them a law, which shall not be broken.

Praise the Lord upon earth : ye dragons, and all deeps ;

Fire and hail, snow and vapours : wind and storm fulfilling his word.

Mountains and all hills : fruitful trees and all cedars ;

Beasts and all cattle : worms and feathered fowl ;

Kings of the earth and all people : princes and all judges of the world ;

Young men and maidens, old men and children, praise the Name of the Lord : for his Name only is excellent, and his praise above heaven and earth.

He shall exalt the horn of his people ; all his saints shall praise him : even the children of Israel, even the people that serveth him.

O sing unto the Lord a new song : let the congregation of saints praise him.

Let Israel rejoice in him that made him : and let the children of Sion be joyful in their King.

Let them praise his Name in the dance : let them sing praises unto him with tabret and harp.

For the Lord hath pleasure in his people : and helpeth the meek-hearted.

Let the saints be joyful with glory : let them rejoice in their beds.

Let the praises of God be in their mouth : and a two-edged sword in their hands ;

To be avenged of the heathen : and to rebuke the people ;

To bind their kings in chains : and their nobles with links of iron.

That they may be avenged of them, as it is written : Such honour have all his saints.

O Praise God in his holiness : praise him in the firmament of his power.

Praise him in his noble acts : praise him according to his excellent greatness.

Praise him in the sound of the trumpet : praise him upon the lute and harp.

Praise him in the cymbals and dances : praise him upon the strings and pipe.

Praise him upon the well-tuned cymbals : praise him upon the loud cymbals.

Let every thing that hath breath : praise the Lord.

(s) *Antiphon.*

Praise ye the Lord. Praise ye the Lord. Praise ye the Lord.

(t) *Text. (Capitulum.) Minister.*—Blessing, and glory, and wisdom, and thanksgiving, and honour, and power, and might, be unto our God for ever and ever. *Amen.*

*Thanks be to God.*

(u) *Hymn.*

[*Ecce jam noctis.*]

Paler have grown the shades of night,  
And nearer draws the day,  
Checkering the sky with streaks of light,  
Since we began to pray.

To pray for mercy when we sin,  
For cleansing and release,  
For ghostly safety, and within  
For everlasting peace.

Grant this to us, O Father, Son,  
And Spirit, God of grace,  
To whom all worship shall be done  
In every time and place. *Amen.*

(v) *Verse and Response.*

The Lord is king, and hath put on glorious apparel.  
*The Lord hath put on his apparel, and girded Himself with strength.*

(w) *Ant.*

Jesus entered into the ship.

*Benedictus.*

Blessed be the Lord God of Israel : for he hath visited, and redeemed his people :

And hath raised up a mighty salvation for us : in the house of his servant David.

As he spake by the mouth of his holy prophets : which have been since the world began ;

That we should be saved from our enemies : and from the hand of all that hate us ;

To perform the mercy promised to our forefathers : and to remember his holy covenant.

To perform the oath which he sware to our forefather Abraham : that he would give us ;

That we being delivered out of the hand of our enemies : might serve him without fear,

In holiness and righteousness before him : all the days of our life.

And thou, Child, shalt be called the prophet of the Highest : for thou shalt go before the face of the Lord to prepare his ways ;

To give knowledge of salvation unto his people : for the remission of their sins,

Through the tender mercy of our God : whereby the Day-spring from on high hath visited us ;

To give light to them that sit in darkness, and in the shadow of death : and to guide our feet into the way of peace.

(w) *Antiphon.*

Jesus entered into the ship, and when he was set down He taught the multitudes.

The Lord be with you.

*And with thy spirit.*

Let us pray.

(x) *Collect*

(for the day and week.)

Grant to us, Lord, we beseech Thee, that the course of this world may be so peaceably ordered by Thy governance, that Thy church may joyfully serve Thee in all godly quietness through the Lord. *Amen.*

*Antiphon.*

(the following Commemorations are read at Vespers also.)

Holy Mary, succour the wretched, help the weak-hearted, comfort the mourners, pray for the people, interpose for the Clergy, intercede for the devoted females ; let all feel thy assistance who observe thy holy commemoration.

Pray for us, Holy Mother of God,

*That we may be made worthy of the promise of Christ.*

Let us pray.

*Collect.*

Grant, O Lord God, we beseech Thee, that we Thy servants may ever prosper in perpetual health of body and mind, and by the glorious intercession of the Blessed Mary, Ever-Virgin, may be delivered from present sadness, and enjoy eternal bliss.

*Antiphon.*

Glorious rulers of the earth, as they loved each other in this life, so in death they were not divided.

Their sound is gone out into all lands.

*And their words unto the ends of the world.*

Let us pray.

*Collect.*

O God, who when thy Apostle Peter walked on the waves savedst him from drowning with Thy right hand, and delivered his fellow Apostle Paul the third day from shipwreck on the open sea, favourably hear us, and grant that, by the deserts of both of them, we may obtain everlasting glory.

*Antiphon.*

Give peace in our time, O Lord, because there is none other that fighteth for us but only Thou, O God.

Peace be within thy walls.

*And plenteousness within Thy palaces.*

Let us pray.

*Collect.*

O God, from whom all holy desires, all good counsels, and all just works do proceed, give unto Thy servants that peace which the world cannot give; that both our hearts may be set to obey Thy commandments, and also that by Thee we being defended from the fear of our enemies, may pass our time in rest and quietness, through Jesus Christ our Lord, who liveth and reigneth with Thee in the unity of the Holy Ghost, one God, world without end. *Amen.*

The Lord be with you.

*And with thy spirit.*

Let us bless the Lord.

(y)

*Thanks be to God.*

(3)

May the souls of the faithful, through God's mercy, rest in peace. *Amen.*

2 PRIME SERVICE.

O God, make speed to save me.

*O Lord, make haste to help me.*

Glory be, &c. *Amen.* Hallelujah.

(aa) *Hymn.*

[Jam lucis orto.]

The star of morn to night succeeds,  
We therefore meekly pray,  
May God in all our words and deeds  
Keep us from harm this day.  
May he in love restrain us still  
From tones of strife and words of ill,  
And wrap around and close our eyes  
To earth's absorbing vanities.

May wrath and thoughts that gender shame  
Ne'er in our breasts abide,  
And painful abstinences tame  
Of wanton flesh the pride:  
So when the weary day is o'er  
And night and stillness come once more,  
Blameless and clean from spot of earth  
We may repeat, with reverent mirth,  
Praise to the Father, as is meet,  
Praise to the only Son,  
Praise to the Holy Paraclete,  
While endless ages run. *Amen.*

(bb) *Antiphon.*

*Psalm 54. (1)*

Praise ye the Lord.  
Save me, O God, for thy Name's sake: and avenge me in  
thy strength.  
Hear my prayer, O God: and hearken unto the words of  
my mouth.  
For strangers are risen up against me: and tyrants, which  
have not God before their eyes, seek after my soul.  
Behold, God is my helper: the Lord is with them that  
uphold my soul.  
He shall reward evil unto mine enemies: destroy thou  
them in thy truth.  
An offering of a free heart will I give thee, and praise thy  
Name, O Lord: because it is so comfortable.

*Psalm 118. (2)*

For he hath delivered me out of all my trouble : and mine eye hath seen his desire upon mine enemies. Glory be, &c.

O give thanks unto the Lord, for he is gracious : because his mercy endureth for ever.

Let Israel now confess, that he is gracious : and that his mercy endureth for ever.

Let the house of Aaron now confess : that his mercy endureth for ever.

Yea, let them now that fear the Lord confess : that his mercy endureth for ever.

I called upon the Lord in trouble : and the Lord heard me at large.

The Lord is on my side : I will not fear what man doeth unto me.

The Lord taketh my part with them that help me : therefore shall I see my desire upon mine enemies.

It is better to trust in the Lord : than to put any confidence in man.

It is better to trust in the Lord : than to put any confidence in princes.

All nations compassed me round about : but in the Name of the Lord will I destroy them.

They kept me in on every side, they kept me in, I say, on every side : but in the Name of the Lord will I destroy them.

They came about me like bees, and are extinct even as the fire among the thorns : for in the name of the Lord I will destroy them.

Thou hast thrust sore at me, that I might fall : but the Lord was my help.

The Lord is my strength, and my song : and is become my salvation.

The voice of joy and health is in the dwellings of the righteous : the right hand of the Lord bringeth mighty things to pass.

The right hand of the Lord hath the pre-eminence : the right hand of the Lord bringeth mighty things to pass.

I shall not die, but live : and declare the works of the Lord.

The Lord hath chastened and corrected me : but he hath not given me over unto death.

Open me the gates of righteousness : that I may go into them, and give thanks unto the Lord.

This is the gate of the Lord : the righteous shall enter into it.

I will thank thee, for thou hast heard me : and art become my salvation.

The same stone which the builders refused : is become the head-stone in the corner.

This is the Lord's doing : and it is marvellous in our eyes.

This is the day which the Lord hath made : we will rejoice and be glad in it.

Help me now, O Lord : O Lord, send us now prosperity.

Blessed be he that cometh in the name of the Lord : we have wished you good luck, ye that are of the house of the Lord.

God is the Lord who hath showed us light : bind the sacrifice with cords ; yea, even unto the horns of the altar.

Thou art my God, and I will thank thee : thou art my God, and I will praise thee.

O give thanks unto the Lord, for he is gracious : and his mercy endureth for ever. Glory be, &c.

Psalm 119. (3)  
1—16.

Blessed are those that are undefiled in the way : and walk in the law of the Lord.

Blessed are they that keep his testimonies : and seek him with their whole heart.

For they who do no wickedness : walk in his ways.

Thou hast charged : that we shall diligently keep thy commandments.

O that my ways were made so direct : that I might keep thy statutes !

So shall I not be confounded : while I have respect unto all thy commandments.

I will thank thee with an unfeigned heart : when I shall have learned the judgments of thy righteousness.

I will keep thy ceremonies : O forsake me not utterly.

Wherewithal shall a young man cleanse his way : even by ruling himself after thy word.

With my whole heart have I sought thee : O let me not go wrong out of thy commandments.

Thy words have I hid within my heart : that I should not sin against thee.

Blessed art thou, O Lord : O teach me thy statutes.

With my lips have I been telling : of all the judgments of thy mouth.

I have had as great delight in the way of thy testimonies : as in all manner of riches.

I will talk of thy commandments : and have respect unto thy ways.

My delight shall be in thy statutes : and I will not forget thy word. Glory be, &c.

*Psalm 119.* (4)  
17—32.

O do well unto thy servant: that I may live and keep thy word.

Open thou mine eyes: that I may see the wondrous things of thy law.

I am a stranger upon earth: O hide not thy commandments from me.

My soul breaketh out for the very fervent desire: that it hath alway unto thy judgment.

Thou hast rebuked the proud: and cursed are they that do err from thy commandments.

O turn from me shame and rebuke: for I have kept thy testimonies.

Princes also did sit and speak against me: but thy servant is occupied in thy statutes.

For thy testimonies are my delight: and my counsellors.

My soul cleaveth to the dust: O quicken thou me, according to thy word.

I have acknowledged my ways, and thou heardest me: O teach me thy statutes.

Make me to understand the way of thy commandments: and so shall I talk of thy wondrous works.

My soul melteth away for very heaviness: comfort thou me according unto thy word.

Take from me the way of lying: and cause thou me to make much of thy law.

I have chosen the way of truth: and thy judgments have I laid before me.

I have stuck unto thy testimonies: O Lord, confound me not.

I will run the way of thy commandments: when thou hast set my heart at liberty. Glory be, &c.

*The Creed of  
St. Athanasius.*

Whosoever will be saved: before all things it is necessary that he hold the Catholic Faith.

Which Faith except every one do keep whole and undefiled: without doubt he shall perish everlastingly.

And the Catholic Faith is this: That we worship one God in Trinity, and Trinity in Unity;

Neither confounding the Persons: nor dividing the substance.

For there is one Person of the Father, another of the Son: and another of the Holy Ghost.

But the Godhead of the Father, of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost, is all one: the Glory equal, the Majesty co-eternal.

Such as the Father is, such is the Son: and such is the Holy Ghost.



The Father uncreate, the Son uncreate: and the Holy Ghost uncreate.

The Father incomprehensible, the Son incomprehensible: and the Holy Ghost incomprehensible.

The Father eternal, the Son eternal: and the Holy Ghost eternal.

And yet they are not three eternal: but one eternal.

And also there are not three incomprehensibles, nor three uncreated: but one uncreated, and one incomprehensible.

So likewise the Father is Almighty, the Son Almighty: and the Holy Ghost Almighty.

And yet they are not three Almighty: but one Almighty.

So the Father is God, the Son is God: and the Holy Ghost is God.

And yet they are not three Gods: but one God.

So likewise the Father is Lord, the Son Lord: and the Holy Ghost Lord.

And yet not three Lords: but one Lord.

For like as we are compelled by the Christian verity: to acknowledge every person by himself to be God and Lord;

So we are forbidden by the Catholic Religion: to say, There be three Gods, or three Lords.

The Father is made of none: neither created, nor begotten.

The Son is of the Father alone: not made, nor created, but begotten.

The Holy Ghost is of the Father and of the Son: neither made, nor created, nor begotten, but proceeding.

So there is one Father, not three Fathers; one Son, not three Sons; one Holy Ghost, not three Holy Ghosts.

And in this Trinity none is afore, or after other: none is greater, or less than another.

But the whole three Persons are co-eternal together: and co-equal.

So that in all things, as is aforesaid: the Unity in Trinity, and the Trinity in Unity, is to be worshipped.

He therefore that will be saved: must thus think of the Trinity.

Furthermore, it is necessary to everlasting salvation: that he also believe rightly the Incarnation of our Lord Jesus Christ.

For the right Faith is, that we believe and confess: that our Lord Jesus Christ, the Son of God, is God and Man;

God, of the Substance of the Father, begotten before the worlds: and Man, of the Substance of his Mother, born in the world.

Perfect God, and perfect Man : of a reasonable soul, and human flesh subsisting :

Equal to the Father, as touching his Godhead : and inferior to the Father, as touching his Manhood.

Who although he be God and man : yet he is not two, but one Christ.

One ; not by conversion of the Godhead into flesh : but by taking of the Manhood into God ;

One altogether ; not by confusion of substance : but by unity of Person.

For as the reasonable soul and flesh is one man : so God and Man is one Christ.

Who suffered for our salvation : descended into hell, rose again the third day from the dead.

He ascended into heaven ; he sitteth on the right hand of the Father, God Almighty : from whence he shall come to judge the quick and the dead.

At whose coming all men shall rise again with their bodies : and shall give account of their own works.

And they that have done good shall go into life everlasting : and they that have done evil, into everlasting fire.

This is the Catholic Faith : which except a man believe faithfully, he cannot be saved. Glory be, &c.

(bb) *Antiphon.* Praise ye the Lord, Hallelujah, Praise ye the Lord.

(cc) *Text. Capitulum. Minister.*—To the King, eternal, immortal, invisible, the  
1 *Tim.* i. 17. only wise God, be honour and glory for ever and ever. *Amen.*  
*Thanks be to God.*

(dd) *Short Response.* O Christ, the Son of the living God, have mercy upon us.  
O Christ, &c.

(ee) Thou who sittest at the right hand of the Father,  
*Have mercy upon us.*  
Glory be to the Father, &c.  
O Christ, the Son of the living God : have mercy upon us.  
O Christ, arise, help us.  
*And deliver us for thy Name's sake.*

(ff) Lord have mercy.  
*Christ have mercy.*  
Lord have mercy.

*The Lord's Prayer,* Our Father, &c.  
(*privately.*) And lead us not into temptation,  
*But deliver us from evil.*

*The Creed,* I believe, &c.  
(*privately.*) The resurrection of the body.  
*And the life everlasting. Amen.*

(In days of the double office, such as Christmas Day and the Apostles' days, &c. from ff to hh is omitted.)

I have cried unto Thee, O Lord.  
 And early shall my prayer come before Thee.  
 O let my mouth be filled with Thy praise.  
 That I may sing of Thy glory and honour all the day long.  
 Lord, turn Thy face from my sins.  
 And blot out all my iniquities.

Make me a clean heart, O God.  
 And renew a right spirit within me.  
 Cast me not away from Thy presence.  
 And take not thy Holy Spirit from me.  
 O give me the comfort of Thy help again.  
 And stablish me with Thy free Spirit.

(gg) Our help is in the Name of the Lord.

(Here is sometimes an insertion, vide § 3.)

Who hath made heaven and earth.

*Confession.*  
 (This confession is not found in the Paris Breviary, 1735. Observations are made upon it above, pp. 11 and 21. It is repeated at Complin; that is at the end of the day, as Prime is the beginning.)

*Minister.*—I confess before God Almighty, before the Blessed Mary, Ever-Virgin, the blessed Michael Archangel, the blessed John Baptist, the Holy Apostles Peter and Paul, before all Saints, and you, my Brethren, that I have sinned too much in thought, word, and deed. It is my fault, my fault, my grievous fault. Therefore, I beseech the blessed Mary, Ever-Virgin, the blessed Michael Archangel, the blessed John Baptist, the Holy Apostles Peter and Paul, all Saints, and you, my Brethren, to pray the Lord our God for me.

*People.*—God Almighty have mercy upon thee, absolve thee from thy sins, and bring thee safe to life everlasting. Amen.

*People.*—I confess before God Almighty, before the blessed Mary, Ever-Virgin, the blessed Michael Archangel, the blessed John Baptist, the Holy Apostles Peter and Paul, before all Saints, and thee, my Father, that I have sinned too much in thought, word, and deed. It is my fault, my fault, my grievous fault. Therefore, I beseech the blessed Mary, Ever-Virgin, the blessed Michael Archangel, the blessed John Baptist, the holy Apostles Peter and Paul, all Saints, and thee, my Father, to pray the Lord our God for me.

*Minister.*—God Almighty have mercy upon you, absolve you from your sins, and bring you safe to everlasting life. Amen.

The Almighty and Merciful Lord grant to us pardon, absolution, and remission of all our sins. Amen.

Vouchsafe, O Lord, to keep us.

This day without sin.

O Lord, have mercy upon us.

Have mercy upon us.

O Lord, let Thy mercy be showed upon us.

*As we do put our trust in Thee.*

Lord, hear our prayer.

*And let our cry come unto Thee.*

(hh)

The Lord be with you.

*And with thy spirit.*

Let us pray.

Collect.

O Lord God Almighty, who hast brought us to the beginning of this day, defend us in the same with Thy mighty power, that we fall into no sin to-day, but all our words, thoughts, and works may be ordered according to Thy righteousness, through our Lord Jesus Christ, Thy Son, who liveth and reigneth with Thee in the unity of the Holy Ghost, world without end. *Amen.*

The Lord be with you.

*And with thy spirit.*

Let us bless the Lord.

*Thanks be to God.*

Here the Martyr-  
ology is read.

\* \* \* \* \*

Right dear in the sight of the Lord.

*Is the death of his saints.*

Collect.

Holy Mary and all the saints intercede for us to the  
(*The words "Holy Lord, that we may be worthy of His help and salvation, who Mary" are not in* liveth and reigneth world without end. *Amen.*

*the Monastic Bre-*

*variaries.)*

O God, make speed to save me.

*O Lord, make haste to help me.*

Glory be, &c.

*As it was, &c.*

Lord, have mercy.

*Christ, have mercy.*

Lord, have mercy.

The Lord's Prayer,  
(*privately.*)

Our Father, &c.

And lead us not into temptation,

*But deliver us from evil.*

O Lord, show thy Servants Thy work, and their children  
Thy glory.

*And the Glorious Majesty of the Lord our God be upon  
us: prosper Thou the work of our hands upon us,  
O prosper Thou our handy work.*

Glory be, &c.

*As it was, &c.*

The Lord be with you.

*And with thy spirit.*

*Collect.*

Let us pray.

O Lord God, King of heaven and earth, vouchsafe this day to direct and sanctify, to rule and govern our hearts and bodies, our thoughts, words, and deeds in thy law, and in the works of Thy commandments, that through Thy most mighty protection, both here and ever, we may obtain safety and freedom, O Saviour of the world, who livest and reignest for ever. *Amen.*

*Reader.*—Sir, pray for a blessing.

*Benediction.*

*Minister.*—The Lord Almighty order our lives and doings in His peace. *Amen.*

(ii) *Short Lesson.*

2 *Thess.* iii. 5.

*Reader.*—The Lord direct our hearts and bodies in the love of God, and the patient waiting for Christ.

Thou, then, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

Our help is in the name of the Lord.

*Who hath made heaven and earth.*

Bless ye.

*Benediction.*

*Reader.*—*May God.*

*Minister.*—The Lord bless us and defend us from all evil, and bring us to everlasting life; and may the souls of the faithful, through God's mercy, rest in peace. *Amen.*

## 3. THIRD HOUR SERVICE.

O God, make speed to save me.

*O Lord, make haste to save me.*

Glory be, &c. Amen. *Hallelujah.*

(jj) *Hymn.*  
[Nunc Sancte  
obis.]

Come, Holy Ghost, who ever One  
Art with the Father and the Son;  
Come, Holy Ghost, our souls possess,  
With Thy full flood of Holiness.

Let mouth, and heart, and flesh combine  
To herald forth our Creed divine,  
And love so wrap our mortal frame,  
Others may catch the living flame.

This grace on Thy redeem'd confer,  
Father, Co-equal Son,  
And Holy Ghost, the Comforter,  
Eternal Three in One. *Amen.*

(kk) *Antiphon.*  
*Psalm 119 (1)*  
33—48.

Praise ye the Lord.

Teach me, O Lord, the way of thy statutes: and I shall keep it unto the end.

Give me understanding, and I shall keep thy law: yea, I shall keep it with my whole heart.

Make me to go in the path of thy commandments: for therein is my desire.

Incline my heart unto thy testimonies: and not to covetousness.

O turn away mine eyes lest they behold vanity: and quicken thou me in thy way.

O stablish thy word in thy servant: that I may fear thee. Take away the rebuke that I am afraid of: for thy judgments are good.

Behold, my delight is in thy commandments: O quicken me in thy righteousness.

Let thy loving mercy come also unto me, O Lord: even thy salvation, according unto thy word.

So shall I make answer unto my blasphemers: for my trust is in thy word.

O take not the word of thy truth utterly out of my mouth :  
for my hope is in thy judgments.

So shall I always keep thy law : yea, for ever and ever.

And I will walk at liberty: for I seek thy commandments.

I will speak of thy testimonies also, even before kings:  
and will not be ashamed.

And my delight shall be in thy commandments: which I  
have loved.

My hands also will I lift up unto thy commandments,  
which I have loved: and my study shall be in thy statutes.  
Glory, &c.

*Psalm 119. (2)*  
49—64.

O think upon thy servant, as concerning thy word: where-  
in thou hast caused me to put my trust.

The same is my comfort in my trouble: for thy word hath  
quicken'd me.

The proud have had me exceedingly in derision: yet have  
I not shrink'd from thy law.

For I remembered thine everlasting judgments, O Lord:  
and received comfort.

I am horribly afraid: for the ungodly that forsake thy  
law.

Thy statutes have been my songs: in the house of my  
pilgrimage.

I have thought upon thy Name, O Lord, in the night-  
season: and have kept thy law.

This I had: because I kept thy commandments.

Thou art my portion, O Lord: I have promised to keep  
thy law.

I made my humble petition in thy presence with my whole  
heart: O be merciful unto me, according to thy word.

I called mine own ways to remembrance: and turned my  
feet unto thy testimonies.

I made haste, and prolonged not the time: to keep thy  
commandments.

The congregations of the ungodly have robbed me: but I  
have not forgotten thy law.

At midnight I will rise to give thanks unto thee: because  
of thy righteous judgments.

I am a companion of all them that fear thee: and keep  
thy commandments.

The earth, O Lord, is full of thy mercy: O teach me thy  
statutes. Glory be, &c.

*Psalm 119. (3)*  
65—80.

O Lord, thou hast dealt graciously with thy servant: ac-  
cording unto thy word.

O learn me true understanding and knowledge: for I have  
believed thy commandments.

Before I was troubled, I went wrong: but now have I kept thy word.

Thou art good and gracious: O teach me thy statutes.

The proud have imagined a lie against me: but I will keep thy commandments with my whole heart.

Their heart is as fat as brawn: but my delight hath been in thy law.

It is good for me that I have been in trouble: that I may learn thy statutes.

The law of thy mouth is dearer unto me: than thousands of gold and silver.

Thy hands have made me and fashioned me: O give me understanding, that I may learn thy commandments.

They that fear thee will be glad when they see me: because I have put my trust in thy word.

I know, O Lord, that thy judgments are right: and that thou of very faithfulness hast caused me to be troubled.

O let thy merciful kindness be my comfort: according to thy word unto thy servant.

O let thy loving mercies come unto me, that I may live: for thy law is my delight.

Let the proud be confounded, for they go wickedly about to destroy me: but I will be occupied in thy commandments.

Let such as fear thee, and have known thy testimonies: be turned unto me.

O let my heart be sound in thy statutes: that I be not ashamed. Glory be, &c.

(kk) *Antiphon.* Praise ye the Lord. Praise ye the Lord. Praise ye the Lord.

(ll) *Text (Capitulum.) Minister.*—God is love, and he that dwelleth in love, I John iv. 16. dwelleth in God, and God in him.

*Thanks be to God.*

(mm) *Short Response.* *Incline my heart, O God: to thy Testimonies.*

*Incline, &c.*

Turn away mine eyes, lest they behold vanity, and quicken Thou me in Thy way.

*To Thy testimonies.*

Glory be to the Father, &c.

*Incline my heart, O God: to Thy testimonies.*

I said, Lord, have mercy upon me.

*Heal my soul, for I have sinned against Thee.*

Lord have mercy.

*Christ have mercy.*

Lord have mercy.

Our Father, &c.

*The Lord's Prayer,*  
(privately.)

And lead us not into temptation,  
*But deliver us from evil.*



Turn us again, Lord God of hosts.

*Show us the light of Thy countenance and we shall be whole.*

O Christ, arise, help us.

*And deliver us for thy name's sake.*

Lord, hear my prayer.

*And let my cry come unto Thee.*

The Lord be with you.

*And with thy spirit.*

Let us pray.

(nn) *Collect.*  
(for the day and  
week.)

Grant to us, Lord, we beseech Thee, that the course of this world may be so peaceably ordered by Thy providence, that Thy Church may joyfully serve Thee in all godly quietness, through the Lord.

The Lord be with you.

*And with thy spirit.*

Let us bless the Lord.

*Thanks be to God.*

May the souls of the faithful through God's mercy rest in peace. *Amen.*

## 4. SIXTH HOUR SERVICE.

O God, make speed to save me.

*O Lord, make haste to help me.*

Glory be, &c. Amen. Hallelujah.

(oo) *Hymn.*  
[Rector potens,  
verax Deus.]

O God, the Lord of place and time,  
Who orderest all things prudently,  
Brightening with beams the opening prime,  
And burning in the mid-day sky.

Quench Thou the fires of hate and strife,  
The wasting fever of the heart ;  
From perils guard our feeble life,  
And to our souls Thy peace impart.

This grace on Thy redeemed confer,  
Father, Co-equal Son,  
And Holy Ghost, the Comforter,  
Eternal Three in One.—*Amen.*

(pp) *Antiphon.*  
*Psalm 119. (1)*  
81—96.

Praise ye the Lord.

My soul hath longed for thy salvation : and I have a good hope, because of thy word.

Mine eyes long sore for thy word : saying, O when wilt thou comfort me ?

For I am become like a bottle in the smoke : yet do I not forget thy statutes.

How many are the days of thy servant : when wilt thou be avenged of them that persecute me ?

The proud have digged pits for me : which are not after thy law.

All thy commandments are true : they persecute me falsely ; O be thou my help.

They had almost made an end of me upon earth : but I forsook not thy commandments.

O quicken me after thy loving-kindness : and so shall I keep the testimonies of thy mouth.

O Lord, thy word : endureth for ever in heaven.

Thy truth also remaineth from one generation to another : thou hast laid the foundation of the earth, and it abideth.

They continue this day according to thine ordinance : for all things serve thee.

If my delight had not been in thy law : I should have perished in my trouble.

I will never forget thy commandments : for with them thou hast quickened me.

I am thine, O save me : for I have sought thy commandments.

The ungodly laid wait for me, to destroy me : but I will consider thy testimonies.

I see that all things come to an end : but thy commandment is exceeding broad. Glory be, &c.

*Psalm 119. (2)*  
97—112.

Lord, what love have I unto thy law : all the day long is my study in it!

Thou, through thy commandments, hast made me wiser than mine enemies : for they are ever with me.

I have more understanding than my teachers : for thy testimonies are my study.

I am wiser than the aged : because I keep thy commandments.

I have refrained my feet from every evil way : that I may keep thy word.

I have not shrunk from thy judgments : for thou teachest me.

O how sweet are thy words unto my throat : yea, sweeter than honey unto my mouth!

Through thy commandments I get understanding : therefore I hate all evil ways.

Thy word is a lantern unto my feet : and a light unto my paths.

I have sworn, and am stedfastly purposed : to keep thy righteous judgments.

I am troubled above measure : quicken me, O Lord, according to thy word.

Let the free-will offerings of my mouth please thee, O Lord : and teach me thy judgments.

My soul is always in my hand : yet do I not forget thy law.

The ungodly have laid a snare for me : but yet I swerved not from thy commandments.

Thy testimonies have I claimed as mine heritage for ever : and why ? they are the very joy of my heart.

I have applied my heart to fulfil thy statutes always : even unto the end. Glory be, &c.

*Psalm 119. (3)*  
113—128

I hate them that imagine evil things : but thy law do I love.

Thou art my defence and shield . and my trust is in thy word.

Away from me, ye wicked: I will keep the commandments of my God.

O establish me according to thy word, that I may live: and let me not be disappointed of my hope.

Hold thou me up, and I shall be safe: yea, my delight shall be ever in thy statutes.

Thou hast trodden down all them that depart from thy statutes: for they imagine but deceit.

Thou puttest away all the ungodly of the earth like dross: therefore I love thy testimonies.

My flesh trembleth for fear of thee: and I am afraid of thy judgments.

I deal with the thing that is lawful and right: O give me not over unto mine oppressors.

Make thou thy servant to delight in that which is good: that the proud do me no wrong.

Mine eyes are wasted away with looking for thy health: and for the word of thy righteousness.

O deal with thy servant according unto thy loving-mercy: and teach me thy statutes.

I am thy servant; O grant me understanding: that I may know thy testimonies.

It is time for thee, Lord, to lay to thine hand: for they have destroyed thy law.

For I love thy commandments: above gold and precious stone.

Therefore hold I straight all thy commandments: and all false ways I utterly abhor. Glory be, &c.

(pp) *Antiphon.*

Praise ye the Lord. Hallelujah. Praise ye the Lord.

(qq) *Text. (Capitulum.) Minister.*—Bear ye one another's burdens, and so fulfil Gal. vi. 2. the law of Christ.

*Thanks be to God.*

(rr) *Short Response.*

*O Lord, Thy word endureth: for ever in heaven.*

*O Lord, &c.*

Thy truth also remaineth from one generation to another.

*For ever in heaven.*

Glory be to the Father, &c.

*O Lord, thy word endureth: for ever in heaven.*

The Lord is my shepherd, therefore can I lack nothing.

*He shall feed me in a green pasture.*

Lord have mercy.

*Christ have mercy.*

Lord have mercy.

*The Lord's Prayer.*

Our Father, &c.

(privately.)

And lead us not into temptation.

*But deliver us from evil.*

Turn us again, O Lord God of hosts.

*Show the light of Thy countenance, and we shall be whole.*

O Christ arise, help us.

*And deliver us for Thy name-sake.*

O Lord, hear my prayer.

*And let my crying come unto Thee.*

The Lord be with you.

*And with thy spirit.*

Let us pray.

(ss) *Collect.*

(for the day, &c.)

Grant to us, we beseech Thee, that the course of this world may be so peaceably ordered by thy governance, that Thy Church may joyfully serve Thee in all godly quietness, through the Lord.

The Lord be with you.

*And with thy spirit.*

Let us bless the Lord.

*Thanks be to God.*

May the souls of the faithful, through God's mercy, rest in peace. *Amen.*

## 5. NINTH HOUR SERVICE.

O God, make speed to save me.

*O Lord, make haste to help me.*

Glory be, &c. Amen. Hallelujah.

(tt) *Hymn.*  
[*Rerum Deus*  
*tenax vigor.*]

O God, unchangeable and true,  
Of all the life and power,  
Dispensing light and silence through  
Every successive hour.

Lord, brighten our declining day,  
That it may never wane,  
Till death, when all things round decay,  
Brings back the morn again.

This grace on thy redeemed confer,  
Father, Co-equal Son,  
And Holy Ghost, the Comforter,  
Eternal Three in One. *Amen.*

(uu) *Antiphon.*  
*Psalms 119. (1)*  
129—144.

Praise ye the Lord.

Thy testimonies are wonderful: therefore doth my soul  
keep them.

When thy word goeth forth: it giveth light and under-  
standing unto the simple.

I opened my mouth, and drew in my breath: for my de-  
light was in thy commandments.

O look thou upon me, and be merciful unto me; as thou  
usest to do unto those that love thy Name.

Order my steps in thy word: and so shall no wickedness  
have dominion over me.

O deliver me from the wrongful dealings of men; and so  
shall I keep thy commandments.

Shew the light of thy countenance upon thy servant: and  
teach me thy statutes.

Mine eyes gush out with water: because men keep not  
thy law.

Righteous art thou, O Lord: and true is thy judgment!

The testimonies that thou hast commanded: are exceed-  
ing righteous and true.

My zeal hath even consumed me: because mine enemies  
have forgotten thy words.

Thy word is tried to the uttermost: and thy servant loveth it.

I am small and of no reputation: yet do I not forget thy commandments.

Thy righteousness is an everlasting righteousness: and thy law is the truth.

Trouble and heaviness have taken hold upon me: yet is my delight in thy commandments.

The righteousness of thy testimonies is everlasting: O grant me understanding, and I shall live. Glory be, &c.

*Psalm 119.* (2)  
145—160.

I call with my whole heart: hear me, O Lord, I will keep thy statutes.

Yea, even unto thee do I call: help me, and I shall keep thy testimonies.

Early in the morning do I cry unto thee: for in thy word is my trust.

Mine eyes prevent the night-watches: that I might be occupied in thy words.

Hear my voice, O Lord, according unto thy loving-kindness: quicken me according as thou art wont.

They draw nigh that of malice persecute me: and are far from thy law.

Be thou nigh at hand, O Lord, for all thy commandments are true.

As concerning thy testimonies I have known long since: that thou hast grounded them for ever.

O consider mine adversity, and deliver me: for I do not forget thy law.

Avenge thou my cause, and deliver me: quicken me according to thy word.

Health is far from the ungodly: for they regard not thy statutes.

Great is thy mercy, O Lord: quicken me, as thou art wont.

Many there are that trouble me, and persecute me: yet do I not swerve from thy testimonies.

It grieveth me when I see the transgressors: because they keep not thy law.

Consider, O Lord, how I love thy commandments: O quicken me according to thy loving-kindness.

Thy word is true from everlasting: all the judgments of thy righteousness endure for evermore. Glory be, &c.

*Psalm 119.* (3.)  
161—176.

Princes have persecuted me without a cause: but my heart standeth in awe of thy word.

I am as glad of thy word: as one that findeth great spoils.

As for lies, I hate and abhor them: but thy law do I love.

Seven times a day do I praise thee : because of thy righteous judgments.

Great is the peace that they have who love thy law : and they are not offended at it.

Lord, I have looked for thy saving health : and done after thy commandments.

My soul hath kept thy testimonies : and loved them exceedingly.

I have kept thy commandments and testimonies : for all my ways are before thee.

Let my complaint come before thee, O Lord : give me understanding according to thy word.

Let my supplication come before thee : deliver me according to thy word.

My lips shall speak of thy praise : when thou hast taught me thy statutes.

Yea, my tongue shall sing of thy word : for all thy commandments are righteous.

Let thine hand help me : for I have chosen thy commandments.

I have longed for thy saving health, O Lord : and in thy law is my delight.

O let my soul live, and it shall praise thee : and thy judgments shall help me.

I have gone astray like a sheep that is lost : O seek thy servant ; for I do not forget thy commandments. Glory be, &c.

(uu) *Antiphon.*

Praise ye the Lord. Hallelujah. Praise ye the Lord.

(vv) *Text. (Capitulum.) Minister.*—For ye are bought with a price. Therefore  
I Cor. iv. 20. glorify God in your body.

*Thanks be to God.*

(ww) *Short*

*I call with my whole heart : hear me, O Lord.*

*Response.*

*I call, &c.*

I will keep Thy statutes.

*Hear me, O Lord.*

Glory be to the Father, &c.

*I call with my whole heart : hear me, O Lord.*

Cleanse Thou me, O Lord, from my secret faults.

*Keep back Thy servant also from presumptuous sins.*

Lord have mercy.

*Christ have mercy.*

Lord have mercy.

*The Lord's Prayer.*

Our Father, &c.

*(privately.)*

And lead us not into temptation.

*But deliver us from evil.*



Turn us again, Lord God of hosts.

*Show us the light of Thy countenance and we shall be whole.*

O Christ, arise, help us.

*And deliver us for thy name's sake.*

Lord, hear my prayer.

*And let my cry come unto thee.*

The Lord be with you.

*And with thy spirit.*

Let us pray.

(xx) *Collect.*

*(for the day, &c.)*

Grant to us, Lord, we beseech Thee, that the course of this world may be so peaceably ordered by Thy providence, that Thy Church may joyfully serve Thee in all godly quietness, through the Lord.

The Lord be with you.

*And with thy spirit.*

Let us bless the Lord.

*Thanks be to God.*

May the souls of the faithful, through God's mercy, rest in peace. *Amen.*

## 6. VESPER SERVICE.

O God, make speed to save me.

*O Lord, make haste to help me.*

Glory be, &c. Amen. Hallelujah.

(yy) *Antiphon.* (1)

The Lord said

*Psalm 110.* (1)

. . . unto my Lord : Sit thou on my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool.

The Lord shall send the rod of thy power out of Sion : be thou ruler, even in the midst among thine enemies.

In the day of thy power shall the people offer thee free-will offerings with an holy worship : the dew of thy birth is of the womb of the morning.

The Lord sware, and will not repent : Thou art a Priest for ever after the order of Melchisedech.

The Lord upon thy right hand : shall wound even kings in the day of his wrath.

He shall judge among the heathen ; he shall fill the places with the dead bodies : and smite in sunder the heads over divers countries.

He shall drink of the brook in the way : therefore shall he lift up his head. Glory be, &c.

(yy) *Antiphon.* (1)

The Lord said unto my Lord : Sit Thou on my right hand.

(zz) *Antiphon.* (2)

All His commandments.

*Psalm 111.* (2)

I will give thanks unto the Lord with my whole heart : secretly among the faithful, and in the congregation.

The works of the Lord are great : sought out of all them that have pleasure therein.

His work is worthy to be praised, and had in honour : and his righteousness endureth for ever.

The merciful and gracious Lord hath so done his inmarvelous works : that they ought to be had in remembrance.

He hath given meat unto them that fear him : he shall ever be mindful of his covenant.

He hath showed his people the power of his works ; that he may give them the heritage of the heathen.

The works of his hands are verity and judgment : all his commandments are true.

They stand fast for ever and ever : and are done in truth and equity.

He sent redemption unto his people: he hath commanded his covenant for ever; holy and reverend is his Name.

The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom: a good understanding have all they that do thereafter; the praise of it endureth for ever. Glory be, &c.

(zz) *Antiphon.* (2) All his commandments are true: they stand fast for ever and ever.

(aaa) *Antiphon.* (3) He hath great delight.

*Psalm 112.* (3) Blessed is the man that feareth the Lord; he hath great delight in his commandments.

His seed shall be mighty upon earth: the generation of the faithful shall be blessed.

Riches and plenteousness shall be in his house: and his righteousness endureth for ever.

Unto the godly there ariseth up light in the darkness: he is merciful, loving, and righteous.

A good man is merciful, and lendeth: and will guide his words with discretion.

For he shall never be moved: and the righteous shall be had in everlasting remembrance.

He will not be afraid of any evil tidings: for his heart standeth fast, and believeth in the Lord.

His heart is established, and will not shrink: until he see his desire upon his enemies.

He hath dispersed abroad, and given to the poor: and his righteousness remaineth for ever; his horn shall be exalted with honour.

The ungodly shall see it, and it shall grieve him: he shall gnash with his teeth, and consume away; the desire of the ungodly shall perish. Glory be, &c.

(aaa) *Antiphon.* (3) He hath great delight in his commandments.

(bbb) *Antiphon.* (4) The name of the Lord.

*Psalm 113.* (4) Praise the Lord, ye servants: O praise the name of the Lord.

Blessed be the Name of the Lord: from this time forth for evermore.

The Lord's name is praised: from the rising up of the sun, unto the going down of the same.

The Lord is high above all heathen: and his glory above the heavens.

Who is like unto the Lord our God, that hath his dwelling so high: and yet humbleth himself to behold the things that are in heaven and earth?

He taketh up the simple out of the dust: and lifteth the poor out of the mire.

That he may set him with the princes: even with the princes of his people.

He maketh the barren woman to keep house: and to be a joyful mother of children. Glory be, &c.

(bbb) *Antiphon.* (4) Blessed be the name of the Lord for evermore.

(ccc) *Antiphon.* (5) We who live.

*Psalm 114 and* When Israel came out of Egypt: and the house of Jacob  
115. (5.) from among the strange people,

Judah was his sanctuary: and Israel his dominion.

The sea saw that, and fled: Jordan was driven back.

The mountains skipped like rams: and the little hills like young sheep.

What aileth thee, O thou sea, that thou fleddest: and thou Jordan, that thou wast driven back?

Ye mountains, that ye skipped like rams: and ye little hills like young sheep?

Tremble, thou earth, at the presence of the Lord: at the presence of the God of Jacob;

Who turned the hard rock into a standing water: and the flint-stone into a springing well.

Not unto us, O Lord, not unto us, but unto thy Name give the praise: for thy loving mercy, and for thy truth's sake.

Wherefore shall the heathen say: Where is now their God?

As for our God, he is in heaven: he hath done whatsoever pleased him.

Their idols are silver and gold: even the work of men's hands.

They have mouths and speak not: eyes have they, and see not.

They have ears and hear not: noses have they and smell not.

They have hands, and handle not; feet have they, and walk not: neither speak they through their throat.

They that make them are like unto them: and so are all such as put their trust in them.

But thou, house of Israel, trust thou in the Lord: he is their succour and defence.

Ye house of Aaron, put your trust in the Lord: he is their helper and defender.

Ye that fear the Lord, put your trust in the Lord: he is their helper and defender.

The Lord hath been mindful of us, and he shall bless us: even he shall bless the house of Israel, he shall bless the house of Aaron.

He shall bless them that fear the Lord : both small and great.

The Lord shall increase you more and more : you and your children.

Ye are the blessed of the Lord : who made heaven and earth.

All the whole heavens are the Lord's : the earth hath he given to the children of men.

The dead praise not thee, O Lord : neither all they that go down into silence.

But we will praise the Lord : from this time forth for evermore. Praise the Lord. Glory be, &c.

(ccc) *Antiphon.* (5) We who live will praise the Lord.

(ddd) *Text. (Capitulum.) Minister.*—Blessed be God, even the Father of our 2 Cor. i. 3, 4. Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of mercies, and the God of all comfort, who comforteth us in all our tribulation.

*Thanks be to God.*

(eee) *Hymn.*

[Lucis creator  
optime.]

Father of Lights, by whom each day,

Is kindled out of night ;

Who, when the heavens were made, didst lay

Their rudiments in light :

Thou, who didst bind and blend in one,

The glistening morn and evening pale,

Hear Thou our plaint, when light is gone

And lawlessness and strife prevail.

Hear, lest the whelming weight of crime

Wreck us with life in view ;

Lest thoughts and schemes of sense and time

Earn us a sinner's due.

So may we knock at heaven's door,

And strive the prize of life to win :

Continually and evermore

Guarded without and pure within.

This grace on Thy redeemed confer,

Father, Co-equal Son,

And Holy Ghost the Comforter,

Eternal Three in One. *Amen.*

(fff) *Verse and* Let my prayer be set forth

*Response.* *In thy sight as the incense.*

(ggg) Master, we have toiled all the night.

*Ant. Magnificat.* My soul doth magnify the Lord : and my spirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour.

For he hath regarded: the lowliness of his handmaiden.

For, behold, from henceforth: all generations shall call me blessed.

For he that is mighty hath magnified me: and holy is his Name.

And his mercy is on them that fear him: throughout all generations.

He hath shewed strength with his arm: he hath scattered the proud in the imagination of their hearts.

He hath put down the mighty from their seat: and hath exalted the humble and meek.

He hath filled the hungry with good things: and the rich he hath sent empty away.

He remembering his mercy, hath holpen his servant Israel: as he promised to our forefathers, Abraham and his seed for ever. Glory be, &c.

(ggg) *Antiphon.*

Master, we have toiled all the night and have taken nothing; nevertheless, at Thy word I will let down the net.

The Lord be with you.

*And with thy spirit.*

Let us pray.

(hhh) *Collect (for the day, &c.)*

Grant to us, Lord, we beseech Thee, that the course of this world may be so peaceably ordered by Thy providence, that Thy Church may joyfully serve Thee in all godly quietness through the Lord. *Amen.*

*The following Commemorations are read at Lauds also.*

*Antiphon.*

Holy Mary, succour the wretched, help the weak-hearted, comfort the mourners, pray for the people, interpose for the clergy, intercede for the devoted women: let all feel thy help, whoso celebrate thy holy commemoration.

Pray for us, Holy Mother of God.

*That we may be made worthy of the promises of Christ.*

Let us pray.

*Collect.*

Grant, O Lord God, we beseech Thee, that we thy servants may enjoy perpetual health of mind and body, and, by the glorious intercession of the Ever-Virgin Mary, may be delivered from present sorrow, and so have the fruition of everlasting joy.

*Antiphon.*

Peter the Apostle, and Paul the teacher of the Gentiles, they have taught us Thy law, O Lord.

Thou shalt make them princes in all lands.

*They shall remember Thy name from one generation to another.*

Let us pray.

O God, who when thy Apostle Peter walked on the waves, savedst him from drowning with Thy right hand, and thrice delivered his fellow Apostle Paul from shipwreck on the open sea, favourably hear us, and grant, that by the deserts of both of them we may obtain everlasting glory.

*Antiphon.*

Give peace, in our time, O Lord, because there is none other that fighteth for us, but only Thou, O God.

Peace be within Thy walls.

*And plenteousness within Thy palaces.*

Let us pray.

*Collect.*

O God, from whom all holy desires, all good counsels, and all just works do proceed, give unto Thy servants that peace which the world cannot give; that both our hearts may be set to obey Thy commandments, and also that by Thee we being defended from the fear of our enemies, may pass our time in rest and quietness, through Jesus Christ our Lord, who liveth and reigneth with Thee in the unity of the Holy Ghost, one God, world without end. *Amen.*

The Lord be with you.

*And with thy spirit.*

Let us bless the Lord.

*Thanks be to God.*

May the souls of the faithful, through God's mercy, rest in peace. *Amen.*

## 7. COMPLINE SERVICE.

*Reader.*—Sir, pray for a blessing.

*Benediction.*

*Minister.*—The Lord Almighty grant us a quiet night and an end of toils. *Amen.*

*Short Lesson.*

1 Pet. v. 8.

Brethren, be sober, be vigilant; for your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour; whom resist stedfast in the faith.

But Thou, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

Our help is in the name of the Lord,

*Who hath made heaven and earth.*

*The Lord's Prayer.*

(*privately.*)

Our Father, &c.

(*vide supra,*  
*Prime Service.*)

*Minister.*—I confess before God Almighty, before the blessed Mary, Ever-Virgin, the Blessed Michael Archangel, the blessed John Baptist, the Holy Apostles Peter and Paul, before all Saints, and you, my brethren, that I have sinned too much in thought, word, and deed. It is my fault, my fault, my grievous fault. Therefore I beseech the blessed Mary, Ever-Virgin, the blessed Michael Archangel, the blessed John Baptist, the Holy Apostles Peter and Paul, all Saints, and you, my brethren, to pray the Lord our God for me.

*People.*—*Almighty God, pity thee, absolve thee from thy sins, and bring thee safe to life everlasting. Amen.*

*People.*—I confess before God Almighty, before the blessed Mary, Ever-Virgin, the blessed Michael Archangel, the blessed John Baptist, the Holy Apostles Peter and Paul, before all Saints, and thee, my father, that I have sinned too much in thought, word, and deed. It is my fault, my fault, my grievous fault. Therefore I beseech the blessed Mary, Ever-Virgin, the blessed Michael Archangel, the blessed John Baptist, the Holy Apostles Peter and Paul, all Saints, and thee, my father, to pray the Lord our God for me.

*Minister.*—Almighty God pity you, absolve you from your sins, and bring you safe to everlasting life. *Amen.*

The Almighty and merciful Lord grant to us pardon, absolution, and remission of all our sins. *Amen.*



Turn thou us, O Lord our Saviour.

*And let thine anger cease from us.*

O God, make speed to save me.

*O Lord, make haste to help me.*

Glory be, &c.

As it was, &c.

*Antiphon.*

Have mercy upon me.

*Psalm 4.*

Hear me, when I call, O God of my righteousness: thou hast set me at liberty when I was in trouble: have mercy upon me, and hearken unto my prayer.

O ye sons of men, how long will ye blaspheme mine honour: and have such pleasure in vanity, and seek after leasing?

Know this also, that the Lord hath chosen to himself the man that is godly: when I call upon the Lord, he will hear me.

Stand in awe, and sin not: commune with your own heart, and in your chamber, and be still.

Offer the sacrifice of righteousness: and put your trust in the Lord.

There be many that say: who will show us any good?

Lord, lift thou up: the light of thy countenance upon us.

Thou hast put gladness in my heart: since the time that their corn, and wine, and oil increased.

I will lay me down in peace, and take my rest: for it is thou, Lord, only, that makest me dwell in safety. Glory be, &c.

*Psalm 31.*

In thee, O Lord, have I put my trust: let me never be put to confusion: deliver me in thy righteousness.

Bow down thine ear to me: make haste to deliver me.

And be thou my strong rock, and house of defence: that thou mayest save me.

For thou art my strong rock and my castle: be thou also my guide, and lead me for thy Name's sake.

Draw me out of the net that they have laid privily for me: for thou art my strength.

Into thy hands I commend my spirit: for thou hast redeemed me, O Lord, thou God of truth. Glory be, &c.

*Psalm 91.*

Whoso dwelleth under the defence of the Most High: shall abide under the shadow of the Almighty.

I will say unto the Lord, Thou art my hope, and my strong hold: my God, in him will I trust.

For he shall deliver thee from the snare of the hunter: and from the noisome pestilence.

He shall defend thee under his wings, and thou shalt be safe under his feathers: his faithfulness and truth shall be thy shield and buckler.

Thou shalt not be afraid for any terror by night : nor for the arrow that flieth by day.

For the pestilence that walketh in darkness : nor for the sickness that destroyeth in the noon-day.

A thousand shall fall beside thee, and ten thousand at thy right hand : but it shall not come nigh thee.

Yea, with thine eyes shalt thou behold : and see the reward of the ungodly.

For thou, Lord, art my hope : thou hast set thine house of defence very high.

There shall no evil happen unto thee : neither shall any plague come nigh thy dwelling.

For he shall give his angels charge over thee : to keep thee in all thy ways.

They shall bear thee in their hands : that thou hurt not thy foot against a stone.

Thou shalt go upon the lion and adder : the young lion and the dragon shalt thou tread under thy feet.

Because he hath set his love upon me, therefore will I deliver him : I will set him up, because he hath known my Name.

He shall call upon me, and I will hear him : yea, I am with him in trouble : I will deliver him, and bring him to honour.

With long life will I satisfy him : and show him my salvation. Glory be, &c.

*Psalm 134.*

Behold now, praise the Lord : all ye servants of the Lord ;  
Ye that by night stand in the house of the Lord : even in the courts of the house of our God,

Lift up your hands in the sanctuary : and praise the Lord.

The Lord, that made heaven and earth : give thee blessing out of Sion. Glory be, &c.

*Antiphon.*

Have mercy upon me, O Lord, and hearken unto my prayer.

*Hymn.*

Now that the day-light dies away

Ere we lie down and sleep,

[Te lucis ante  
terminum.]

Thee, Maker of the world, we pray

To own us and to keep.

Let dreams depart and visions fly,

The offspring of the night ;

Keep us, like shrines, beneath Thine eye,

Pure in our foe's despite.

This grace on Thy redeemed confer,  
 Father, Co-equal Son,  
 And Holy Ghost the Comforter,  
 Eternal Three in One. *Amen.*

*Text.*

Jer. xiv. 9.

*Minister.*—Thou, O Lord, art in the midst of us, and we are called by thy name; leave us not, O Lord, our God.

*Thanks be to God.*

*Short Response.*

*Into thy hands, O Lord, I commend my spirit.*

*Into thy hands, &c.*

For thou hast redeemed me, O Lord God of Truth.

*I commend my spirit.*

Glory be, &c.

*Into thine hands, &c.*

Keep us, O Lord, as the apple of an eye.

*Hide us under the shadow of Thy wings.*

*Antiphon.*

Save us, O Lord.

*Nunc Dimittis.*

Lord, now lettest thou thy servant depart in peace: according to thy word.

For mine eyes have seen: thy salvation.

Which thou hast prepared: before the face of all people;

To be a light to lighten the Gentiles: and to be the glory of thy people Israel. Glory be, &c.

*Antiphon.*

Save us, O Lord, when we are awake, guard us when we are asleep, that we may be with Christ when awake, and may rest in peace.

Lord, have mercy.

*Christ, have mercy.*

Lord, have mercy.

*The Lord's Prayer*

Our Father, &c.

*(privately.)*

And lead us not into temptation.

*But deliver us from evil.*

*The Creed*

I believe, &c.

*(privately.)*

The resurrection of the body,

*And the life everlasting. Amen.*

Blessed art Thou, O Lord God of our fathers.

*Greatly to be praised, and glorious for ever.*

Let us bless the Father and the Son, with the Holy Ghost.

*Let us praise and exalt Him for ever.*

Blessed art Thou, O Lord, in the firmament of heaven.

*And greatly to be praised, and glorious, and highly exalted for ever.*

The Almighty and merciful Lord bless and protect us.

*Amen.*

Vouchsafe, O Lord, to keep us,

*This night without sin.*

Have mercy upon us, O Lord,

*Have mercy upon us.*

O Lord, let Thy mercy be showed upon us.

*As we do put our trust in Thee.*

Lord, hear my prayer.

*And let my cry come unto Thee.*

The Lord be with you,

*And with thy spirit.*

Let us pray.

*Collect.*

Look down, we beseech Thee, O Lord, upon this dwelling, and drive far from it all snares of the enemy! let Thy holy angels dwell in it, and preserve us in peace, and let Thy blessing ever be upon us, through the Lord. *Amen.*

The Lord be with you,

*And with thy spirit.*

Let us bless the Lord.

*Thanks be given to God.*

*Benediction.*

The Almighty and merciful Lord, the Father, and the Son, and the Holy Ghost, bless and preserve us. *Amen.*

(*This is one of the four Antiphons animadverted on, pp. 11 and 23.*)

Hail, Queen! mother of mercy, our life, sweetness, and hope, hail! We exiles cry to thee, the children of Eve. To thee we sigh with groans and weeping in this valley of tears. Come then, O our advocate, turn on us thy merciful eyes, and shew to us, after this banishment, Jesus, the blessed fruit of thy womb. O kind, O pitiful, O sweet Virgin Mary.

Pray for us, holy mother of God,

*That we may be made worthy of the promises of Christ.*

*Collect.*

Almighty everlasting God, who hast prepared the body and soul of Mary the glorious Virgin Mother, to be a fit dwelling for Thy Son by the co-operation of the Holy Ghost, grant that we, who are gladdened by this commemoration of her, may by her pitiful intercession be delivered from present ills, and eternal death, through the same Jesus Christ our Lord. *Amen.*

The help of God remain with us always. *Amen.*

## § 3. WEEK-DAY SERVICE.

*For First Monday in Advent.*

O Lord, open Thou, &amp;c.

*And my mouth, &c.*

God, make speed, &amp;c.

O Lord, make haste, &amp;c.

Glory be, &c. *Amen. Hallelujah.*(a) *Invitatory.* O come let us worship the Lord, the King approaching.*Psalm 95.* O come let us sing, &c.

Glory, &amp;c.

(b) *Hymn.* Verbum supernum prodiens, &c.*Antiphon.* The Lord is the strength.*Psalm 27. (1)* The Lord is my light, &c. Glory, &c.*Psalm 28. (2)* Unto Thee will I cry, &c. Glory, &c.*Antiphon.* The Lord is the strength of my life.*Antiphon.* Worship the Lord.*Psalm 29. (3)* Bring unto the Lord, &c. Glory, &c.*Psalm 30. (4)* I will magnify Thee, &c. Glory, &c.*Antiphon.* Worship the Lord with holy worship.*Antiphon.* Deliver me.*Psalm 31. (5)* In thee, O God, have I put, &c. Glory, &c.*Psalm 32. (6)* Blessed is he, &c. Glory, &c.*Antiphon.* Deliver me in Thy righteousness.*Antiphon.* It becometh well the just.*Psalm 33. (7)* Rejoice in the Lord, &c. Glory, &c.*Psalm 34. (8)* I will alway give thanks, &c. Glory, &c.*Antiphon.* It becometh well the just to be thankful.*Antiphon.* Fight thou against them.*Psalm 35. (9)* Plead Thou my cause, &c. Glory, &c.*Psalm 36. (10)* My heart showeth me, &c. Glory, &c.*Antiphon.* Fight Thou against them, that fight against me.

*Antiphon.* Commit thy way.  
*Psalm 37.* (11) Fret not thyself, &c. Glory, &c.  
*Psalm 38.* (12) Put me not to rebuke, &c. Glory, &c.  
*Antiphon.* Commit thy way unto the Lord.

(f.) *V.* Out of Sion hath God appeared.

*Reader.*—Sir, be pleased to bless us.

*The Lord's Prayer,* Our Father, &c.  
 (*privately.*) And lead us not, &c.  
*But deliver us, &c.*

*Absolution 1.* O Lord Jesu Christ, hear the prayers of Thy servants,  
 and have mercy upon us, who with the Father, &c.

*Reader.*—Sir, be pleased to bless us.

*Benediction 1.* The Father everlasting, &c.

*Lesson 1.* Wash you, make you clean; put away the evil of your  
*Isai. i. 16—18.* doings from before Mine eyes; cease to do evil;

Learn to do well; seek judgment, relieve the oppressed;  
 judge the fatherless; plead for the widow:

Come now and let us reason together, saith the Lord;  
 though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as  
 snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as  
 wool.

But Thou, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

*Response 1.* Cherish the word, O Virgin Mary, which is conveyed to thee  
 from the Lord through the Angel; thou shalt conceive in thy  
 womb, and bring forth both God and man: that thou mayest  
 be blessed among all women.

Thou shalt bring forth a son, and yet abide a virgin:  
 thou shalt be with child, and be a mother, yet know not a  
 man.

*That thou mayest be blessed among women.*

*Reader.*—Sir, be pleased to bless us.

*Benediction 2.* The only begotten Son of God, &c.

*Lesson 2.* If ye be willing and obedient, ye shall eat the good of the  
*Isai. i. 19—23.* land: but if ye refuse and rebel, ye shall be devoured with  
 the sword, for the mouth of the Lord hath spoken it.

How is the faithful city become an harlot? It was full of  
 judgment; righteousness lodged in it, but now murderers.

Thy silver is become dross, thy wine mixed with water; thy princes are rebellious and companions of thieves: every one loveth gifts, and followeth after rewards: they judge not the fatherless, neither doth the cause of the widow come unto them.

But thou, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

*Response 2.*

*Let the heavens rejoice, and let the earth be glad, let the hills be joyful together, for our Lord shall come, and He shall have pity upon the poor.*

In His time shall the righteous flourish; yea, and abundance of peace.

*And he shall have pity upon the poor.*

*Benediction 3.*

*Reader.*—Sir, be pleased to bless us.

The grace of the Holy Ghost, &c.

*Lesson 3.*

Therefore saith the Lord, the Lord of hosts, the mighty One of Israel, Ah, I will ease Me of Mine adversaries, and avenge me of Mine enemies.

*Isai. i. 24—28.*

And I will turn My hand upon thee, and purely purge away thy dross, and take away all thy tin;

And I will restore thy judges as at the first, and thy counsellors as at the beginning: afterward thou shalt be called the city of righteousness, the faithful city.

Zion shall be redeemed with judgment, and her courts with righteousness.

And the destruction of the transgressors and of the sinners shall be together, and they that forsake the Lord shall be consumed.

But thou, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

*Response 3.*

*Strangers shall not pass through Jerusalem any more; for in that day the mountains shall drop down new wine, and the hills shall flow with milk, saith the Lord.*

God shall come from Libanus, and the holy one from the mount of cedars.

*For in that day, the mountains shall drop down new wine, and the hills shall flow with milk, saith the Lord.*

Glory be to the Father, &c.

*For in that day the mountains, &c.*

## LAUDS.

- O God, make speed, &c.  
*O Lord, make haste, &c.*  
 Glory be, &c. Amen. Hallelujah.
- Antiphon.* Have mercy upon me.  
*Psalm 51. (1)* . . . O God, after Thy great goodness, &c. Glory, &c.  
*Antiphon.* Have mercy upon me, O God.
- Antiphon.* Consider, O Lord.  
*Psalm 5. (2)* Ponder my word, &c. Glory, &c.  
*Antiphon.* Consider, O Lord, my meditation.
- Antiphon.* O God, Thou art my God.  
*Psalms 63 & 67. (3)* . . . . . Early will I seek Thee, &c. Glory, &c.  
*Antiphon.* O God, Thou art my God, early will I seek thee.
- Antiphon.* Thine anger is turned away.  
*Canticle. Isa. xii. (4)* O Lord, I will praise Thee, &c. Glory, &c.  
*Antiphon.* Thine anger is turned away, and thou comfortedst me.
- Antiphon.* O praise the Lord.  
*Ps. 148—150. (5)* . . . of heaven, praise Him in the height, &c. Glory, &c.  
*Antiphon.* O praise the Lord of heaven.
- Text (Capitulum.)* Come ye and let us go up to the mountain of the Lord, to  
 (t) *Isai. ii. 3.* the house of the God of Jacob; and He will teach us of His  
 ways, and we will walk in His paths; for out of Zion  
 shall go forth the Law, and the Word of the Lord from  
 Jerusalem.  
*Thanks be to God.*
- (u) *Hymn.* En clara vox redarguit, &c.
- (v) *Verse* The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye  
*and Response.* the way of the Lord.  
*Make His paths straight.*
- (w) *Antiphon.* The Angel of the Lord made annunciation to Mary.  
*The Benedictus.* Blessed be the Lord God, &c.  
*Antiphon.* The Angel of the Lord made annunciation to Mary, and  
 she conceived of the Holy Ghost. Hallelujah.



(This portion of the Service down to the Collect, is proper to the Week-days of Advent, the Four Seasons, and Vigils, which are Fasts, except Christmas Eve; it is repeated at Vespers after the Magnificat with Psalm 51 for Psalm 130. The Lord's Prayer is all aloud.)

Lord have mercy.

*Christ have mercy.*

Lord have mercy.

Our Father which art in heaven, hallowed be Thy name, Thy kingdom come, Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven, Give us this day our daily bread, And forgive us our trespasses, as we forgive them that trespass against us.

And lead us not into temptation,

*But deliver us from evil.*

I said, Lord, be merciful unto me.

*Heal my soul, for I have sinned against thee.*

Turn Thee again, O Lord, at the last.

*And be gracious unto Thy servants.*

Let Thy merciful kindness, O Lord, be upon us.

*Like as we do put our trust in Thee.*

Let Thy priests be clothed with righteousness.

*And let Thy saints sing with joyfulness.*

O Lord, save the king.

*And hear us what time we call upon Thee.*

O save Thy people, and give Thy blessing unto Thine inheritance.

*Feed them and set them up for ever.*

O think upon Thy congregation.

*Whom Thou hast purchased and redeemed of old.*

Peace be within Thy walls.

*And plenteousness within Thy palaces.*

Let us pray for the faithful who are departed.

*Grant them, O Lord, eternal repose, and may perpetual light shine upon them.*

May they rest in peace.

*Amen.*

For our brethren who are away.

*My God, save Thy servants that put their trust in Thee.*

For the afflicted and for captives.

*Deliver, Israel, O Lord, out of all his troubles.*

Send thou help from the sanctuary.

*And strengthen them out of Zion.*

Lord, hear my prayer.

*And let my cry come unto Thee.*

Out of the deep, &c. Glory, &c.

Turn us again, Lord God of hosts.

*Show the light of Thy countenance and we shall be whole.*

Arise, O Christ, help us.

*And deliver us for Thy name's sake.*

Psalm 130.

Lord, hear my prayer.

*And let my cry come unto Thee.*

The Lord be with you.

*And with thy spirit.*

Let us pray.

(x) *Collect. (Oratio.)* Raise up, we pray Thee, O Lord, Thy power, and come, (for the day and week.) that we, being meet, may be snatched from the perils of our sins by thy succour, and be saved by Thy deliverance, who livest, &c.

The Lord be with you.

*And with thy spirit.*

Let us bless the Lord.

*Thanks be to God.*

May the souls of the faithful rest in peace.

*Amen.*

## PRIME.

(Here are marked merely the differences from the 4th Sunday in Pentecost. Some of them, as in Matins and Lauds, are but peculiar to the season.)

*Antiphon.*

In that day the mountains shall drop down new wine.

*Psalm 54. (1)*

Save me, O God, &c. Glory, &c. (as on Sunday.)

*Psalm 24. (2)*

The earth is the Lord's, &c. Glory, &c.

*Psalm 119. (3)*

Blessed are those, &c. (as on Sunday.)

1—32.

16—32. (4)

O do well, &c. (as on Sunday.)

*Antiphon.*

In that day the mountains shall drop down new wine, and the hills shall flow with milk. Hallelujah.

(cc) *Text. (Capitulum.)*

*Zech. viii. 19, 20.*

(dd) *Short Response.*

(the same except instead of Thou that sittest, &c.) (ee)

*Minister.*—Love the Truth and Peace, saith the Lord of hosts. *Thanks be to God.*

O Christ, &c.

Thou that shall come into the world—

Lord have mercy, &c.

Our Father, &c.

I believe, &c.

The Lord's Prayer.

The Creed.

*Sentences.*

I have cried, &c. (down to)

And stablish me, &c.

(These additional Sentences are inserted, whenever there are the additional

Deliver me, O Lord, from the evil man.

*And preserve me from the wicked man.*

Deliver me from mine enemies, O God.

*Defend me from them that rise up against me.*

*Sentences & Psalms* O deliver me from the wicked doers.  
 as above set down And save me from the blood-thirsty men.  
 in *Lauds and Vespers.* So will I always sing praise unto Thy name.  
 pers.) That I may daily perform my vows.

Hear us, O God of our salvation.

Thou that art the hope of all the ends of the earth, and of them that remain in the broad sea.

O God, make speed to save me.

O Lord, make haste to help me.

Holy God, holy and strong, holy and eternal.

Have mercy upon us.

Bless the Lord, O my soul.

And all that is within me, bless His holy Name.

Bless the Lord, O my soul.

And forget not all His benefits.

Who forgiveth all thy sin.

And healeth all thine infirmities.

Who saveth thy life from destruction.

And crowneth thee with mercy and loving-kindness.

Who satisfieth thy mouth with good things.

Making thee young and lusty as an eagle.

Our help is, &c.

*The Confessions, Answers, and Prayer of Absolution.* I confess, &c. God Almighty, &c. I confess, &c. God Almighty, &c. The Almighty, &c. vouchsafe, &c.  
 Collect. O Lord, God Almighty, &c.

(And so on to the end, as on the 4th Sunday in Pentecost, with the substitution of the following.)

(ii) *Short Lesson.* O Lord, be gracious unto us. We have waited for Thee.  
*Isai. xxxiii. 2.* Be Thou our arm every morning; our salvation also in the time of trouble.

### THIRD HOUR.

*The following are the only variations.*

(kk) *Antiphon.* (before and after the Psalms.) Rejoice greatly, daughter of Zion: shout, O daughter of Jerusalem. Hallelujah.

(ll) *Text.* (*Capitulum.*) Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that I will raise unto David a righteous Branch, and a King shall reign and prosper, and shall execute judgment and justice in the earth.  
*Jer. xxxiii. 5.*

(mm) *Short Response.* Come thou and save us: O Lord God of Hosts.  
 Come Thou, &c.

Show the light of thy countenance and we shall be whole.

*O Lord God of Hosts.*

Glory be to the Father, &c.

*Come Thou and save us, O Lord God of hosts.*

The heathen shall fear Thy name, O Lord.

*And all the kings of the earth Thy majesty.*

(nn) *Collect (for the week.)* (as in *Lands.*)

---

## SIXTH HOUR.

*(The variations are)*

(pp) *Antiphon (before and after the Psalms.)* Behold, the Lord shall come, and all His Saints with Him, and the light of that day shall be great. Hallelujah.

(qq) *Text (Capitulum.)* In His days Judah shall be saved, and Israel shall dwell safely; and this is the name whereby He shall be called, Jer. xxiii. 6. The Lord our righteousness.

(rr) *Short Response.* *Show us Thy mercy: O Lord.*  
*Show us, &c.*  
 And grant us Thy Salvation.  
*O Lord.*  
 Glory be to the Father, &c.  
*Show us Thy mercy: O Lord.*

Remember me, O Lord, according to the favour that Thou bearest unto Thy people.

*O visit me with Thy Salvation.*

(ss) *Collect for the week.* (as before.)

---

## NINTH HOUR.

*(The variations are)*

(uu) *Antiphon (before and after the Psalms.)* Behold, the great Prophet shall come, and He shall rebuild Jerusalem. Hallelujah.

(vv) *Text. (Capitulum.)* His time is near to come, and his days shall not be prolonged: for the Lord will have mercy on Jacob, and will yet choose Israel. Isai. xiv. 1.

(ww) *Short Response.* *The Lord shall arise upon thee: O Jerusalem.*  
*The Lord, &c.*  
 And His glory shall be seen upon thee.  
*O Jerusalem.*  
 Glory be to the Father, &c.  
*The Lord shall arise upon thee: O Jerusalem.*

Turn us again, O Lord God of Hosts.

Show the light of thy countenance, and we shall be whole.

(xx) Collect for  
the week. (as before.)

---

VESPERS.

O God, make speed, &c.

O Lord, make haste, &c.

He hath inclined.

*Antiphon.*  
*Psalm 116. (part 1) (1)* I am well pleased, &c. Glory, &c.  
*Antiphon.* He hath inclined His ear unto me.

*Antiphon.* I believed  
*Psalm 116. (part 2) (2)* . . . and therefore will I speak, &c. Glory, &c.  
*Antiphon.* I believed, and therefore will I speak.

*Antiphon.* O Praise the Lord.  
*Psalm 117. (3)* . . . all ye heathen, &c. Glory, &c.  
*Antiphon.* O Praise the Lord, all ye heathen.

*Antiphon.* I called upon the Lord.  
*Psalm 120. (4)* When I was in trouble, &c. Glory, &c.  
*Antiphon.* I called upon the Lord, and He heard me.

*Antiphon.* From whence cometh.  
*Psalm 121. (5)* I will lift up, &c. Glory, &c.  
*Antiphon.* From whence cometh my help.

(ddd) *Text.* The sceptre shall not depart from Judah, nor a lawgiver  
*Capitulum.* from between his feet, until Shiloh come: and unto Him shall  
*Gen. xlix. 10.* the gathering of the people be.

*Hymn.* Creator alme siderum, &c.

(fff) *Verse and* Drop down, ye heavens, from above, and let the skies pour  
*Response.* down Righteousness.  
*Let the earth open, and let them bring forth Salvation.*

(ggg) *Antiphon.* Lift up thine eyes, O Jerusalem.

*The Magnificat.* My soul doth magnify, &c.  
*Antiphon.* Lift up thine eyes, O Jerusalem, and behold the greatness  
of thy king. Behold, the Saviour comes to loose thee from  
thy chain.

(Then follow the same Sentences with Psalm 51, instead of  
Psalm 130, which are inserted in Lauds.)

(hhh) *The Col-*  
*lect for the week.* (as before.)

*Week-day Service.*

The Lord be with you.

*And with thy spirit.*

Let us bless the Lord.

*Thanks be to God.*

May the souls of the faithful rest in peace.

*Amen.*

---

**COMPLINE.**

*This office is invariable throughout the year, except in the Anthems to the Virgin at the end.*

*Instead of the Salve Regina as after Pentecost, in Advent is used the Alma Redemptoris.*

§ 4. PART OF THE SERVICE FOR AUGUST 6TH.

*The Feast of the Transfiguration.*

MATINS.

O Lord, open thou my lips.

*And my mouth shall show forth thy praise.*

O God, make speed to save me.

*O Lord, make haste to help me.*

Glory be, &c.

As it was, &c. Amen. Hallelujah.

(a) *Invitatory.*

Let us worship Christ Most High, the King of Glory.

Let us worship, &c.

*Psalm 95.*

O come, let us sing unto the Lord : let us heartily rejoice in the strength of our salvation.

Let us come before his presence with thanksgiving : and show ourselves glad in him with psalms.

Let us worship Christ, &c.

For the Lord is a great God : and a great King above all gods.

In his hand are all the corners of the earth : and the strength of the hills is his also.

The King of Glory.

The sea is his, and he made it : and his hands prepared the dry land.

O come, let us worship and fall down : and kneel before the Lord our Maker ;

For he is the Lord our God : and we are the people of his pasture, and the sheep of his hand.

Let us worship Christ, &c.

To-day if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts ; as in the provocation, and as in the day of temptation in the wilderness.

When your fathers tempted me : proved me, and saw my works.

The King of Glory.

Forty years long was I grieved with this generation, and said: It is a people that do err in their hearts: for they have not known my ways.

Unto whom I swear in my wrath: that they should not enter into my rest.

Let us worship Christ, &c.

Glory be, &c.

The King of Glory.

Let us worship Christ Most High, the King of Glory.

(b) *Hymn.*

[*Quicumque*

*Christum quæ-*  
*ritis.*]

O ye who seek the Lord,

Lift up your eyes on high,

For there He doth the sign accord

Of His bright majesty.

We see a wondrous sight

That shall outlive all time,

Older than depth and starry height,

Limitless and sublime.

'Tis He for Israel's fold

And heathen tribes decreed,

The King to Abraham pledged of old

And his eternal seed.

Prophets foretold His birth,

And witness'd when He came;

The Father speaks to all the earth,

To hear, and fear His name.

To Jesus, who displays

To babes His beaming face,

Be, with the Father, endless praise,

And with the Spirit of grace. *Amen.*

---

## NOCTURN I.

(c) *Antiphon.*

Thou madest Him a little lower than the Angels, to crown Him with glory and worship. Thou makest Him to have dominion of the works of Thy hands.

*Psalm 8. (1)*

O Lord our Governor, how excellent is thy Name in all the world: thou hast set thy glory above the heavens!



Out of the mouth of very babes and sucklings hast thou ordained strength, because of thine enemies: that thou mightest still the enemy and the avenger.

For I will consider thy heavens, even the works of thy fingers: the moon and the stars which thou hast ordained.

What is man, that thou art mindful of him: and the son of man, that thou visitest him?

Thou madest him lower than the angels: to crown him with glory and worship.

Thou makest him to have dominion of the works of thy hands: and thou hast put all things in subjection under his feet;

All sheep and oxen: yea, and the beasts of the field;

The fowls of the air, and the fishes of the sea: and whatsoever walketh through the paths of the seas.

O Lord our Governor: how excellent is thy Name in all the world! Glory be, &c.

(c) *Antiphon.*

Thou madest Him a little lower than the angels, to crown Him with glory and worship. Thou makest Him to have dominion of the works of Thy hands.

(d) *Antiphon.*

The Lord discovereth the thick bushes: in His temple doth every man speak of His honour.

*Psalm 29. (2)*

Bring unto the Lord, O ye mighty, bring your rams unto the Lord: ascribe unto the Lord worship and strength.

Give the Lord the honour due unto his Name: worship the Lord with holy worship.

It is the Lord that commandeth the waters: it is the glorious God that maketh the thunder.

It is the Lord that ruleth the seas; the voice of the Lord is mighty in operation: the voice of the Lord is a glorious voice.

The voice of the Lord breaketh the cedar trees: yea, the Lord breaketh the cedars of Libanus.

He maketh them also to skip like a calf: Libanus also, and Sirion, like a young unicorn.

The voice of the Lord divideth the flames of fire; the voice of the Lord shaketh the wilderness: yea, the Lord shaketh the wilderness of Cades.

The voice of the Lord maketh the hinds to bring forth young, and discovereth the thick bushes: in his temple doth every man speak of his honour.

The Lord sitteth above the water-flood: and the Lord remaineth a King for ever.

The Lord shall give strength unto his people: the Lord shall give his people the blessing of peace. Glory be, &c.

(d) *Antiphon.*

The Lord discovereth the thick bushes : in His temple doth every man speak of His honour.

(e) *Antiphon.*

Thou art fairer than the children of men : full of grace are Thy lips.

*Psalm 45. (3)*

My heart is inditing of a good matter : I speak of the things which I have made unto the King.

My tongue is the pen : of a ready writer.

Thou art fairer than the children of men : full of grace are thy lips, because God hath blessed thee for ever.

Gird thee with thy sword upon thy thigh, O thou most Mighty : according to thy worship and renown.

Good luck have thou with thine honour : ride on, because of the word of truth, of meekness, and righteousness : and thy right hand shall teach thee terrible things.

Thy arrows are very sharp, and the people shall be subdued unto thee : even in the midst among the King's enemies.

Thy seat, O God, endureth for ever : the sceptre of thy kingdom is a right sceptre.

Thou hast loved righteousness, and hated iniquity : wherefore God, even thy God, hath anointed thee with the oil of gladness above thy fellows.

All thy garments smell of myrrh, aloes, and cassia : out of the ivory palaces, whereby they have made thee glad.

Kings' daughters were among thy honourable women : upon thy right hand did stand the queen in a vesture of gold, wrought about with divers colours.

Hearken, O daughter, and consider, incline thine ear : forget also thine own people, and thy father's house.

So shall the King have pleasure in thy beauty : for he is thy Lord God, and worship thou him.

And the daughter of Tyre shall be there with a gift : like as the rich also among the people shall make their supplication before thee.

The King's daughter is all glorious within : her clothing is of wrought gold.

She shall be brought unto the King in raiment of needlework : the virgins that be her fellows shall bear her company, and shall be brought unto thee.

With joy and gladness shall they be brought : and shall enter into the King's palace.

Instead of thy fathers, thou shalt have children : whom thou mayest make princes in all lands.

I remember thy name from one generation to another,

therefore shall the people give thanks unto thee, world without end. Glory be, &c.

(e) *Antiphon.*

Thou art fairer than the children of men: full of grace are Thy lips.

(f) *Verse and Response.*

Thou hast appeared glorious in the sight of the Lord.

*Therefore the Lord hath clothed thee in comely apparel.*

*The Lord's Prayer (privately).*

Our Father, &c.

And lead us not into temptation.

*But deliver us from evil.*

*Absolution 1.*

O Lord Jesus Christ, hear the prayers of thy servants, and have mercy upon us, who with the Father and the Holy Spirit livest and reignest, world without end. *Amen.*

*Reader.*—Sir, be pleased to bless us.

*Benediction 1.*

*Minister.*—The Father everlasting, bless us with an eternal blessing. *Amen.*

*Lesson 1.*

*2 Pet. i. 10—14.*

The rather, brethren, give diligence to make your calling and election sure; for if ye do these things, ye shall never fall.

For so an entrance shall be ministered unto you abundantly, into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

Wherefore I will not be negligent to put you always in remembrance of these things, though ye know them, and be established in the present truth.

Yea, I think it meet, as long as I am in this tabernacle, to stir you up, by putting you in remembrance.

Knowing that shortly I must put off this my tabernacle, even as our Lord Jesus Christ hath showed me.

But thou, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

*Response 1.*

*Arise, shine, for thy light is come, and the glory of the Lord is risen upon thee.*

And Gentiles shall come to thy light, and kings to the brightness of thy rising.

*And the glory of the Lord is risen upon them.*

*Reader.*—Sir, be pleased to bless us.

*Benediction 2.*

*Minister.*—The only-begotten Son of God, vouchsafe to bless and help us. *Amen.*

*Lesson 2.*  
*2 Pet. i. 15—17.*

Moreover, I will endeavour, that ye may be able, after my decease, to have these things always in remembrance.

For we have not followed cunningly devised fables, when we made known unto you the power and coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, but were eye-witnesses of his majesty.

For he received from God the Father honour and glory, when there came such a voice to him from the excellent glory, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

But Thou, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

*Response 2.*

*In the bright cloud the Holy Ghost was seen, the Father's voice was heard: This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased; hear ye Him.*

A cloud overshadowed them, and the Father's voice was heard in thunder.

*This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased; hear ye Him.*

*Benediction 3.*

*Reader.*—Sir, be pleased to bless us.

*Minister.*—The grace of the Holy Ghost enlighten our thoughts and hearts. *Amen.*

*Lesson 3.*  
*2 Pet. i. 18—20.*

And this voice which came from heaven we heard, when we were with him in the holy mount.

We have also a more sure word of prophecy; whereunto ye do well that ye take heed, as unto a light that shineth in a dark place, until the day dawn, and the day-star arise in your hearts:

Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation.

For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as *they were* moved by the Holy Ghost.

But Thou, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

*Response 3.*

*Behold what manner of love the Father hath bestowed upon us; that we should be called the sons of God.*

We know that when He shall appear, we shall be like Him, for we shall see Him as He is.

*That we should be called the sons of God.*

Glory be to the Father, &c.

*That we should be called the sons of God.*

NOCTURN II.

(g) *Antiphon.*

Thou art of more honour and might than the hills of the robbers: the proud are robbed.

[*Illuminans tu mirabiliter à montibus æternis, &c.*]

In Jewry is God known: his name is great in Israel.

At Salem is his tabernacle: and his dwelling in Sion.

There brake he the arrows of the bow: the shield, the sword, and the battle.

*Psalm 76. (4)*

Thou art of more honour and might: than the hills of the robbers.

The proud are robbed, they have slept their sleep: and all the men, whose hands were mighty, have found nothing.

At thy rebuke, O God of Jacob: both the chariot and horse are fallen.

Thou, even thou art to be feared: and who may stand in thy sight when thou art angry?

Thou didst cause thy judgment to be heard from heaven: the earth trembled, and was still.

When God arose to judgment: and to help all the meek upon earth.

The fierceness of man shall turn to thy praise: and the fierceness of them shalt thou refrain.

Promise unto the Lord your God, and keep it, all ye that are around about him: bring presents unto him that ought to be feared.

He shall refrain the spirit of princes: and is wonderful among the kings of the earth. Glory be, &c.

(g) *Antiphon.*

Thou art of more honour and might than the hills of the robbers: the proud are robbed.

(h) *Antiphon.*

One day in thy courts is better than a thousand.

*Psalm 84. (5)*

O how amiable are thy dwellings: thou Lord of hosts!

My soul hath a desire and longing to enter into the courts of the Lord: my heart and my flesh rejoice in the living God.

Yea, the sparrow hath found her an house, and the swallow a nest, where she may lay her young, even thy altars, O Lord of hosts, my King and my God.

Blessed are they that dwell in thy house: they will be always praising thee.

Blessed is the man whose strength is in thee: in whose heart are thy ways.

Who going through the vale of misery use it for a well :  
and the pools are filled with water.

They will go from strength to strength : and unto the  
God of gods appeareth every one of them in Sion.

O Lord God of hosts, hear my prayer : hearken, O God  
of Jacob.

Behold, O God our defender : and look upon the face of  
thine Anointed.

For one day in thy courts : is better than a thousand.

I had rather be a door-keeper in the house of my God :  
than to dwell in the tents of ungodliness. Glory be, &c.

(b) *Antiphon.*

One day in thy courts is better than a thousand.

(i) *Antiphon.*

Very excellent things are spoken of thee, thou city of  
God.

*Psalm 87. (6)*

Her foundations are upon the holy hills : the Lord loveth  
the gates of Sion more than all the dwellings of Jacob.

Very excellent things are spoken of thee, thou city of  
God.

I will think upon Rahab and Babylon : with them that  
know me.

Behold ye the Philistines also : and they of Tyre, with the  
Morians : lo, there was he born.

And of Sion it shall be reported, that he was born in her :  
and the Most High shall stablish her.

The Lord shall rehearse it : when he writeth up the people,  
that he was born there.

The singers also and trumpeters shall he rehearse : all  
my fresh springs shall be in thee. Glory be, &c.

(i) *Antiphon.*

Very excellent things are spoken of thee, thou city of God.

(j) *Verse and  
Response.*

Thou crownest Him with glory and worship.  
*And makest Him to have dominion of the works of thy hands.*

*The Lord's Prayer  
(privately).*

Our Father, &c.

And lead us not into temptation,  
*But deliver us from evil.*

*Absolution 2.*

His pity and mercy succour us, who with the Father and  
the Holy Ghost, liveth and reigneth, world without end.  
*Amen.*

*Reader.*—Sir, be pleased to bless us.

*Benediction 4.*

*Minister.*—God, the Father Almighty, be favourable and  
gracious unto us. *Amen.*

*Lesson 4.* The Lord revealed His glory before certain chosen witnesses, and brightens that bodily form which He had in common with others with such splendour, that His face was like to the sun's blaze, and His raiment all one with the snow's whiteness. In which Transfiguration this was the chief design, to remove from the hearts of the disciples the scandal of the cross, that their faith might be proof against the lowliness of His voluntary passion, by the revelation of the excellence of His hidden dignity. And it was no less a providence, that hereby the hope of the Holy Church has a sure stay, by knowing how high a change is in store for the whole body of Christ, so that the honour first shown in the Head, might be shared in anticipation by the members.

Thou then, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

*Response 4.* *They shall be satisfied with the plenteousness of Thy house : and Thou shalt give them drink of Thy pleasures, as out of the river.*

For with Thee is the well of life, and in Thy light shall we see light.

*And Thou shalt give them drink of Thy pleasures, as out of the river.*

*Reader.*—Sir, be pleased to bless us.

*Benediction 5.* *Minister.*—Christ grant to us the joys of endless life. *Amen.*

*Lesson 5.* To confirm the Apostles and instruct them in all knowledge, that miracle contained a further lesson. For Moses and Elias, that is, the Law and the Prophets, appeared conversing with the Lord: that by the presence of five men might be most fully accomplished what is written, "By two or three witnesses, every word shall be established." What can be more stable, more firmly fixed, than that word, which was heralded by the trumpet, both of the Old and the New Testament, by the instruments of the ancient message in unison with the Evangelical teaching? For the pages of each covenant witness either to other, and the brightness of the present glory does but disclose Him manifest and clear, whom foregoing wonders had promised under the veil of Mysteries.

But thou then, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

*Response 5.* *Master, it is good to be here ; and let us make here*

*Part of the Service for August 6.*

*three tabernacles, one for Thee, one for Moses, and one for Elias.*

For he knew not what he said.

*And let us make here three tabernacles, one for Thee, one for Moses, and one for Elias.*

*Reader.*—Sir, be pleased to bless us.

*Benediction 6.*

*Minister.*—God kindle the fire of His love in our hearts.

*Lesson 6.*

*(Sermon continued.)*

Therefore stirred by these disclosures in outward tokens, the Apostle Peter, in scorn of things of the world, and in disgust of what was earthly, was carried away by a sort of transport into the longing after things eternal; and filled with joy at all that vision, he desired to dwell with Jesus there, where he was enjoying the manifestation of His glory. Wherefore he said, "Lord, it is good to be here; and, if Thou wilt, let us build here three tabernacles, one for Thee, one for Moses, and one for Elias." The Lord, however, answered not to this proposal, intimating, not that it was presumptuous, but that it was unbecoming to make it; seeing the world could not be saved but by Christ's death, and that in the Lord's pattern faith should find its calling, not to doubt of the promises of future blessedness, but withal to understand that amid the trials of this life we must ask for patience rather than for glory.

But Thou, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

*Response 6.*

*If the ministration of death, written and engraven in stones, was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not steadfastly behold the face of Moses for the glory of his countenance, which glory was to be done away: much more shall the ministration of the Spirit, which abideth, be glorious.*

For Christ was counted worthy of more glory than Moses, inasmuch as he who hath builded the house hath more honour than the house.

*Much more shall the ministration of the Spirit, which abideth, be glorious.*

Glory be to the Father, &c.

*Much more shall the ministration of the Spirit, which abideth, be glorious.*



## NOCTURN III.

(k) *Antiphon.*

Tabor and Hermon shall rejoice in Thy Name : Thou hast a mighty arm.

*Psalm 89. (7)*

My song shall be alway of the loving-kindness of the Lord : with my mouth will I ever be showing thy truth from one generation to another.

For I have said, Mercy shall be set up for ever: thy truth shalt thou establish in the heavens.

I have made a covenant with my chosen : I have sworn unto David my servant ;

Thy seed will I stablish for ever : and set up thy throne from one generation to another.

O Lord, the very heavens shall praise thy wondrous works : and thy truth in the congregation of the saints.

For who is he among the clouds : that shall be compared unto the Lord ?

And what is he among the gods : that shall be like unto the Lord ?

God is very greatly to be feared in the council of the saints : and to be had in reverence of all them that are round about him.

O Lord God of hosts, who is like unto thee : thy truth, most mighty Lord, is on every side.

Thou rullest the raging of the sea : thou stillest the waves thereof when they arise.

Thou hast subdued Egypt, and destroyed it: thou hast scattered thine enemies abroad with thy mighty arm.

The heavens are thine, the earth also is thine : thou hast laid the foundation of the round world, and all that therein is.

Thou hast made the north and the south : Tabor and Hermon shall rejoice in thy Name.

Thou hast a mighty arm : strong is thy hand, and high is thy right hand.

Righteousness and equity are the habitation of thy seat : mercy and truth shall go before thy face.

Blessed is the people, O Lord, that can rejoice in thee : they shall walk in the light of thy countenance.

Their delight shall be daily in thy Name : and in thy righteousness shall they make their boast.

For thou art the glory of their strength : and in thy loving kindness thou shalt lift up our horns.

For the Lord is our defence : the Holy One of Israel is our King.

Thou spakest sometime in visions unto thy saints, and saidst : I have laid help upon one that is mighty ; I have exalted one chosen out of the people.

I have found David my servant : with my holy oil have I anointed him.

My hand shall hold him fast : and my arm shall strengthen him.

The enemy shall not be able to do him violence : the son of wickedness shall not hurt him.

I will smite down his foes before his face : and plague them that hate him.

My truth also and my mercy shall be with him : and in my Name shall his horn be exalted.

I will set his dominion also in the sea : and his right hand in the floods.

He shall call me, Thou art my Father : my God, and my strong salvation.

And I will make him my first-born : higher than the kings of the earth.

My mercy will I keep for him for evermore : and my covenant shall stand fast with him.

His seed also will I make to endure for ever : and his throne as the days of heaven.

But if his children forsake my law : and walk not in my judgments ;

If they break my statutes, and keep not my commandments : I will visit their offences with the rod, and their sin with scourges.

Nevertheless my loving-kindness will I not utterly take from him : nor suffer my truth to fail.

My covenant will I not break, nor alter the thing that is gone out of my lips : I have sworn once by my holiness, that I will not fail David.

His seed shall endure for ever : and his seat is like as the sun before me.

He shall stand fast for evermore as the moon : and as the faithful witness in heaven.

But thou hast abhorred and forsaken thine Anointed : and art displeased at him.

Thou hast broken the covenant of thy servant : and cast his crown to the ground.

Thou hast overthrown all his hedges : and broken down his strong holds.

All they that go by spoil him: and he is become a reproach to his neighbours.

Thou hast set up the right hand of his enemies: and made all his adversaries to rejoice.

Thou hast taken away the edge of his sword: and givest him not victory in the battle.

Thou hast put out his glory: and cast his throne down to the ground.

The days of his youth hast thou shortened: and covered him with dishonour.

Lord, how long wilt thou hide thyself, for ever: and shall thy wrath burn like fire?

O remember how short my time is: wherefore hast thou made all men for nought?

What man is he that liveth, and shall not see death: and shall he deliver his soul from the hand of hell?

Lord, where are thy old loving-kindnesses: which thou swarest unto David in thy truth?

Remember, Lord, the rebuke that thy servants have: and how I do bear in my bosom the rebukes of many people?

Wherewith thine enemies have blasphemed thee, and slandered the footsteps of thine anointed: Praised be the Lord for evermore. Amen, and Amen.

(k) *Antiphon.*

Tabor and Hermon shall rejoice in Thy Name; Thou hast a mighty arm.

(l) *Antiphon.*

There is sprung up a light for the righteous, and joyful gladness for such as are true-hearted.

*Psalms 97. (8)*

The Lord is King, the earth may be glad thereof: yea, the multitudes of the isles may be glad thereof.

Clouds and darkness are round about him: righteousness and judgment are the habitation of his seat.

There shall go a fire before him: and burn up his enemies on every side.

His lightnings gave shine unto the world: the earth saw it, and was afraid.

The hills melted like wax at the presence of the Lord: at the presence of the Lord of the whole earth.

The heavens have declared his righteousness: and all the people have seen his glory.

Confounded be all they that worship carved images, and that delight in vain gods: worship him, all ye gods.

Sion heard of it, and rejoiced: and the daughters of Judah were glad, because of thy judgments, O Lord.

For thou, Lord, art higher than all that are in the earth: thou art exalted far above all gods.

O ye that love the Lord, see that ye hate the thing which is evil: the Lord preserveth the souls of his saints; he shall deliver them from the hand of the ungodly.

There is sprung up a light for the righteous: and joyful gladness for such as are true-hearted.

Rejoice in the Lord, ye righteous: and give thanks for a remembrance of his holiness.

(l) *Antiphon.*

There is sprung up a light for the righteous: and joyful gladness for such as are true-hearted.

(m) *Antiphon.*

*Psalm 104. (9)*

Praise the Lord, O my soul, O my God.

. . . thou art become exceeding glorious: thou art clothed with majesty and honour.

Thou deckest thyself with light as it were with a garment: and spreadest out the heavens like a curtain.

Who layeth the beams of his chambers in the waters: and maketh the clouds his chariot, and walketh upon the wings of the wind.

He maketh his angels spirits: and his ministers a flaming fire.

He laid the foundations of the earth: that it never should move at any time.

Thou coveredst it with the deep like as with a garment: the waters stand in the hills.

At thy rebuke they flee: at the voice of thy thunder they are afraid.

They go up as high as the hills, and down to the valleys beneath: even unto the place which thou hast appointed for them.

Thou hast set them their bounds, which they shall not pass: neither turn again to cover the earth.

He sendeth the springs into the rivers: which run among the hills.

All beasts of the field drink thereof: and the wild asses quench their thirst.

Beside them shall the fowls of the air have their habitation: and sing among the branches.

He watereth the hills from above: the earth is filled with the fruit of thy works.

He bringeth forth grass for the cattle: and green herb for the service of men;

That he may bring food out of the earth, and wine that maketh glad the heart of man: and oil to make him a cheerful countenance, and bread to strengthen man's heart.

The trees of the Lord also are full of sap: even the cedars of Libanus which he hath planted;

Wherein the birds make their nests : and the fir-trees are a dwelling for the stork.

The high hills are a refuge for the wild goats : and so are the stony rocks for the conies.

He appointed the moon for certain seasons : and the sun knoweth his going down.

Thou makest darkness that it may be night : wherein all the beasts of the forest do move.

The lions roaring after their prey : do seek their meat from God.

The sun ariseth, and they get them away together : and lay them down in their dens.

Man goeth forth to his work, and to his labour : until the evening.

O Lord, how manifold are thy works ; in wisdom hast thou made them all ; the earth is full of thy riches.

So is the great and wide sea also : wherein are things creeping innumerable, both small and great beasts.

There go the ships, and there is that Leviathan : whom thou hast made to take his pastime therein.

These wait all upon thee : that thou mayest give them meat in due season.

When thou givest it them they gather it : and when thou openest thy hand they are filled with good.

When thou hidest thy face they are troubled : when thou takest away their breath they die, and are turned again to their dust.

When thou lettest thy breath go forth they shall be made : and thou shalt renew the face of the earth.

The glorious Majesty of the Lord shall endure for ever : the Lord shall rejoice in his works.

The earth shall tremble at the look of him : if he do but touch the hills, they shall smoke.

I will sing unto the Lord as long as I live : I will praise my God while I have my being.

And so shall my words please him : my joy shall be in the Lord.

As for sinners, they shall be consumed out of the earth : and the ungodly shall come to an end : praise thou the Lord, O my soul, praise the Lord.

Praise the Lord, O my soul : O Lord my God.

*Antiphon.*

(n) *Verse and  
Response.*

His honour is great in thy salvation.

*Glory and great worship shalt Thou lay upon him.*

*The Lord's Prayer*  
(privately).

Our Father, &c.

And lead us not into temptation.

*But deliver us from evil.*

*Absolution 3.*

The Almighty and merciful Lord absolve us from the bonds of our sins. *Amen.*

*Reader.*—Sir, be pleased to bless us.

*Benediction 7.*

*Minister.*—The reading of the Gospel be to us salvation and defence. *Amen.*

*Lesson 7.*

*Matt. xvii. 1—5.*

At that time Jesus taketh Peter, James, and John his brother, and bringeth them up into an high mountain apart, And was transfigured before them : and his face did shine as the sun, and his raiment was white as the light.

And behold, there appeared unto them Moses and Elias talking with him.

Then answered Peter, and said unto Jesus, Lord, it is good for us to be here : if thou wilt, let us make here three tabernacles; one for thee, one for Moses, and one for Elias.

While he yet spake, behold a bright cloud overshadowed them : and behold a voice out of the cloud, which said, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased : hear ye him.

*Homily of St. John Chrysostom.*

Whereas the Lord spoke much concerning dangers, His own death, and the death and slaughter of His disciples, and enjoined on them many severe and difficult things, and all this, too, in the present life, and soon to come, while the gain was but in hope and expectation, (for instance, that they should save their life, if they lost it, that He will come in the glory of his Father and dispense rewards,) therefore, in order to certify them even by sight, and to show them what that glory was, with which he was to come, He shows it them as far as they could understand it in this present life, and unveils it, lest they should grieve at the thought of their own or their Lord's death, and chiefly Peter.

But thou, O Lord, have mercy on us.

*Thanks be to God.*

*Response 7.*

*God hath called us with a holy calling, according to His grace, which is now made manifest : by the glorious appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ.*

Who hath abolished death, and hath brought life and immortality to light.

*By the glorious appearing of our Saviour Jesus Christ.*

*Reader.*—Sir, be pleased to bless us.

*Benediction 8.*

*Minister.*—The help of God abide with us for ever. *Amen.*

*Lesson 8.*

And see what He does, after discoursing of His kingdom  
(*Homily continued.*) and of hell. For in that He said, “He who finds his life, shall lose it, and whoever will lose it for my sake, the same shall find it;” and in that He said, “He shall render to every one according to his works,” He has pointed out both His kingdom and hell. When then He had discoursed concerning both, of His kingdom He granted the sight to human eyes, but not of hell; since, needful as that might have been for the uninstructed and unready, yet upright and clearsighted men, as the Apostles, needed but to be confirmed by the better part. This part indeed it was far more fitting He should mention, yet He did not altogether pass over the other, placing at times the terribleness of hell as if before the eyes, as in His description of Lazarus, and of him who demanded back the hundred pence.

But thou, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

*Response.*

*God, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath shined in our hearts: to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ.*

Unto the godly there ariseth up light in the darkness; he is merciful, loving, and righteous.

*To give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ.*

Glory be to the Father, &c.

*To give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ.*

*Reader.*—Sir, be pleased to bless us.

*Benediction 9.*

*Minister.*—The King of Angels bring us through to the society of the inhabitants of heaven. *Amen.*

*Lesson 9.*

Think upon the greatness of mind in St. Matthew, who has  
(*Homily continued.*) not concealed the names of those who were preferred over the rest: which St. John also shows often, when he notes down the special praises of Peter so accurately and carefully. In this fellowship of Apostles there was no place for envy or for vain-glory. Therefore He took apart with him the chief ones of the Apostles. Why took He those only? for this reason, because they were superior to the rest. But why did He not do so at once, but after six days? lest His other disciples, or others generally should be troubled; for which reason neither did He name those whom He was alone to take with Him.

Thou, then, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

*Te Deum.*

*Vide p. 47.*

We praise thee, O God: we acknowledge thee to be the Lord.

All the earth doth worship thee: the Father everlasting.

To thee all Angels cry aloud: the Heavens, and all the Powers therein, &c.

---

## LAUDS.

O God, make speed to save me.

*O Lord, make haste to help me.*

Glory be, &c. As it was, &c. Amen. Hallelujah.

(o) *Antiphon.*

Jesus taketh Peter, James, and John his brother, and bringeth them up into an high mountain apart, and was transfigured before them.

*Psalm 93. (1)*

*Vide p. 38.*

The Lord is King, and hath put on glorious apparel: the Lord hath put on his apparel, and girded himself with strength.

He hath made the round world so sure: that it cannot be moved.

Ever since the world began, hath thy seat been prepared: thou art from everlasting, &c.

Glory be, &c.

(o) *Antiphon.*

Jesus taketh Peter, James, and John his brother, and bringeth them up into an high mountain apart, and was transfigured before them.

(p) *Antiphon.*

His face did shine as the sun, and His raiment was white as snow. Hallelujah.

*Psalm 100. (2)*

*Vide p. 48.*

(p) *Antiphon.*

His face did shine as the sun, and His raiment was white as snow. Hallelujah.

(q) *Antiphon.*

And behold there appeared unto them Moses and Elias, speaking with Jesus.

*Psalm 63 and 67 (3)*

*Vide p. 48.*

O God, thou art my God, &c.

God be merciful unto us, &c.

Glory be, &c.

(q) *Antiphon.*

And behold there appeared unto them Moses and Elias, speaking with Jesus.



(r) *Antiphon.* And Peter answered and said to Jesus, Lord, it is good to be here.

*Song of the Three* (4) O all ye works of the Lord, bless ye the Lord : praise him, *Children, vide p. 50.* and magnify him for ever.

O ye Angels of the Lord, bless ye the Lord : praise him, and magnify him for ever.

O ye Heavens, bless ye the Lord : praise him, and magnify him for ever, &c.

(r) *Antiphon.* And Peter answered and said to Jesus, Lord, it is good to be here.

(s) *Antiphon.* While he yet spake, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them.

*Psalm 148, 149 and* O praise ye the Lord of heaven, &c.

150. *Vide p. 52.* (5) O sing unto the Lord, &c.

O praise God, &c.

(s) *Antiphon.* While he yet spake, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them.

(t) *Text.* *Minister.*—We look for the Saviour, our Lord Jesus Christ, *Phil. iii. 20, 21.* who shall change our vile body, that it may be like unto His glorious body.

*Thanks be to God.*

(u) *Hymn.*  
Lux alma Jesu.]

Light of the anxious heart,  
Jesu, Thy suppliants cheer ;  
Bid thou the gloom of guilt depart,  
And shed Thy sweetness here.

Happy the man, whose breast  
Thou mak'st Thy residence ;  
From God's right hand a radiant guest,  
Unseen by fleshly sense.

Brightness of God above !  
Unfathomable grace !  
Vouchsafe a present fount of love,  
To cleanse Thy chosen place.

To Thee, whom children see,  
The Father ever blest,  
The Holy Spirit, One and Three,  
Be endless praise address. *Amen.*

(v) *Verse and* A crown of pure gold is on His forehead.  
*Response.* *With the sign of holiness, glory, and honour.*

(w) *Ant.* And lo, a voice from the cloud, saying, This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased. Hear ye Him. Hallelujah.

*Benedictus.*

Blessed be the Lord God of Israel, &amp;c.

Glory be, &amp;c.

*(w) Antiphon.*

And lo, a voice from the clouds, saying, This is My Beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased, Hear ye Him—  
Hallelujah.

The Lord be with you.

*And with thy spirit.*

Let us pray.

*(x) Collect.*

O God, who in the glorious transfiguration of Thine Only begotten hast sealed the treasure of the faith by the witness of the ancient fathers, and by the voice coming down in a cloud of light hast wonderfully shadowed forth the perfect adoption of Thy sons, mercifully grant, that we may be made fellow heirs and partners in the glory of our King, through the same our Lord. *Amen.*

&amp;c. &amp;c. &amp;c.

*(So on to the end of Lauds, in the Service for Sunday.)*

## § 5. PART OF THE SERVICE FOR AUGUST 10TH.

*The Feast of St. Laurence, Deacon and Martyr.*

[In order to understand parts of the following Service, it may be necessary for the reader to have some knowledge of St. Laurence's history; which may fitly be conveyed in the following translation from St. Ambrose's Offices, as found in the British Magazine, for January, 1834.

"We must not omit mention of the blessed Laurence, who, on the sight of Sextus, his Bishop, going to martyrdom, began to weep, not so much at his passion, as his own orphanhood. So he called out to him, 'Whither goest thou, O my father, without thy son? Whither can a Priest be hurrying without his Deacon? Never as yet didst thou offer sacrifice without an attendant. How have I displeased thee? Hast thou found me a degenerate son? Peter let Stephen suffer before him. Thou, too, O my Father, show thine own graces in my person, offer up to God him whom thou hast begotten, nor seize the crown of martyrdom without a noble company to answer your good thoughts concerning them.'

"The Prelate answered, 'Nay, son, I leave thee not, neither forsake thee; a fiercer combat is in store for thee. We, as the old, are allotted the lighter skirmish, but youth must bear off a more glorious triumph over tyranny. Thou wilt soon be called upon; cease thy tears; in three days thou shalt follow me. Ill would it seem for me who hold the third rank in the sacred ministry, to press into the first. I leave to thee the legacy of my own constancy.'

In consequence, three days after, Laurence was arrested, and, after other tortures, broiled to death on a gridiron. St. Ambrose adds, "when he was stretched upon the scorching gridiron, he did but say, 'The meat is done; turn it over, and eat it.'" This happened A.D. 258. Other particulars of his Martyrdom will be found in the Service itself. It may be added, by way of explaining an allusion in the above account, that "Priest," in the language of antiquity, means one who has the power of consecrating the Eucharist, *i. e.* Bishop and Presbyter, *Διευρηγός*, or as our Service seems sometimes to express it, *Minister*; and that the Deacon was the usual attendant on the Minister in the celebration.]

## FIRST VESPERS.

O God, make speed to save me.

*O Lord, make haste to help me.*

Glory be to the Father, &c.

As it was in the beginning, &c. Amen. Hallelujah.

(yy) *Antiphon.* Laurence entered on his Martyrdom, and confessed the name of the Lord Jesus Christ.

*Ps.* 110. p. 76. (1) The Lord said, &c.

(yy) *Antiphon.* Laurence entered on his Martyrdom, and confessed the name of the Lord Jesus Christ.

(zz) *Antiphon.* Laurence hath wrought a good work, who by the sign of the Cross gave sight to the blind.

*Ps.* 111. p. 76. (2) I will give thanks, &c.

(zz) *Antiphon.* Laurence hath wrought a good work, who by the sign of the Cross gave sight to the blind.

(aaa) *Antiphon.* My soul hangeth upon Thee, because my flesh is burned in the fire for Thee, O my God.

*Ps.* 112. p. 77. (3) Blessed is the man, &c.

(aaa) *Antiphon.* My soul hangeth upon Thee, because my flesh is burned in the fire for Thee, O my God.

(bbb) *Antiphon.* The Lord hath sent His Angel, and hath delivered me from the midst of the fire, and I am not tormented.

*Ps.* 113. p. 77. (4) Praise the Lord, ye servants, &c.

(bbb) *Antiphon.* The Lord hath sent his Angel, and hath delivered me from the midst of the fire, and I am not tormented.

(ccc) *Antiphon.* Blessed Laurence prayed, saying, I give Thee thanks, O Lord, because I have been found worthy to enter Thy gates.

*Psalms* 117. (5) O praise the Lord, all ye heathen: praise him, all ye nations.

For his merciful kindness is ever more and more towards us: and the truth of the Lord endureth for ever. Praise the Lord.

(ccc) *Antiphon.* Blessed Laurence prayed, saying, I give Thee thanks, O Lord, because I have been found worthy to enter Thy gates.

(ddd) *Text.*      *Minister.*—Brethren, he which soweth sparingly shall reap sparingly; and he which soweth bountifully shall reap bountifully.

*Thanks be to God.*

(eee) *Hymn.*

[Invicte martyr unicum. *It is remarkable that this Hymn, which is the only one of those here translated which savours of Romanism, is the only one, except one other, which is not known to be ancient. The rest are either Ambrosian or Gregorian, except one, which is by Prudentius. (Quicunque Christum.) Of the Hymn Lux Alma Jesu, the Translator cannot discover the Author.*]

Martyr of Christ, thy fight is won!  
Following the Father's only Son,  
O'er thy fall'n foes thou triumphest,  
In heavenly courts a risen guest.  
Use thou for us thy gift of prayer  
To cleanse thy brethren's sin,  
To sweeten earth's infectious air,  
And gain us peace within.

For ever broken is the chain  
That bound thy body's hallowed fane;  
As God hath given thee, break the tie  
Which links our hearts to vanity.  
To God the Father, God the Son,  
And God the Paraclete,  
Be praise, while circling ages run  
Beneath the Eternal's feet. *Amen.*

(fff)

*Verse and Response.*

Thou hast crowned Him with glory and worship.

*And makest Him to have dominion of the works of Thy hands.*

(ggg) *Antiphon.*

On the hot bars I denied Thee not, my God: and, when brought to the fire, I confessed Thee, O Christ. Thou hast proved my heart, and visited me in the night: thou hast tried me by fire, and hast found no wickedness in me.

*Magnificat.*

My soul doth magnify the Lord, &c.

*Antiphon.*

On the hot bars I denied thee not, &c.

The Lord be with you.

*And with thy spirit.*

Let us pray.

*Collect.*

Almighty God, who gavest to blessed Laurence to overcome the fire of his torture, grant to us, we beseech Thee, to extinguish the flames of our vices, through the Lord. *Amen.*

*(The Service ends as above in Vespers, p. 80.)*

## MATIN SERVICE.

O Lord, open Thou my lips:

*And my mouth shall show forth Thy praise.*

O God, make speed to save me.

*O Lord, make haste to help me.*

Glory be to the Father, &c.

As it was in the beginning, &c. Amen. Hallelujah.

(a) *Invitatory.*

Blessed Laurence, the Martyr of Christ, is crowned, and triumphs in heaven: come, let us worship.

Blessed Laurence, the Martyr of Christ, &c.

*Psalm 95.*

O come, let us sing unto the Lord: let us heartily rejoice in the strength of our salvation.

Let us come before his presence with thanksgiving: and show ourselves glad in him with psalms.

Blessed Laurence, the Martyr of Christ, is crowned, and triumphs in heaven: come, let us worship.

For the Lord is a great God: and a great King above all gods.

In his hand are all the corners of the earth: and the strength of the hills is his also.

Come, let us worship.

The sea is his, and he made it: and his hands prepared the dry land.

O come, let us worship and fall down: and kneel before the Lord our Maker.

For he is the Lord our God: and we are the people of his pasture, and the sheep of his hand.

Blessed Laurence, the Martyr of Christ, is crowned, and triumphs in heaven: come, let us worship.

To-day if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts: as in the provocation, and as in the day of temptation in the wilderness;

When your fathers tempted me: proved me, and saw my works.

Come, let us worship.

Forty years long was I grieved with this generation, and said: It is a people that do err in their hearts, for they have not known my ways;

Unto whom I swear in my wrath: that they should not enter into my rest.

Blessed Laurence, the Martyr of Christ, is crowned,  
and triumphs in heaven: come, let us worship.

Glory be to the Father, &c.

As it was in the beginning, &c. *Amen.*

Come, let us worship.

Blessed Laurence, the Martyr of Christ, is crowned, and triumphs in heaven: come, let us worship.

(b) *Hymn.*  
[Deus tuorum  
militum.]

O God, of Thy soldiers  
The Portion and Crown,  
Spare sinners, who hymn  
The praise of the Blest;  
Earth's bitter joys,  
Its lures and its frown,  
He weighed them and scorned,  
And so is at rest.

Thy Martyr he ran  
All valiantly o'er  
A highway of blood  
For the prize Thou hast given.  
We kneel at Thy feet,  
And meekly implore,  
Our pardon may wait  
On his triumph in heaven.

Honour and praise  
To the Father and Son  
And the Spirit be done  
Now and always. *Amen.*

## NOCTURN I.

(c) *Antiphon.*

Whither speedest thou without thy son, O my father?  
Whither, holy Priest, hurriest thou without attendant?

*Psalm 1. (1)*

Blessed is the man, that hath not walked in the counsel of the ungodly, nor stood in the way of sinners: and hath not sat in the seat of the scornful.

But his delight is in the law of the Lord: and in his law will he exercise himself day and night.

And he shall be like a tree planted by the water-side: that will bring forth his fruit in due season.

His leaf also shall not wither: and look, whatsoever he doeth, it shall prosper.

As for the ungodly, it is not so with them: but they are like the chaff, which the wind scattereth away from the face of the earth.

Therefore the ungodly shall not be able to stand in the judgment: neither the sinners in the congregation of the righteous.

But the Lord knoweth the way of the righteous: and the way of the ungodly shall perish. Glory be, &c.

(c) *Antiphon.*

Whither speedest thou, without thy son, O my father?  
Whither, holy Priest, hurriest thou without attendant?

(d) *Antiphon.*

Forsake me not, O holy father, for I have just laid out those treasures which thou gavest me in trust.

*Psalm 2. (2)*

Why do the heathen so furiously rage together: and why do the people imagine a vain thing?

The kings of the earth stand up, and the rulers take counsel together: against the Lord, and against his Anointed.

Let us break their bonds asunder: and cast away their cords from us.

He that dwelleth in heaven shall laugh them to scorn: the Lord shall have them in derision.

Then shall he speak unto them in his wrath: and vex them in his sore displeasure.

Yet have I set my King: upon my holy hill of Sion.

I will preach the law, whereof the Lord hath said unto me: Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee.

Desire of me, and I shall give thee the heathen for thine inheritance: and the utmost parts of the earth for thy possession.



Thou shalt bruise them with a rod of iron: and break them in pieces like a potter's vessel.

Be wise now therefore, O ye kings; be learned, ye that are judges of the earth.

Serve the Lord in fear: and rejoice unto him with reverence.

Kiss the Son, lest he be angry, and so ye perish from the right way: if his wrath be kindled, (yea, but a little) blessed are all they that put their trust in him. Glory be, &c.

(d) *Antiphon.*

Forsake me not, O holy father, for I have now laid out those treasures which thou gavest me in trust.

(e) *Antiphon.*

I desert thee not, O my son, neither do I forsake thee; but a higher conflict for the faith of Christ is in store for thee.

*Psalm 3. (3)*

Lord, how are they increased that trouble me: many are they that rise against me.

Many one there be that say of my soul: There is no help for him in his God.

But thou, O Lord, art my defender: thou art my worship, and the lifter up of my head.

I did call upon the Lord with my voice; and he heard me out of his holy hill.

I laid me down and slept, and rose up again: for the Lord sustained me.

I will not be afraid for ten thousands of the people: that have set themselves against me round about.

Up, Lord, and help me, O my God: for thou smitest all mine enemies upon the cheek-bone; thou hast broken the teeth of the ungodly.

Salvation belongeth unto the Lord: and thy blessing is upon thy people. Glory be, &c.

(e) *Antiphon.*

I desert thee not, O my son, neither do I forsake thee; but a higher conflict for the faith of Christ is in store for thee.

(f) *Verse and Response.*

Thou hast crowned him with glory and worship.  
And makest him to have dominion of the works of Thy hands.

*The Lord's Prayer*  
(privately.)

Our Father, &c.  
And lead us not into temptation,  
But deliver us from evil.

*Absolution 1.*

O Lord Jesus Christ, hearken unto the prayers of thy

servants, and have mercy upon us, who livest and reignest with the Father and Holy Ghost, world without end. *Amen.*

*Reader.*—Sir, be pleased to bless us.

*Benediction 1.*

*Minister.*—The Father everlasting bless us with a perpetual blessing. *Amen.*

*Lesson 1.*

*Ecclus. li. 1—5.*

I will thank thee, O Lord and King, and praise thee, O God my Saviour, I do give praise unto Thy name ;

For thou art my defender and helper, and hast preserved my body from destruction, and from the snare of the slanderous tongue, and from lips that forge lies, and hast been mine helper against mine adversaries :

And hast delivered me, according to the multitude of Thy mercies and greatness of Thy name, from the teeth of them that were ready to devour me, and out of the hands of such as sought after my life, and from the manifold afflictions which I had ;

From the choking of fire on every side, and from the midst of the fire which I kindled not.

From the depth of the belly of hell, from an unclean tongue, and from lying words, from an unjust king, and from an unrighteous tongue.

But thou, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

*Response 1.*

*Laurence, the Deacon, wrought a good work, who enlightened the blind by the sign of the Cross: and gave the treasures of the Church to the poor.*

He hath dispersed, he hath given to the poor, and his righteousness remaineth for ever.

*And he gave the treasures of the Church to the poor.*

*Reader.*—Sir, be pleased to bless us.

*Benediction 2.*

*Minister.*—The only begotten Son of God vouchsafe to bless us and help us. *Amen.*

*Lesson 2.*

*Ecclus. li. 6—9.*

My soul shall praise the Lord even unto death, my life was near to the hell beneath.

They compassed me on every side, and there was no man to help me: I looked for the succour of men, but there was none.

Then thought I upon thy mercy, O Lord, and upon Thy acts of old, how Thou deliverest such as wait for Thee, and savest them out of the hands of the enemies.

Then I lifted up my supplication from the earth, and prayed for deliverance from death.

But Thou, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

Response 2.

*Thanks be to God.*

*My child, be not afraid, for I am with thee, saith the Lord. When thou passest through the fire, thou shalt not be burned, neither shall the smell of fire pass upon thee.*

I will deliver thee from the bond of the wicked, and rescue thee from the hand of the mighty.

*When thou passest through the fire, thou shalt not be burned, neither shall the smell of fire pass upon thee.*

*Reader.*—Sir, be pleased to bless us.

Benediction 3.

*Minister.*—The grace of the Holy Spirit enlighten our thoughts and hearts. *Amen.*

Lesson 3.

I called upon the Lord, the Father of my Lord, that He *Ecclus. li. 10—12.* would not leave me in the days of my trouble, and in the time of the proud, when there was no help.

I will praise Thy name continually, and will sing praise with thanksgiving; and so my prayer was heard.

For thou savedst me from destruction, and deliveredst me from the evil time: therefore will I give thanks, and praise Thee, and bless Thy name, O Lord.

But Thou, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

Response 3.

*Thanks be to God.*

*They bound down his limbs upon the bars; but while they ministered live coals, the deacon of Christ laughs them to scorn. Blessed Laurence, Martyr of Christ, intercede for us.*

My night has no darkness, but all things grow clear in the light.

*Blessed Laurence, Martyr of Christ, intercede for us.*

Glory be to the Father, &c.

As it was in the beginning, &c.

*Blessed Laurence, Martyr of Christ, intercede for us.*

## NOCTURN II.

(g) *Antiphon.*

Blessed Laurence prayed saying, Lord Jesus Christ, God from God, have mercy on Thy servant.

*Psalm 4. (4)*

Hear me when I call, O God of my righteousness : thou hast set me at liberty when I was in trouble : have mercy upon me, and hearken unto my prayer.

O ye sons of men, how long will ye blaspheme mine honour : and have such pleasure in vanity, and seek after leasing ?

Know this also, that the Lord hath chosen to himself the man that is godly : when I call upon the Lord, he will hear me.

Stand in awe, and sin not : commune with your own heart and in your chamber, and be still.

Offer the sacrifice of righteousness : and put your trust in the Lord.

There be many that say : Who will show us any good ?

Lord, lift thou up : the light of thy countenance upon us.

Thou hast put gladness in my heart : since the time that their corn, and wine, and oil increased.

I will lay me down in peace. and take my rest : for it is thou, Lord, only, that makest me dwell in safety. Glory be, &c.

(g) *Antiphon.*

Blessed Laurence prayed saying, Lord Jesus Christ, God from God, have mercy on thy servant.

(h) *Antiphon.*

Romanus said to blessed Laurence, I see before thee a young man of fair countenance, hasten to baptize me.

*Psalm 5. (5)*

Ponder my words, O Lord : consider my meditation.

O hearken thou unto the voice of my calling, my King and my God : for unto thee will I make my prayer.

My voice shalt thou hear betimes, O Lord : early in the morning will I direct my prayer unto thee, and will look up.

For thou art the God that hast no pleasure in wickedness : neither shall any evil dwell with thee.

Such as be foolish shall not stand in thy sight : for thou hatest all them that work vanity.

Thou shalt destroy them that speak leasing : the Lord will abhor both the blood-thirsty and deceitful man.

But as for me, I will come into thine house, even upon the multitude of thy mercy : and in thy fear will I worship toward thy holy temple.

Lead me, O Lord, in thy righteousness, because of mine enemies: make thy way plain before my face.

For there is no faithfulness in his mouth: their inward parts are very wickedness.

Their throat is an open sepulchre: they flatter with their tongue.

Destroy thou them, O God: let them perish through their own imaginations: cast them out in the multitude of their ungodliness: for they have rebelled against thee.

And let all them that put their trust in thee rejoice; they shall ever be giving of thanks, because thou defendest them: they that love thy Name shall be joyful in thee.

For thou, Lord, wilt give thy blessing unto the righteous: and with thy favourable kindness wilt thou defend him as with a shield. Glory be, &c.

(h) *Antiphon.*

Romanus said to blessed Laurence, I see before thee a young man of fair countenance, hasten to baptize me.

(i) *Antiphon.*

Blessed Laurence answered, My night has no darkness, but all things grow clear in the light.

*Psalms 8. (6)*

O Lord, our Governor, how excellent is thy name in all the world: thou that hast set thy glory above the heavens!

Out of the mouth of very babes and sucklings hast thou ordained strength, because of thine enemies: that thou mightest still the enemy and the avenger.

For I will consider thy heavens, even the works of thy fingers: the moon and the stars which thou hast ordained.

What is man, that thou art mindful of him: and the Son of man that thou visitest him?

Thou madest him lower than the angels: to crown him with glory and worship.

Thou makest him to have dominion of the works of thy hands: and thou hast put all things in subjection under his feet;

All sheep and oxen: yea, and the beasts of the field;

The fowls of the air, and the fishes of the sea: and whatsoever walketh through the paths of the seas.

O Lord, our Governor: how excellent is thy name in all the world! Glory be, &c.

(i) *Antiphon.*

Blessed Laurence answered, My night has no darkness, but all things grow clear in the light.

(j) *Verse and Response.*

Lord, thou hast set upon his head,  
A crown of precious stones.

*The Lord's Prayer,* Our Father, &c.

(privately.)

And lead us not into temptation,

*But deliver us from evil.*

*Absolution 2.*

His pity and mercy help us, who with the Father and the Holy Spirit liveth and reigneth, world without end. *Amen.*

*Reader.*—Sir, be pleased to bless us.

*Benediction 4.*

*Minister.*—God the Father Almighty be favourable and gracious unto us. *Amen.*

*Lesson 4.*

(*Sermon of St. Leo,  
Pope.*)

While the fury of the heathen powers raged against the most chosen members of Christ, those chiefly who were in the order of the Ministry, Laurence the Deacon, having not only the dispensation of the Sacraments, but also of the Church's store, incited the impious persecutor, who promised himself a double price in one man, the gain of the sacred treasure and the ruin of him who surrendered it. Instigated therefore by this twofold flame, avarice and hatred of the truth, to rob him of his treasure and of Christ, he demands of the spotless Sacristan, those stores of the Church of which he was greedy. To whom he, most holy Deacon, by way of showing where they really were laid up, presented vast multitudes of Christian poor, on whose food and clothing he had expended wealth which could not be taken away, but was irrevocably his from the sanctity of his using.

But thou, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

*Response 4.*

*Whither speedest thou without thy son, O my father?*

*Whither hurriest thou, holy priest, without thy Deacon? Thou never yet hast offered sacrifice without attendant.*

What hath in me displeased thy fatherly love? in what have I come short? make trial of his fitness to whom thou hast entrusted the dispensation of the Lord's blood.

*Thou never yet hast offered sacrifice without attendant.*

*Reader.*—Sir, be pleased to bless us.

*Benediction 5.*

*Lesson 5.*

(*Sermon, con-  
tinued.*)

*Minister.*—Christ grant us the joys of eternal life. *Amen.*

Therefore the disappointed robber roars aloud, and kindling into hatred of that religion, which had introduced such an application of worldly goods, he attempts the plunder of another treasure-house, not of gold or silver, to rob it of that store which was of a more holy costliness. He bids Laurence renounce Christ, and prepares against the stubborn-

courage of that Deacon's heart, dreadful tortures; and when the first prove fruitless, he proceeds to fiercer. He tears and shreds his limbs with continued scourging, next he gives orders to broil them over the fire, so that, being stretched upon the red hot bars, first on one side, then on the other, the torment might be the greater, and the punishment more protracted.

But thou, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

*Response 5.*

*Forsake me not, O holy father, for I have already laid out my stores. I desert thee not, my son, neither do I forsake thee; but a fiercer conflict for the faith of Christ is in store for thee.*

We, as aged men, receive the onset of the skirmish, thou being young, will have to bear off a more glorious triumph over the persecutor; the Deacon shall follow his Bishop on the third day.

*I desert thee not, my son, neither do I forsake thee: but a fiercer conflict for the faith of Christ is in store for thee.*

But thou, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

*Reader.*—Sir, be pleased to bless us.

*Benediction 6.*

*Minister.*—God kindle the fire of His love in our hearts.

*Amen.*

*Lesson 6.*

Thou gainest nothing, thou avalest nothing, O savage cruelty! The mortal frame is gradually released from thy tortures. Laurence departs heavenward, and thy flames fail thee. The love of Christ surpassed the flame, and the fire which burned around him was duller than that which was kindled within him. O Persecutor, thou hast spent thy rage upon the Martyr; thou hast spent it, and added to his palm, while adding to his pain. For what part of thy device has not redounded to the conqueror's glory, when even the instruments of his suffering are converted into decorations of his triumph? Let us then rejoice, dearly beloved, with a spiritual joy, and glory in the Lord concerning the most blessed end of this famous man. God is wonderful in His Saints, in whom He hath ordained for us a sanction and an example, and hath so shown forth His glory through the whole world, that from the rising to the setting sun, among the refulgent lights of the Diaconate, Rome became as honoured in her Laurence, as Jerusalem in Stephen.

But thou, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

*Response 6.*

*Blessed Laurence cried out and said, My God I worship,  
Him alone I serve, and therefore I fear not your  
tortures.*

My night hath no darkness, but all things grow clear in  
the light.

*And therefore I fear not your tortures.*

Glory be to the Father, &c.

*And therefore I fear not your tortures.*

---

### NOCTURN III.

*(k) Antiphon.*

They bound down his limbs upon the bars: but while  
they laid underneath live coals, the Deacon of Christ laughs  
them to scorn.

*Psalm 15. (7)*

Lord, who shall dwell in thy tabernacle: or who shall rest  
upon thy holy hill?

Even he that leadeth an uncorrupt life: and doeth the  
thing which is right, and speaketh the truth from his heart.

He that hath used no deceit in his tongue, nor done evil  
to his neighbour: and hath not slandered his neighbour.

He that setteth not by himself, but is lowly in his own  
eyes: and maketh much of them that fear the Lord.

He that sweareth unto his neighbour, and disappointeth  
him not: though it were to his own hindrance.

He that hath not given his money upon usury: nor taken  
reward against the innocent.

Whoso doeth these things shall never fall. Glory be, &c.

*(k) Antiphon.*

They bound his limbs upon the bars; but while they laid  
underneath live coals, the Deacon of Christ laughs them to  
scorn.

*(l) Antiphon.*

Thou hast tried me with fire, and hast found no wicked-  
ness in me.

*Psalm 17. (8)*

Hear the right, O Lord, consider my complaint: and  
hearken unto my prayer, that goeth not out of feigned lips.

Let my sentence come forth from thy presence: and let  
thine eyes look upon the thing that is equal.

Thou hast proved and visited mine heart in the night-  
season; thou hast tried me, and shalt find no wickedness in  
me: for I am utterly purposed that my mouth shall not  
offend.

Because of men's works, that are done against the words  
of thy lips: I have kept me from the ways of the destroyer.



O hold thou up my goings in thy paths: that my footsteps slip not.

I have called upon thee, O God, for thou shalt hear me: incline thine ear to me, and hearken unto my words.

Show thy marvellous loving-kindness, thou that art the Saviour of them which put their trust in thee: from such as resist thy right hand.

Keep me as the apple of an eye: hide me under the shadow of thy wings.

From the ungodly that trouble me: mine enemies compass me round about to take away my soul.

They are inclosed in their own fat: and their mouth speaketh proud things.

They lie waiting in our way on every side: turning their eyes down to the ground;

Like as a lion that is greedy of his prey: and as it were a lion's whelp lurking in secret places.

Up, Lord, disappoint him, and cast him down: deliver my soul from the ungodly, which is a sword of thine;

From the men of thy hand, O Lord, from the men, I say, and from the evil world: which have their portion in this life, whose bellies thou fillest with thy hid treasure.

\* They have children at their desire: and leave the rest of their substance for their babes.

But as for me, I will behold thy presence in righteousness; and when I awake up after thy likeness, I shall be satisfied with it. Glory be, &c.

(l) *Antiphon.*

Thou hast tried me with fire, and hast found no wickedness in me.

(m) *Antiphon.*

When I was questioned, I confessed the Lord: when I am burned, I give thanks.

*Psalm 21. (9)*

The King shall rejoice in thy strength, O Lord: exceeding glad shall he be of thy salvation.

Thou hast given him his heart's desire: and hast not denied him the request of his lips.

For thou shalt prevent him with the blessings of goodness: and shalt set a crown of pure gold upon his head.

He asked life of thee, and thou gavest him a long life: even for ever and ever.

His honour is great in thy salvation: glory and great worship shalt thou lay upon him.

For thou shalt give him everlasting felicity: and make him glad with the joy of thy countenance.

And why? because the king putteth his trust in the Lord: and in the mercy of the Most Highest he shall not miscarry.

All thine enemies shall feel thy hand: thy right hand shall find out them that hate thee.

Thou shalt make them like a fiery oven in time of thy wrath: the Lord shall destroy them in his displeasure, and the fire shall consume them.

Their fruit shalt thou root out of the earth: and their seed from among the children of men.

For they intended mischief against thee; and imagined such a device as they are not able to perform.

Therefore shalt thou put them to flight: and the strings of thy bow shalt thou make ready against the face of them.

Be thou exalted, Lord, in thine own strength: so will we sing, and praise thy power. Glory be, &c.

(m) *Antiphon.*

When I was questioned, I confessed the Lord: when I am burned, I give thanks.

(n) *Verse and Response.*

*The Lord's Prayer*  
(privately.)

His honour is great in thy salvation.

*Glory and great worship shalt thou lay upon him.*

Our Father, &c.

And lead us not into temptation,

*But deliver us from evil.*

*Absolution 3.*

The Almighty and merciful Lord absolve us from the chain of our sins. *Amen.*

*Benediction 7.*

*Reader.*—Sir, be pleased to bless us.

*Minister.*—May the reading of the Gospel be to us salvation and a defence. *Amen.*

*Lesson 7.*

*John xii. 24, 25.*

At that time Jesus said to His disciples, Verily, verily, I say unto you, except a corn of wheat fall into the ground and die, it abideth alone; but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit. He that loveth his life, shall lose it, and he that hateth his life in this world, shall keep it unto life eternal.

*Homily of St. Augustine.*

The Lord Jesus Himself was the corn of wheat to be put to death, and to be multiplied; to be put to death by the unbelief of the Jews, to be multiplied by the belief of the Gentiles. Therefore, exhorting us to trace the footsteps of His passion, He says, "He that loveth his life shall lose it." Which may be understood in two ways. He that loveth, shall lose; that is, if thou lovest, thou shalt lose. If thou wouldest possess life in Christ, fear not that death for Christ

which is necessary. Or otherwise; He that loveth his life, shall lose it. Love it not lest thou really lose it; love it not here, lest thou lose it eternally.

But thou, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

*Response.*

*On the hot bars I denied Thee not, my God; and when brought to the fire, I confessed the Lord Jesus Christ.*

Thou hast proved, O Lord, and visited mine heart in the night-season.

*And when brought to the fire, I confessed the Lord Jesus Christ.*

*Reader.*—Sir, be pleased to bless us.

*Benediction 8.*

*Minister.*—May he whose festival we keep, intercede for us to the Lord. *Amen.*

*Lesson 8.*

*(Homily, continued.)*

The latter of these two seems rather to be the sense of the Gospel. For it goes on, "And he that hateth his life in this world, shall keep it unto life eternal." Therefore, as is said before, "He that loveth," that is, "in this world," he surely shall lose it; but "he who hateth," namely, "in this world," shall keep it unto life eternal. A great and marvellous saying, how it should be that a man should love his life to its destruction, and hate it to its preservation. If thou hast loved it perversely, then thou really hatest it; if thou hast hated rightly, then thou hast loved it. Blessed are they who so hate it while really saving it, as not to lose it while loving it.

But Thou, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

*Response 8.*

*O Hippolytus, if thou hast faith in the Lord Jesus Christ, I will both show thee treasures, and promise thee life everlasting.*

The blessed Laurence said to Hippolytus, If thou hast faith in the Lord Jesus Christ.

*I will both show thee treasures, and promise thee life everlasting.*

Glory be to the Father, &c.

As it was, &c.

*I will both show thee treasures, and promise thee life everlasting.*

*Reader.*—Sir, be pleased to bless us.

*Benediction 9.*

*Minister.*—The King of Angels lead us on to the fellowship of the inhabitants of heaven. *Amen.*

*Lesson 9.*  
*(Homily con-*  
*tinued.)*

But beware of the desire of self-murder stealing on thee, as if from the precept of hating thy life in this world. For hence certain evil-tempered and perverse men, and to themselves more cruel and wicked murderers, give themselves to the flames, drown themselves in the water, break their bones down precipices, and so perish. This is not from Christ's teaching, who even answered to the devil, suggesting to Him such a fall, "Get thee behind me, Satan; it is written, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God." But to Peter he said, signifying by what death he should glorify God, "When thou wast young, thou girdedst thyself and walkedst whither thou wouldest; but when thou art old, another shall gird thee, and shall carry thee whither thou wouldest not." Where he sufficiently intimated that he who follows Christ's footsteps must be put to death, not by himself but by another.

*Te Deum.*

We praise thee, O God: we acknowledge thee to be the Lord.

All the earth doth worship thee: the Father everlasting.

To thee all Angels cry aloud: the heavens and all the Powers therein, &c.

## § 6. MATIN SERVICE FOR MARCH 21.

*Bishop Ken's day.*

[FOR SOCIAL OR PRIVATE DEVOTION.]

O Lord, open Thou my lips.  
*And my mouth shall show forth Thy praise.*

O God, make speed to save me.

*O Lord make haste to help me.*

Glory be, &c.

As it was, &c. *Amen.*

Praise to Thee, O Lord, King of eternal glory.

(a) *Invitatory with Psalm 95.* O come, let us worship the Lord, the King of Confessors.  
 O come, let us sing unto the Lord: let us heartily rejoice, &c.  
*Vide pp. 17. & 26.*

(b) *Hymn.* In witness of his Lord,  
 In humble following of his Saviour dear,  
 This is the man to wield the unearthly sword,  
 Warring unharmed with sin and fear.

Who, Lord, uncalled by Thee,  
 Dare touch Thy Spouse, Thy very self below?  
 Or who dare count him summoned worthily,  
 Except Thine hand and seal he show?

Where can Thy seal be found,  
 But on the chosen seed from age to age,  
 By Thine anointed heralds duly crowned,  
 As kings and priests, Thy war to wage?

*Or this.*

Lord, and what shall this man do?  
 Ask'st thou, Christian, for thy friend?  
 If his love for Christ be true,  
 Christ hath told thee of his end:  
 This is he whom God approves,  
 This is he whom Jesus loves.

Ask not of Him more than this,  
 Leave it to his Saviour's breast,  
 Whether early called to bliss,  
 He in youth shall find his rest,  
 Or armed at his station wait,  
 Till his Lord be at the gate.

Gales from heaven, if so He will,  
 Sweeter melodies can wake,  
 On the lonely mountain rill,  
 Than the meeting waters make,  
 Who hath the Father and the Son,  
 May be left, but not alone.

---

### NOCTURN 1.

- (c) *Antiphon.* Blessed is the man whose delight is in the law of the Lord.
- Psalm 1. (1)* Blessed is the man that, &c.
- (c) *Antiphon.* Blessed is the man whose delight is in the law of the Lord, who hath not walked in the counsel of the ungodly, nor stood in the way of sinners, and hath not sat in the seat of the scornful.
- (d) *Antiphon.* Desire of me, and I will give thee the heathen for thine inheritance.
- Psalm 2. (2)* Why do the heathen, &c.
- (d) *Antiphon.* Desire of me, and I will give thee the heathen for thine inheritance, and the utmost parts of the earth for thy possession. Thou shalt bruise them with a rod of iron.
- (e) *Antiphon.* Thou, O Lord, art my worship.
- Psalm 3. (3)* Lord, how are they, &c.
- (e) *Antiphon.* Thou, O Lord, art my worship, and the lifter up of my head. I did call upon the Lord with my voice, and He heard me out of His holy hill.
- (f) *Verse and Response.* The Lord loved him and adorned him.  
*The Lord's Prayer, (privately.)* And clothed him in a robe of glory.  
 Our Father, &c.  
 And lead us not into temptation.  
 But deliver us from evil.

*Absolution 1.*

O Lord Jesus Christ, mercifully hear the supplications of Thy people, and grant us Thy peace all the days of our life, who livest and reignest with the Father and the Holy Ghost, world without end. *Amen.*

*Reader.*—Sir, be pleased to bless us.

*Benediction 1.*

*Minister.*—The Lord bless us and keep us. *Amen.*

*Lesson 1.*

1 *Tim.* iii. 1—6.

This is a true saying, If a man desire the office of a Bishop, he desireth a good work.

A Bishop then must be blameless, the husband of one wife, vigilant, sober, of good behaviour, given to hospitality, apt to teach ;

Not given to wine, no striker, not greedy of filthy lucre ; but patient, not a brawler, not covetous :

One that ruleth well his own house, having his children in subjection with all gravity ;

(For if a man know not how to rule his own house, how shall he take care of the Church of God ?)

Not a novice, lest being lifted up with pride he fall into the condemnation of the devil.

But thou, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

*Response 1.*

*Well done, thou good and faithful servant, thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things : enter thou into the joy of thy Lord.*

Lord, Thou deliveredst unto me five talents, behold, I have gained beside them five talents more.

*Enter thou into the joy of thy Lord.*

*Reader.*—Sir, be pleased to bless us.

*Benediction 2.*

*Minister.*—The Lord make His face to shine upon us, and be gracious unto us. *Amen.*

*Lesson 2.*

*Tit.* i. 7—11.

For a Bishop must be blameless, as the steward of God ; not self-willed, not soon angry, not given to wine, no striker, not given to filthy lucre ;

But a lover of hospitality, a lover of good men, sober, just, holy, temperate ;

Holding fast the faithful word as he hath been taught, that he may be able by sound doctrine both to exhort and to convince the gainsayers.

For there are many unruly and vain talkers and deceivers, specially they of the circumcision.

*Service for March 21.*

Whose mouth must be stopped, who subvert whole houses, teaching things which they ought not, for filthy lucre's sake.

But Thou, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

*Response 2.*

*Let Thy Thummim and Thy Urim be with Thy holy one, whom Thou didst prove at Massah, and with whom Thou didst strive at the waters of Meribah; they shall put incense before Thee, and whole burnt sacrifice upon Thine altar.*

Bless, Lord, his substance, and accept the work of his hands; smite through the loins of them that rise against him, and of them that hate him, that they rise not again:

*They shall put incense before Thee, and whole burnt sacrifice upon Thine altar.*

*Reader.*—Sir, be pleased to bless us.

*Benediction 3.*

*Minister.*—The Lord lift up His countenance upon us, and give us peace. *Amen.*

*Lesson 3.*

But speak thou the things which become sound doctrine.

*Tit. ii. 1—8.*

That the aged men be sober, grave, temperate, sound in faith, in charity, in patience.

The aged women likewise, that *they be* in behaviour as becometh holiness, not false accusers, not given to much wine, teachers of good things;

That they may teach the young women to be sober, to love their husbands, to love their children.

*To be* discreet, chaste, keepers at home, good, obedient to their own husbands, that the word of God be not blasphemed.

Young men likewise exhort to be sober-minded.

In all things showing thyself a pattern of good works; in doctrine *showing* uncorruptness, gravity, sincerity,

Sound speech, that cannot be condemned; that he that is of the contrary part may be ashamed, having no evil thing to say of you.

But Thou, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

*Response 3.*

*Let the saints be joyful with glory, let them rejoice in their beds, let the praises of God be in their mouths, and a two-edged sword in their hands: to bind their kings in chains, and their nobles with links of iron.*



That they may be avenged of them, as it is written, Such honour have all His saints.

*To bind their kings in chains, and their nobles with links of iron.*

Glory be, &c.

*To bind their kings in chains, and their nobles with links of iron.*

---

NOCTURN II.

- (g) *Antiphon.* Thou hast put gladness in my heart.  
*Psalm 4. (4)* Hear me when I call, &c.  
 (g) *Antiphon.* Thou hast put gladness in my heart, since the time that their corn, and wine, and oil increased.
- (h) *Antiphon.* Lead me, O Lord, in Thy righteousness.  
*Psalm 5. (5)* Ponder my words, &c.  
 (h) *Antiphon.* Lead me, O Lord, in Thy righteousness, because of mine enemies ; make Thy way plain before my face.
- (i) *Antiphon.* Out of the mouth of very babes and sucklings hast Thou ordained strength.  
*Psalm 8. (6)* O Lord, our Governor, &c.  
 (i) *Antiphon.* Out of the mouth of very babes and sucklings hast Thou ordained strength, because of Thine enemies, that Thou mightest still the enemy and the avenger.
- (j) *Verse and Response.* The Lord hath chosen Him as a priest unto Himself.  
*The Lord's Prayer,* *To sacrifice to Him the offering of praise,*  
 (privately.) Our Father, &c.  
 And lead us not into temptation,  
*But deliver us from evil.*
- Absolution 2.* Grant, O Lord, we beseech Thee, that we, who for our evil deeds do worthily deserve to be punished, by the comfort of Thy grace may mercifully be relieved, who livest and reignest with the Father and the Holy Ghost, ever one God, world without end. *Amen.*

*Reader.*—Sir, be pleased to bless us.

*Benediction 4.* *Minister.*—The love of God be upon us now and for ever.

*Lesson 4.* Thomas Ken, the son of an ancient family, was born at Berkhamstead, in Hertfordshire, in the year of grace, 1637,

and educated at Winton and Oxford, on the foundation of William of Wykeham, of famous memory, some time Bishop of Winton. Admitted into holy orders, he commenced a course of preaching at St. John's church, near Winton, where there was no preacher, with so blessed an effect, that many Anabaptists came over to the Church, and received baptism at his hands. That he might have time for these active duties, for study also, and for prayer, he restricted himself to but one sleep, rising at one or two of the clock in the morning, and sometimes sooner; which practice grew into a habit, and continued with him almost till his last illness. After a while he was made chaplain to the king's niece, the Princess of Orange, and passed over to Holland; where, after gaining her entire esteem for his most prudent behaviour and strict piety, he fell under the displeasure of the Prince, for interfering with one of his courtiers, who had seduced a young English gentlewoman, and was eventually obliged to leave the royal service.

But Thou, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

*Response 4.*

*Princes have persecuted me without a cause; but my heart standeth in awe of Thy word.*

I will speak of Thy testimonies also, even before kings, and will not be ashamed.

*But my heart standeth in awe of Thy word.*

*Reader.*—Sir, be pleased to bless us.

*Benediction 5.*

*Minister.*—The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be upon us, now and for ever. *Amen.*

*Lesson 5.*

Afterwards, when he was at Winton, in his Prebendal house, the king came thither with his court and mistress, whom his harbingers ordered to be lodged where Ken dwelt; but fearing God more than the face of the king, he refused her admittance, and obliged her to seek another lodging. And herein was seen how winning is holy severity, even with those who suffer for it; for a vacancy soon occurring in the see of Bath and Wells, the king himself, as his own especial act, named Ken to fill it; and he was consecrated thereunto on St. Paul's day, in the year 1684. Moreover, during the king's last illness, he was admitted to his chamber, and gave close attendance at his bedside for at least three whole days and nights, without any intermission, watching at proper intervals to suggest pious

thoughts and prayers; in which time one of the King's mistresses coming in, the Bishop prevailed with him to have her removed, and induced him further to send for the Queen, and ask her forgiveness for his long infidelity. And though he was not able to do all he had wished for his dying Sovereign, he did all that was allowed him.

But Thou, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

Response 5.

*Many shall be purified, and made white, and tried: and many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake.*

And they that be wise shall shine as the brightness of the firmament, and they that turn many to righteousness as the stars for ever and ever.

*And many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake.*

*Reader.*—Sir, be pleased to bless us.

Benediction 6.

*Minister.*—The fellowship of the Holy Ghost be with us now and for ever. *Amen.*

Lesson 6.

When the King's brother succeeded to the throne, Ken showed his loyalty to him indeed, but in word was free spoken. At length, when the King advanced in daring, the Bishop refusing to submit the conduct of the Church to his pleasure, and mindful of the rights of Christ's heritage, was in consequence committed, together with six of his brethren, to the Tower, on a charge of treason. Afterwards, when the King and his family were dethroned for arbitrary doings, he showed his true loyalty to him by refusing to acknowledge the new dynasty, and lost his station in the state rather than violate his allegiance. Being driven from his see by the civil power, he died in obscurity in the year 1710. Thus he gave to Cæsar the things that be Cæsar's, and to God the things that be God's. He was as meek, gentle, and affectionate in his bearing, as he was bold in the cause of the Gospel; and he took his troubles cheerfully and lightly. He possessed, in an especial way, that most excellent gift of charity. Once, when four thousand pounds fell to his see, he gave great part of it to the French Protestants then under persecution; and, when he was deprived, all his means, after the sale of his goods at his palace and elsewhere, was not more than seven hundred pounds. When state interests interfered with the prosperity of the Church in Scotland, he said, he conceived great hopes that God would have compassion on the English branch of it, if she did but compassionate and support her sister: and he gave

testimony concerning his belief shortly before his death, saying that he died in the Holy Catholic and Apostolic Faith, professed by the whole Church before the disunion of east and west. Such was Ken, a burning and shining light, bringing back primitive times.

But thou, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

Response 6.

*I said I have laboured in vain, I have spent my strength for nought and in vain; yet surely my judgment is with the Lord, and my work with my God.*

He hath made my mouth like a sharp sword: in the shadow of His hand hath He hid me.

*Surely my judgment is with the Lord, and my work with my God.*

Glory be, &c.

*Surely my judgment is with the Lord, and my work with my God.*

### NOCTURN III.

(k) *Antiphon.*

Lord, he shall dwell in Thy tabernacle.

*Psalm 15. (7)*

Lord, who shall dwell, &c.

(k) *Antiphon.*

Lord, he shall dwell in Thy tabernacle: he hath led an uncorrupt life, he hath done the thing that is right.

(l) *Antiphon.*

He asked life of Thee, and Thou gavest him a long life.

*Psalm 21. (8)*

The king shall rejoice, &c.

(l) *Antiphon.*

He asked life of Thee, and Thou gavest him a long life; glory and great worship shalt Thou lay upon him: Thou shalt set a crown of pure gold upon his head.

(m) *Antiphon.*

He shall receive the blessing from the Lord.

*Psalm 24. (9)*

The earth is the Lord's, &c.

(m) *Antiphon.*

He shall receive the blessing from the Lord, and righteousness from the God of his salvation; for this is the generation of them that seek him.

(n) *Verse and  
Response.*

The key of David will I lay upon his shoulder.

*He shall open and none shall shut, and He shall shut and none shall open.*

*The Lord's Prayer,  
(privately).*

Our Father, &c.

And lead us not into temptation.

*But deliver us from evil.*

*Absolution 3.*

Grant to us, merciful Lord, that, whereas we are sore let and hindered in running the race that is set before us, Thy bountiful grace and mercy may speedily help and deliver us, who livest and reignest with the Father and the Holy Ghost, ever one God, world without end. *Amen.*

*Reader.*—Sir, be pleased to bless us.

*Benediction 7.*

*Minister.*—The reading of the Gospel be to us salvation and a defence. *Amen.*

*Lesson 7.*

*Luke xxii. 25—30.*

And he said unto them, The Kings of the Gentiles exercise lordship over them: and they that exercise authority upon them are called benefactors.

But ye shall not be so: but he that is greatest among you, let him be as the younger: and he that is chief, as he that doth serve.

For whether *is* greater, he that sitteth at meat, or he that serveth? *is* not he that sitteth at meat? but I am among you as he that serveth.

Ye are they which have continued with me in my temptations.

And I appoint unto you a kingdom, as my Father hath appointed unto me;

That ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, and sit on thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

(From the works of  
Jeremy Taylor,  
Bishop.)

The nature of honour is to be a reward of virtue; and by how much greater the reward is, by so much the greater is the honour which is conferred. What honour shall it then be, when God shall give unto those who served Him, not only to tread upon the stars, to inhabit the palaces of honour, to be lords of the world, but, transcending all that is created, and finding nothing among his riches sufficient to reward them, shall give them His own Infinite Essence, to enjoy, as a recompence of their holiness, not for a day, but to all eternity. O happy labour of the victorious, and glorious combat of the just, against the vices and temptations of the world, when victory deserves so inestimable a crown! How great shall be that glory, when a just soul shall, in the presence of an infinite number of angels, sit in the same throne with Christ: and shall, by the just sentence of God, be praised for a conqueror over the world, and the invisible powers of hell! What can it desire more, than to be partaker of all those Divine goods, and even to accompany Christ in the same throne? How cheerfully do they bear

all afflictions for Christ, who with a lively faith and certain hope apprehend so sublime honours.

Thou, then, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

*Response 7.*

*Whosoever shall confess Me before men, him shall the Son of man also confess before the Angels of God.*

To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with Me in My throne.

*Him shall the Son of man also confess before the Angels of God.*

*Reader.*—Sir, be pleased to bless us.

*Benediction 8.*

*Minister.*—Grace be with all them that love our Lord Jesus Christ in sincerity. *Amen.*

*Lesson 8.*

If the applause of men, and the good opinion which they have from others, be esteemed an honour, what shall be the applause of heaven, and the good opinion not only of Saints and Angels, but of God himself, whose judgment cannot err? David took it for a great honour, that the daughter of his king was judged a reward of his valour; God surpasses this, and honours so much the service of His elect, that He pays their merits with no less a reward than Himself. Besides this, he who is most known, and is praised and celebrated for good and virtuous by the greatest multitude, is esteemed the most glorious and honourable person: but all this world is a solitude in respect of the citizens of heaven, where innumerable angels approve and praise the virtuous actions of the just; and they likewise are nothing: and all creatures, men, and angels, are but a solitary wilderness, in respect of the Creator. What man so glorious upon earth, whose worth and valour hath been known to all? Those who were born before him could not know him; but the just in heaven shall be known by all, past and to come, and by all the angels, and by the King of men and angels.

But thou, O Lord, have mercy upon us.

*Thanks be to God.*

*Response 8.*

*In the sight of the unwise they seemed to die, and their departure is taken for misery, but they are in peace.*

Though they be punished in the sight of men, yet is their hope full of immortality.

*But they are in peace.*

Glory be to the Father, &c.

*But they are in peace.*

*Reader*—Sir, be pleased to bless us.

*Benediction 9.*

*Minister.*—The Lord of peace Himself give you peace always by all means. *Amen.*

*Lesson 9.*

The honour of the just in heaven depends not, like that of the earth, upon accidents and reports, nor is exposed to dangers, or measured by the discourse of others; but in itself contains its own glory and dignity. The Romans erected statues unto those whom they intended to honour; because, being mortal, there should something remain after death, to make their persons and services, which they had done to the common weal, known to posterity; but in heaven there is no need of this artifice, because those, which are there honoured, are immortal, and shall have in themselves some character engraved, as an evident and clear token of their noble victories and achievements; what greater honour than to be friends of God, sons, heirs, and kings in the realm of heaven?

*Te Deum.*

We praise Thee, O God; we acknowledge Thee to be the Lord.

All the earth doth worship Thee: the Father everlasting.

To Thee all angels cry aloud: the heavens, and all the Powers therein, &c.

## § 7. SERVICE IN COMMEMORATION OF THE DEAD IN CHRIST.

[It is perhaps scarcely necessary to observe, that the complaints and supplications contained in the Psalms and Lessons selected, are introduced in memory of those temporal miseries, especially in sickness and dying, from which death opens an escape. On the subject of the state of the Dead, *vide* No. 5 of Mr. Dodsworth's recent Sermons.]

### FIRST VESPERS.

- Antiphon.* Behold, O Lord, how that I am Thy servant.  
*Psalm 116. (1)* I am well pleased, &c.  
*(Instead of Glory be, &c.)* With thee is the well of life.  
*Antiphon.* *And in Thy light they shall see light.*  
 Behold, O Lord, how that I am Thy servant; Thou hast broken my bonds in sunder.
- Antiphon.* My soul hath long dwelt among.  
*Psalm 120. (2)* When I was in trouble, &c.  
 With Thee, &c.  
*Antiphon.* *And in Thy, &c.*  
 My soul hath long dwelt among them that are enemies unto peace.
- Antiphon.* The Lord shall preserve Thee from all evil.  
*Psalm 121. (3)* I will lift up mine eyes, &c.  
 With Thee, &c.  
*Antiphon.* The Lord shall preserve Thee from all evil; yea, it is even He that shall keep Thy soul.
- Antiphon.* I look for the Lord.  
*Psalm 130. (4)* Out of the deep, &c.  
 With Thee, &c.  
*Antiphon.* I look for the Lord, my soul doth wait for Him.
- Antiphon.* Though I walk in the midst of trouble.  
*Psalm 138. (5)* I will give thanks unto Thee, &c.  
 With Thee, &c.  
*Antiphon.* Though I walk in the midst of trouble, yet shalt Thou refresh me.



(ff) *Verse and Response.* I heard a voice from heaven, saying unto me,  
*Blessed are the dead that die in the Lord.*  
 (ggg) *Ant.* All that the Father giveth Me.  
*Magnificat.* My soul doth magnify, &c. Glory be, &c.  
*Ant.* All that the Father giveth Me, shall come to Me; and him  
 that cometh to Me, I will in no wise cast out.

*The Lord's Prayer.* Our Father, &c.  
 (privately.) And lead us not into temptation,  
*But deliver us from evil.*

*Psalm 146.* Praise the Lord, O my soul, &c.  
 With Thee is the well of life.  
*And in Thy light shall they see light.*  
 In the valley of the shadow of death.  
*They shall fear no evil.*  
 Into Thy hands we commend their spirit.  
*For Thou hast redeemed them, O Lord, Thou God of truth.*  
 Lord hear our prayer.  
*And let our cry come unto Thee.*  
 The Lord be with you.  
*And with thy spirit.*

Let us pray.

O God, the Maker and Redeemer of all believers, grant to all Thy servants a merciful judgment at the last day, that they, in the face of all creatures, may then be acknowledged as Thy true children, through our Lord Jesus Christ. *Amen.*

O Almighty God, who hast knit together thine elect in one communion and fellowship in the mystical body of Thy Son Christ our Lord, grant us grace to follow Thy blessed Saints in all virtuous and godly living, that we may come to those unspeakable joys which Thou hast prepared for them that unfeignedly love Thee, through Jesus Christ our Lord. *Amen.*

Almighty God, with whom do live the spirits of them that depart hence in the Lord, and with whom the souls of the faithful, after they are delivered from the burden of the flesh, are in joy and felicity, we give Thee hearty thanks for that it pleased Thee, as on this day, to deliver our dear brother out of the miseries of this sinful world; beseeching Thee that it may please Thee of Thy gracious goodness, shortly to accomplish the number of Thine elect, and to hasten Thy kingdom, that we, with all those that are departed in the true faith of Thy holy name, may have our perfect consummation and bliss, both in body and soul, in Thy eternal and everlasting glory, through Jesus Christ our Lord. *Amen.*

O God, merciful and faithful, the aid of all that trust in Thee, keep safely under the shadow of thy wings ourselves, our relations, and friends, and all believers, even Thy whole Church, that we may enjoy Thy presence always, and increase in Thy Holy Spirit more and more, till we come to Thine everlasting kingdom, through our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. *Amen.*

With Thee is the well of life.

*And in Thy light shall they see light.*

May their souls rest in peace. *Amen.*

---

### MATINS.

O Lord, open Thou my lips.

*And my mouth shall show forth Thy praise.*

O God, make speed to save me.

*O Lord, make haste to help me.*

Glory be, &c. Amen. Hallelujah.

(a) *Invitatory.*

*Psalm 95.*

Let us worship the Lord of spirits: for all live unto Him.

O come, let us sing, &c.

With Thee is the well of life.

*And in Thy light shall they see light.*

---

### NOCTURN I.

*Antiphon.*

*Psalm 5.*

*Antiphon.*

In Thy fear will I worship.

Ponder my words, &c.

With Thee, &c.

In Thy fear will I worship towards Thy Holy Temple.

*Antiphon.*

*Psalm 6.*

*Antiphon.*

The Lord hath heard my petition.

O Lord, rebuke me not, &c.

With Thee, &c.

The Lord hath heard my petition, the Lord will receive my prayer.

- Antiphon.* We will rejoice.  
*Psalm 20.* The Lord hear thee in the day of trouble, &c.  
 With Thee, &c.  
*Antiphon.* We will rejoice in Thy salvation, and triumph in the name of the Lord our God.

(f) *Verse and Response.* In the valley of the shadow of death.  
*They shall fear no evil.*

*The Lord's Prayer* Our Father, &c.  
 (privately.)

*Lesson 1.* Lo, he goeth by me, and I see *him* not : he passeth on also, but I perceive him not.

*Job ix. 11—20.*

Behold, he taketh away, who can hinder him? who will say unto him, What doest thou?

*If* God will not withdraw his anger, the proud helpers do stoop under him.

How much less shall I answer him, *and* choose out my words *to reason* with him?

Whom, though I were righteous, *yet* would I not answer, *but* I would make supplication to my judge.

If I had called, and he had answered me; *yet* would I not believe that he had hearkened unto my voice.

For he breaketh me with a tempest, and multiplieth my wounds without cause.

He will not suffer me to take my breath, but filleth me with bitterness.

If *I speak* of strength, lo, *he is* strong : and if of judgment, who shall set me a time *to plead*?

If I justify myself, mine own mouth shall condemn me : *if I say I am* perfect, it shall also prove me perverse.

*Response 1.* *I know that my Redeemer liveth, and that he shall stand on the latter day upon the earth ; and in my flesh shall I see God.*

Whom I shall see for myself, and my eyes shall behold, and not another.

*And in my flesh shall I see God.*

*Lesson 2.* My soul is weary of my life ; I will leave my complaint upon myself ; I will speak in the bitterness of my soul.

*Job x. 1—7.*

I will say unto God, Do not condemn me ; show me wherefore thou contendest with me.

*Is it* good unto thee that thou shouldest oppress, that thou shouldest despise the work of thine hands, and shine upon the counsel of the wicked?

Hast thou eyes of flesh? or seest thou as man seeth?

*Are thy days as the days of man? are thy years as man's days?*

That thou enquirest after mine iniquity, and searchest after my sin?

Thou knowest that I am not wicked: and *there is none* that can deliver out of thine hand.

*Response 2.*

*I should utterly have fainted, but that I believe verily to see the goodness of the Lord in the land of the living.*

O tarry thou the Lord's leisure: be strong and He shall comfort thine heart, and put thou thy trust in the Lord.

*I believe verily to see the goodness of the Lord in the land of the living.*

*Lesson 3.*  
*Job x. 14--22.*

If I sin, then thou markest me, and thou wilt not acquit me from mine iniquity.

If I be wicked, woe unto me; and *if* I be righteous, *yet* will I not lift up my head. I *am* full of confusion; therefore see thou mine affliction;

For it increaseth. Thou huntest me as a fierce lion; and again thou showest thyself marvellous upon me.

Thou renewest thy witnesses against me, and increasest thine indignation upon me; changes and war *are* against me!

Wherefore then hast thou brought me forth out of the womb? Oh that I had given up the ghost, and no eye had seen me!

I should have been as though I had not been; I should have been carried from the womb to the grave.

*Are not my days few? cease then, and let me alone, that I may take comfort a little.*

Before I go *whence* I shall not return, *even* to the land of darkness and the shadow of death;

A land of darkness, as darkness *itself*; and of the shadow of death, without any order, and *where* the light *is* as darkness.

*Response 3.*

*The people that walked in darkness have seen a great light; they that dwell in the land of the shadow of death, upon them hath the light shined.*

Awake thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead, and Christ shall give thee light.

*They that dwell in the land of the shadow of death, upon them hath the light shined.*

With thee is the well of life,  
*And in thy light shall we see light.*

*They that dwell in the land of the shadow of death, upon  
 them hath the light shined.*

NOCTURN II.

- Antiphon.* He shall feed me.  
*Psalm 23. (4)* The Lord is my shepherd, &c.  
 With Thee, &c.  
*Antiphon.* He shall feed me in a green pasture.
- Antiphon.* Mine eyes are ever looking.  
*Psalm 25. (5)* Unto Thee, O Lord, will I lift up my soul.  
 With Thee, &c.  
*Antiphon.* Mine eyes are ever looking unto the Lord, for he shall  
 pluck my feet out of the net.
- Antiphon.* In the time of trouble.  
*Psalm 27. (6)* The Lord is my light, &c.  
 With Thee, &c.  
*Antiphon.* In the time of trouble He shall hide me in His taber-  
 nacle.
- (j) *Verse and* Let the Saints be joyful with glory.  
*Response.* *Let them rejoice in their beds.*  
*The Lord's Prayer,* Our Father, &c.  
 (*privately.*)  
*Lesson 4.* Only do not two *things* unto me: then will I not hide my-  
*Job xiii. 20—23.* self from thee.  
 Withdraw thine hand far from me: and let not thy dread  
 make me afraid.  
 Then call thou, and I will answer: or let me speak, and  
 answer thou me.  
 How many *are* mine iniquities and sins? make me to  
 know my transgression and my sin.  
 Wherefore hidest thou thy face, and holdest me for thine  
 enemy?  
 Wilt thou break a leaf driven to and fro? and wilt thou  
 pursue the dry stubble?  
 For thou writest bitter things against me, and makest  
 me to possess the iniquities of my youth.

Thou puttest my feet also in the stocks, and lookest narrowly unto all my paths; thou settest a print upon the heels of my feet.

And he, as a rotten thing, consumeth, as a garment that is moth-eaten.

*Response 4.*

*Comfort us again now after the time that thou hast plagued us, and for the years wherein we have suffered adversity.*

Show Thy servants Thy work, and their children Thy glory.

*For the years wherein we have suffered adversity.*

*Lesson 5.*  
*Job xvi. 7—22.*

But now he hath made me weary: thou hast made desolate all my company.

And thou hast filled me with wrinkles, *which* is a witness *against me*: and my leanness rising up in me, beareth witness to my face.

He teareth *me* in his wrath, who hateth *me*: he gnasheth upon me with his teeth; mine enemy sharpeneth his eyes upon me.

They have gaped upon me with their mouth, they have smitten me upon the cheek reproachfully, they have gathered themselves together against me.

God hath delivered me to the ungodly, and turned me over into the hands of the wicked.

I was at ease, but he hath broken me asunder: he hath also taken *me* by my neck, and shaken me to pieces, and set me up for his mark.

His archers compass me round about, he cleaveth my reins asunder, and doth not spare; he poureth out my gall upon the ground.

He breaketh me with breach upon breach, he runneth upon me like a giant.

I have sewed sackcloth upon my skin, and defiled my horn in the dust.

My face is foul with weeping, and on my eye-lids *is* the shadow of death;

Not for *any* injustice in mine hands: also my prayer *is* pure.

O earth, cover thou not my blood, and let my cry have no place.

Also, now, behold, my witness *is* in heaven, and my record *is* on high.

My friends scorn me: but *mine* eye poureth out *tears* unto God.

Oh that one might plead for a man with God, as a man  
*pleadeth* for his neighbour!

When a few years are come, then I shall go the way  
*whence* I shall not return.

Response 5.

*My God hath sent his Angel, and hath shut the lions'  
mouths that they have not hurt me.*

Forasmuch as before Him innocency was found in me;  
*He hath shut the lions' mouths that they have not hurt me.*

Lesson 6.

Job xiv. 1—10.

Man *that is* born of a woman *is* of few days, and full of  
trouble.

He cometh forth like a flower, and is cut down; he  
fleeth also as a shadow, and continueth not.

And dost thou open thine eyes upon such an one, and  
bringest me into judgment with thee.

Who can bring a clean thing out of an unclean? not  
one.

Seeing his days *are* determined, the number of his months  
*are* with thee, thou hast appointed his bounds that he cannot  
pass.

Turn from him that he may rest, till he shall accomplish,  
as an hireling, his day.

For there is hope of a tree, if it be cut down, that it will  
sprout again, and that the tender branch thereof will not  
cease.

Though the root thereof wax old in the earth, and the  
stock thereof die in the ground;

*Yet* through the scent of water it will bud, and bring  
forth boughs like a plant.

But man dieth, and wasteth away: yea, man giveth up  
the ghost, and where *is* he?

Response 6.

*Thy sun shall no more go down, neither shall thy moon  
withdraw itself, for the Lord shall be thine everlasting  
light.*

And the days of thy mourning shall be ended.

*For the Lord shall be thine everlasting light.*

With thee is the well of life, &c.

*For the Lord shall be thine everlasting light.*

## NOCTURN III.

- Antiphon.* He brought me out.  
*Psalm 40. (7)* I waited patiently, &c.—With Thee, &c.  
*Antiphon.* He brought me out of the horrible pit, out of the mire and clay.
- Antiphon.* Heal my soul.  
*Psalm 41. (8)* Blessed is he, &c.—With Thee, &c.  
*Antiphon.* Heal my soul, for I have sinned against Thee.  
*Antiphon.* My soul is athirst.  
*Psalm 42. (9)* Like as the hart, &c.—With Thee, &c.  
*Antiphon.* My soul is athirst for God, yea, even for the living God; when shall I come to appear before the presence of God?
- (n) *Verse and Response.* O deliver not the soul of Thy turtledove unto the multitude of the enemies.  
*And forget not the congregation of the poor for ever.*
- The Lord's Prayer* Our Father, &c.  
*(privately.)*
- Lesson 7.* My days are passed, my purposes are broken off, *even*  
*Job xvii. 11—16.* the thoughts of my heart.  
 They change the night into day: the light *is* short because of darkness.  
 If I wait, the grave *is* mine house: I have made my bed in the darkness.  
 I have said to corruption, Thou *art* my father: to the worm, *Thou art* my mother and my sister.  
 And where *is* now my hope? as for my hope, who shall see it?  
 They shall go down to the bars of the pit, when *our* rest together *is* in the dust.
- Response 7.* *Thy dead men shall live, together with my dead body shall they arise.*  
 Awake and sing, ye that dwell in dust, for thy dew *is* as the dew of herbs, and the earth shall cast out the dead.  
*Together with my dead body shall they come.*
- Lesson 8.* My bone cleaveth to my skin and to my flesh, and I am  
*Job xix. 20—27.* escaped with the skin of my teeth.  
 Have pity upon me, have pity upon me, O ye my friends; for God hath touched me.  
 Why do ye persecute me as God, and are not satisfied with my flesh?



Oh that my words were now written, oh that they were printed in a book !

That they were graven with an iron pen and lead, in the rock for ever !

For I know *that* my Redeemer liveth, and *that* he shall stand at the latter *day* upon the earth :

And *though* after my skin *worms* destroy this *body*, yet in my flesh shall I see God :

Whom I shall see for myself, and mine eyes shall behold, and not another ; *though* my reins be consumed within me.

*Response 8.*

*If Thou, Lord, wilt be extreme to mark what is done amiss, O Lord, who may abide it ? but there is mercy with Thee,*

Wash me throughly from my wickedness, and cleanse me from my sin.

*But there is mercy with Thee.*

*Lesson 9.*

*Jonah ii. 2—10.*

I cried by reason of mine affliction unto the LORD, and he heard me ; out of the belly of hell cried I, *and* thou hearest my voice.

For thou hadst cast me into the deep, in the midst of the seas ; and the floods compassed me about : all thy billows and thy waves passed over me.

Then I said, I am cast out of thy sight ; yet I will look again toward thy holy temple.

The waters compassed me about, *even* to the soul ; the depth closed me round about, the weeds were wrapt about my head.

I went down to the bottoms of the mountains : the earth with her bars *was* about me for ever : yet hast thou brought up my life from corruption, O LORD my God.

When my soul fainted within me, I remembered the LORD, and my prayer came in unto thee, into thine holy temple.

They that observe lying vanities, forsake their own mercy.

But I will sacrifice unto thee with the voice of thanksgiving ; I will pay *that* that I have vowed : salvation *is* of the LORD.

And the LORD spake unto the fish, and it vomited out Jonah upon the dry land.

*Response 9.*

*I am the Resurrection and the Life, he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live.*

And whosoever liveth and believeth in Me shall never die.

*Though he were dead, yet shall he live.*

With Thee is the well of life, &c.  
*Though he were dead, yet shall he live.*

---

LAUDS.

*Antiphon.*                      Cast me not away.  
*Psalm 51. (1)*                Have mercy upon me, &c.    With Thee, &c.  
*Antiphon.*                      Cast me not away from thy presence, and take not Thy  
 Holy Spirit from me.

*Antiphon.*                      Have I not remembered Thee ?  
*Psalm 63. (2)*                O God, Thou art my God, &c.    With Thee, &c.  
*Antiphon.*                      Have I not remembered Thee in my bed, and thought  
 upon Thee when I was waking ?

*Antiphon.*                      I am like a green olive tree.  
*Psalm 52. (3)*                O God, thou art my God, &c.    With Thee, &c.  
 I am like a green olive tree in the house of God ; my  
 trust is in the tender mercy of God for ever and ever.

*Antiphon.*                      The living, the living, he shall praise Thee.  
*Song of Ezekias (4)*    I said, in the cutting off of my days I shall go to the gates  
*Is. xxxviii. 10—20.* of the grave : I am deprived of the residue of my years, &c.

I said, I shall not see the LORD, *even* the LORD in the  
 land of the living : I shall behold man no more with the  
 inhabitants of the world.

Mine age is departed, and is removed from me as a shep-  
 herd's tent : I have cut off like a weaver my life : he will  
 cut me off with pining sickness : from day *even* to night wilt  
 thou make an end of me.

I reckoned till morning, *that* as a lion so will he break  
 all my bones : from day *even* to night wilt thou make an  
 end of me.

Like a crane *or* a swallow, so did I chatter : I did mourn  
 as a dove ; mine eyes fail *with looking* upward : O LORD, I  
 am oppressed ; undertake for me.

What shall I say ? he hath both spoken unto me, and  
 himself hath done *it* : I shall go softly all my years in the  
 bitterness of my soul.

O LORD, by these *things men* live, and in all these *things*  
*is* the life of my spirit : so wilt thou recover me, and make  
 me to live.

Behold, for peace I had great bitterness : but thou hast in love to my soul *delivered* it from the pit of corruption : for thou hast cast all my sins behind thy back.

For the grave cannot praise thee, death can *not* celebrate thee : they that go down into the pit cannot hope for thy truth.

The living, the living, he shall praise thee, as I *do* this day : the father to the children shall make known thy truth.

The LORD *was ready* to save me : therefore we will sing my songs to the stringed instruments all the days of our life, in the house of the LORD. With Thee, &c.

*Antiphon.*

The living, the living, he shall praise Thee, as I do this day.

*Antiphon.*

Let every thing that hath breath.

Ps. 148, 149, &  
150. (5)

O praise the Lord of heaven.  
With Thee, &c.

*Antiphon.*

Let every thing that hath breath praise the Lord.

(v) *Verse and  
Response.*

I heard a voice from heaven, saying unto me,  
*Blessed are they that die in the Lord.*

(w) *Antiphon.  
Benedictus.*

I am the Resurrection and the life.  
Blessed be the Lord God of Israel, &c.  
With Thee, &c.

*Antiphon.*

I am the Resurrection and the life ; he that believeth in Me, though he were dead, yet shall he live, and whosoever liveth and believeth in Me, shall never die.

*The Lord's Prayer  
(privately.)*

Our Father, &c.

*Psalm 126.*

When the Lord turned again, &c.

*The Service terminates with the Collects and Sentences used at Vespers, p. 147, 148.*

With Thee is the well, &c.

May their souls rest in peace. *Amen.*

## § 8. SERVICE FOR THE SUNDAYS IN ADVENT.

---

[Sections 2 and 3 form the respective bases to this and the following section, the letters and numbers marking the substitutions: the Hymns at Matins, Lauds, and Vespers are the only portion of the Services not given. Christmas Day is here supposed to fall on a Sunday. The Service for St. Thomas's necessarily affects the Lauds and dependent Hours on the 21st: with this exception no notice is taken of Festivals, which materially alter the Advent Services as actually performed in the Latin Church. It is instructive to compare the Sunday Services as they here stand, with ours, which are formed from them.]

---

### MATINS.

O Lord, open, &c.

*And our mouth, &c.*

O God, make speed, &c.

*O Lord, make haste, &c.*

Glory be, &c. Amen. Hallelujah.

- (a) *Invitatory.*      *Sundays 1 & 2.* O come, let us worship: the Lord our King is coming.  
                              *Sundays 3 & 4.* O come, let us worship: the Lord is now at hand.
- (b) *Hymn.*              Verbum supernum prodiens, &c.
- 

### NOCTURN I.

- (c) *Antiphon.*        Behold, the mighty King: shall come with great power to save the nations. Hallelujah.
- (d) *Antiphon.*        Strengthen ye: the weak hands, and confirm the feeble knees; say to them of fearful heart, Behold your God will come and save you. Hallelujah.
- (e) *Antiphon.*        Be strong: fear not, behold your God will come with vengeance, even God with a recompense: He will come and save you.

(f) *Verse and Response.*

Out of Sion hath God appeared  
In perfect beauty.

SUNDAY I.

*Lesson 1.*  
*Isa. i. 1—3.*

The vision of Isaiah the son of Amoz, which he saw concerning Judah and Jerusalem in the days of Uzziah, Jotham, Ahaz, and Hezekiah, kings of Judah.

Hear, O heavens, and give ear, O earth: for the Lord hath spoken, I have nourished and brought up children, and they have rebelled against me.

The ox knoweth his owner, and the ass his master's crib: *but* Israel doth not know, my people doth not consider.

*Response 1.*

*I look afar off, and behold, I see the power of God coming, and a cloud covering the whole earth: Go ye forth to meet Him, and say: Tell us, whether Thou be He: who shall rule over the people Israel.*

All ye children of the earth and sons of men, the rich and the poor together.

*Go ye forth to meet Him, and say: Tell us, whether Thou be He: who shall rule over the people Israel.*

Hear, O Thou Shepherd of Israel, Thou that leadest Joseph like a sheep.

*Tell us, whether Thou be He: who shall rule over the people Israel.*

Lift up your heads, O ye gates, and be ye lift up, ye everlasting doors, and the King of glory shall come in.

*Who shall rule over the people Israel.*

Glory be to the Father, &c.

*I look afar off, and behold, I see the power of God, &c.*

*Lesson 2.*  
*Isa. i. 4—6.*

Ah sinful nation, a people laden with iniquity, a seed of evil doers, children that are corrupters: they have forsaken the LORD, they have provoked the Holy One of Israel unto anger, they are gone away backward.

Why should ye be stricken any more? ye will revolt more and more: the whole head is sick, and the whole heart faint.

From the sole of the foot even unto the head *there is* no soundness in it; *but* wounds, and bruises, and putrifying sores: they have not been closed, neither bound up, neither mollified with ointment.

*Response 2.*

*I saw in the night visions, and behold, One like unto the Son of man come with the clouds of heaven, and there was given him dominion, and glory, and a kingdom: that all people, nations, and languages should serve Him.*

His dominion is an everlasting dominion, which shall not pass away, and His kingdom that which shall not be destroyed.

*That all people, nations, &c.*

*Lesson 3.**Isa. i. 7—9.*

Your country *is* desolate, your cities *are* burned with fire: your land, strangers devour it in your presence, and *it is* desolate, as overthrown by strangers.

And the daughter of Zion is left as a cottage in a vineyard, as a lodge in a garden of cucumbers, as a besieged city.

Except the LORD of hosts had left unto us a very small remnant, we should have been as Sodom, *and* we should have been like unto Gomorrah.

*Response 3.*

*The angel Gabriel was sent to Mary, a virgin espoused to Joseph, announcing to her the Word, and the virgin was troubled at the light: Fear not, Mary, thou hast found favour with the Lord, and behold, thou shalt conceive and bring forth a son, and He shall be called the Son of the Highest.*

The Lord God shall give unto Him the Throne of His father David, and He shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever.

*Behold, thou shalt conceive, &c.*

Glory be to the Father, &c.

*Behold, thou shalt conceive, &c.*

## SUNDAY 2.

*Lesson 1.**Isa. xi. 1—4.*

And there shall come forth a rod out of the stem of Jesse, and a Branch shall grow out of his roots:

And the Spirit of the Lord shall rest upon him, the spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and might, the spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the LORD;

And shall make him of quick understanding in the fear of the LORD: and he shall not judge after the sight of his eyes, neither reprove after the hearing of his ears:

But with righteousness shall he judge the poor, and reprove with equity for the meek of the earth: and he shall smite the earth with the rod of his mouth, and with the breath of his lips shall he slay the wicked.

Response.

*O Jerusalem, thy salvation shall come quickly : wherefore art thou consumed with grief ? is there any counsellor in thee ? because sorrow hath changed thee :*

*I will save thee and deliver thee : fear not.*

For I am the Lord thy God ; the Holy One of Israel, thy Redeemer.

*I will save thee and deliver thee : fear not.*

Lesson 2.

Is. xi. 4—7.

And he shall smite the earth with the rod of his mouth, and with the breath of his lips shall he slay the wicked.

And righteousness shall be the girdle of his loins, and faithfulness the girdle of his reins.

The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid ; and the calf and the young lion and the fatling together ; and a little child shall lead them.

And the cow and the bear shall feed ; their young ones shall lie down together : and the lion shall eat straw like the ox.

Response 2.

*The Lord, my God, shall come, and all the saints with Thee, and in that day there shall be great light : and it shall be in that day that living waters shall go out from Jerusalem, and the Lord shall be king for ever : over all the earth.*

Behold, the Lord shall come with power, and His kingdom shall be in His hand, and dominion and sovereignty,

*Over all the earth.*

Lesson 3.

Is. xi. 8—10.

And the sucking child shall play on the hole of the asp, and the weaned child shall put his hand on the cockatrice' den.

They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain : for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the LORD, as the waters cover the sea.

And in that day there shall be a root of Jesse, which shall stand for an ensign of the people ; to it shall the Gentiles seek : and his rest shall be glorious.

Response 3.

*City of Jerusalem, weep thou not, for the Lord hath sorrowed for thee : and He shall take from thee all tribulation.*

Behold, the Lord shall come in strength, and his arm shall rule.

*And He shall take, &c.*

Glory be to the Father, &c.

*And He shall take, &c.*

(go on (g) )

## SUNDAY 3.

## Lesson 1.

*Is. xxvi. 1—6.*

In that day shall this song be sung in the land of Judah ; We have a strong city ; salvation will *God* appoint for walls and bulwarks.

Open ye the gates, that the righteous nation which keepeth the truth may enter in.

Thou wilt keep *him* in perfect peace, *whose* mind *is* stayed on *thee* : because he trusteth in thee.

Trust ye in the LORD for ever : for in the LORD JEHOVAH *is* everlasting strength.

For he bringeth down them that dwell on high : the lofty city, he layeth it low ; he layeth it low, *even* to the ground ; he bringeth it *even* to the dust.

The foot shall tread it down, *even* the feet of the poor, and the steps of the needy.

## Response 1.

*Behold, the Lord shall appear on a white cloud : and with Him the thousands of His saints ; and he shall have written on His garment and on His thigh, King of kings, and Lord of lords.*

He shall appear in the end and shall not lie : if He tarry, wait for Him ; for He shall surely come :

*And with Him the thousands, &c.*

## Lesson 2.

*Is. xxvi. 7—10.*

The way of the just *is* uprightness ; thou, most upright, dost weigh the path of the just.

Yea, in the way of thy judgments, O LORD, have we waited for thee : the desire of *our* soul *is* to thy name, and to the remembrance of thee.

With my soul have I desired thee in the night ; yea, with my spirit within me will I seek thee early : for when thy judgments *are* in the earth, the inhabitants of the world will learn righteousness.

Let favour be showed to the wicked, *yet* will he not learn righteousness : in the land of uprightness will he deal unjustly, and will not behold the majesty of the LORD.

## Response 2.

*O Bethlehem, city of the Most High God, out of thee shall go forth the Ruler of Israel, whose goings forth have been from everlasting, and He shall be great in the midst of the whole earth : and there shall be peace in our land, when He shall come.*

He shall speak peace to the Gentiles, and His dominion shall be from sea to sea.

*And there shall be peace, &c.*

## Lesson 3.

*Is. xxvi. 11—14.*

LORD, when thy hand is lifted up, they will not see : *but* they shall see, and be ashamed for *their* envy at the people ; yea, the fire of thine enemies shall devour them.



LORD, thou wilt ordain peace for us : for thou also hast wrought all our works in us.

O LORD our God, *other* lords beside thee have had dominion over us : *but* by thee only will we make mention of thy name.

*They are* dead, they shall not live ; *they are* deceased, they shall not rise : therefore hast thou visited and destroyed them, and made all their memory to perish.

Response 3.

*He that shall come will come, and will not tarry ; and fear shall no more be in our borders ; for He is our Saviour.*

He will subdue our iniquities ; and Thou wilt cast all their sins into the depths of the sea.

*For He is our Saviour.*

Glory be to the Father, &c.

*For He is our Saviour.*

(go on (g) )

SUNDAY 4.

Lesson 1.

Is. xxxv. 1—7.

The wilderness and the solitary place shall be glad for them ; and the desert shall rejoice, and blossom as the rose.

It shall blossom abundantly, and rejoice even with joy and singing : the glory of Lebanon shall be given unto it, the excellency of Carmel and Sharon, they shall see the glory of the LORD, *and* the excellency of our God.

Strengthen ye the weak hands, and confirm the feeble knees.

Say to them *that are* of a fearful heart, Be strong, fear not ; behold, your God will come *with* vengeance, *even* God *with* a recompence ; he will come and save you.

Then the eyes of the blind shall be opened, and the ears of the deaf shall be unstopped.

Then shall the lame *man* leap as an hart, and the tongue of the dumb sing : for in the wilderness shall waters break out, and streams in the desert.

And the parched ground shall become a pool, and the thirsty land springs of water.

Response 1.

*Blow the trumpet in Sion, summon the nations, proclaim to all people and say : Behold God our Saviour shall come.*

Proclaim and make it heard ; speak and cry aloud.

*Behold, God our Saviour shall come.*

Lesson 2.

Is. xxxv. 7—10.

In the habitation of dragons, where each lay, *shall be* grass with reeds and rushes.

And an highway shall be there, and a way, and it shall be called The way of holiness; the unclean shall not pass over it; but it *shall be* for those: the wayfaring men, though fools, shall not err *therein*.

No lion shall be there, nor *any* ravenous beast shall go up thereon; it shall not be found there: but the redeemed shall walk *there*.

And the ransomed of the LORD shall return, and come to Zion with songs and everlasting joy upon their heads: they shall obtain joy and gladness, and sorrow and sighing shall flee away.

Response 2.

*The sceptre shall not depart from Judah, nor a lawgiver from between his feet, until Shiloh come: and unto Him shall the gathering of the people be.*

His eyes are redder than wine, and His teeth whiter than milk.

*And unto Him shall, &c.*

Lesson 3.

Is. xli. 1—4.

Keep silence before me, O islands; and let the people renew *their* strength: let them come near; then let them speak: let us come near together to judgment.

Who raised up the righteous *man* from the east, called him to his foot, gave the nations before him, and made *him* rule over kings? he gave *them* as the dust to his sword, and as driven stubble to his bow.

He pursued them, and passed safely; *even* by the way *that* he had not gone with his feet.

Who hath wrought and done *it*, calling the generations from the beginning? I the LORD, the first, and with the last; I *am* he.

Response 3.

*I must decrease, but He must increase; he that cometh after me, was in being before me: whose shoes' latchet I am not worthy to unloose.*

I baptized you with water: but He shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost.

*Whose shoes' latchet, &c.*

Glory be to the Father, &c.

*Whose shoes' latchet, &c.*

(go on (g))

NOCTURN II.

- (g) *Antiphon.* Rejoice greatly : O daughter of Jerusalem ; behold thy king cometh unto thee ; O Sion, be not afraid, for thy salvation cometh quickly.
- (h) *Antiphon.* Our king : shall come, even Christ, whom John proclaimed as the Lamb which was to come.
- (i) *Antiphon.* Behold, I come : quickly, and My reward is with Me, to give to every man according as his work shall be.
- (j) *Verse and Response.* Send ye the Lamb to the Ruler of the land.  
*From Sela to the wilderness, unto the mount of the daughter of Sion.*

SUNDAY I.

*Lesson 4.* (From St. Leo.) Our Saviour, in His account of the coming of the kingdom of God, and of the end of the world, addressed to His Apostles, and in them to the whole Church, bids them beware, lest, at any time, their hearts should be weighed down with surfeiting and drunkenness, and cares of this life; which warning, beloved brethren, we know to belong to us specially, to whom the threatened day, though hidden, is certainly near.

*Response 4.* *Hail thou that art highly favoured ; the Lord is with thee : the Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee ; therefore that Holy Thing which shall be born of Thee shall be called the Son of God.*

How shall this be, seeing I know not a man? and the angel answered and said to her,

*The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, &c.*

*Lesson 5.* For whose coming it is fitting that all mankind should make ready, lest it should surprise any by gluttony or worldly cares. For daily experience proves, my beloved, that the keenness of the mind is blunted by fulness of drink, and the vigour of the heart clouded by excess of meat ; so that love of eating even does injury to our bodily health, unless a rule of temperance counteracts the seduction and refuses to indulge what afterwards would be a burden.

*Response 5.* *We look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ ; who shall change this vile body that it may be fashioned like unto His glorious body.*

Let us live soberly, righteously, and godly in this present

world, looking for the blessed hope and the glorious appearance of the great God.

*Who shall change, &c.*

*Lesson 6.*

For though the flesh hath no desires apart from the soul, and derives its senses from whence it gains animation, yet it is the part of the soul to deny some things to that body which is made subject to her, and by an inward discretion to hold back what is outward from mischief; that, being often at leisure from bodily desires, she may devote herself to divine wisdom in the palace of the mind, and while the noise of earthly cares is altogether hushed, may rejoice in holy meditations and everlasting pleasures.

*Response 6.*

*O my Lord, send, I pray Thee, by the hand of him whom Thou wilt send : behold the affliction of Thy people : as Thou hast spoken, come : and deliver us.*

Hear, O Thou Shepherd of Israel, Thou that leadeth Joseph like a sheep, Thou that sittest between the cherubim.  
*As Thou hast spoken, come : and deliver us.*

Glory be to the Father, &c.

*And deliver us.*

(go on (k) )

SUNDAY 2.

(From *St. Jerome.*)

And there shall go forth a rod out of the root of Jesse. As far as the beginning of the vision, or burden of Babylon, which Isaiah the son of Amoz saw, all this prophecy relates to Christ. Which I would explain by portions, lest if it be all set forth, and treated at once, it confuse the memory of the reader. The Jews understand our Lord by the rod and flower from the rod of Jesse, the rod signifying His power, the flower his comeliness.

*Response 4.*

*Behold, the Lord shall come, our defender, the Holy One of Israel : with the crown of His kingdom upon Him.*

And he shall reign from sea to sea, and from the river unto the ends of the earth.

*With the crown, &c.*

*Lesson 5.*

But we, by the rod from the root of Jesse, understand the holy Virgin Mary, who had no shrub belonging to her : of whom we read before, Behold, a Virgin shall conceive, and shall bear a son. And by the flower is meant the Lord and Saviour, who says in the Song of songs, I am the rose of Sharon, and the lily of the valleys.

*Response 5.*

*As a mother comforteth her sons, so will I comfort you, saith the Lord : and from Jerusalem, the city I have chosen, shall succour come to you ; and you shall see, and your heart shall rejoice.*

I will give to Sion salvation, and to Jerusalem My glory.

*And you shall see, &c.*

*Lesson 6.*

Therefore upon this flower, which shall suddenly spring up from the stem and root of Jesse by the Virgin Mary, the Spirit of the Lord shall rest; for in Him it hath seemed good that all the fulness of the Godhead should dwell bodily; not by portions, as in the case of other saints, but, according to the Hebrew gospel of the Nazarenes, all the fountain of the Holy Spirit shall descend upon Him. But the Lord is that Spirit; and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty.

*Response 6.*

*O Jerusalem, thou shalt plant thy vine upon thy mountains. Leap for joy, for the day of the Lord shall come. Arise, O Sion, be turned unto the Lord thy God; rejoice and be glad, O Jacob: for thy Saviour shall come in the midst of the nations.*

Rejoice greatly, O daughter of Sion: shout, O daughter of Jerusalem.

*For thy Saviour shall come in the midst of the nations.*

Glory be to the Father, &c.

*For thy Saviour shall come, &c. (go on k)*

SUNDAY 3.

*Lesson 4.*

*(From St. Leo.)*

The time of the year, and our own religious custom, leads me to proclaim to you, dearly beloved, with the anxiety of a pastor, the fast of the 10th month, in which for the completion of the gathering of all fruits, is poured out most suitably to the Lord their giver, the tribute of abstaining from them; for what can be more available than fasting? by observing which we draw near to God, and resisting the devil, overcome our pleasant vices.

*Response 4.*

*Weep not, O Egypt, for thy Ruler shall come to thee, before whose coming the depths shall be moved: to deliver His people from the hand of power.*

Behold the Lord of hosts shall come, thy God with great power.

*To deliver, &c.*

*Lesson 5.*

For fasting has ever been the food of virtue. In a word, from abstinence proceed chaste thoughts, moderate wishes, sober purposes: and by voluntary inflictions, the desires of the flesh are mortified, the graces of the spirit strengthened. But since, not by fasting only, the health of our souls is gained, let us make almsgiving the supplement of fasting. Let us give to active virtue, what we diminish from indul-

gence: Let the abstinence of the faster be the refreshment of the poor.

*Response 5.*

*Her time is well nigh come, and her days shall not be prolonged: the Lord shall have pity upon Jacob, and Israel shall be saved.*

Return, O virgin of Israel, return into thy cities.

*The Lord shall have pity, &c.*

*Lesson 6.*

Let us give attention to the defence of widows, the welfare of orphans, the consolation of mourners, the reconciliation of enemies. Befriend the foreigner, assist the oppressed, clothe the naked, nurse the sick; that whoso of us by righteous labours shall offer to God, the author of all good, such pious sacrifice, may receive in turn for the same the reward of His heavenly kingdom. Let us keep fast on Wednesdays and Fridays; let us keep Vigil on the Sabbath with the blessed Apostle Peter, whose deeds of grace working together with our prayers, we may obtain what we seek through our Lord Jesus Christ, who with the Father and the Holy Ghost, liveth and reigneth, world without end. *Amen.*

*Response 6.*

*The Lord shall descend as the rain into a fleece of wool: righteousness shall spring forth in His days, yea, and abundance of peace.*

And all kings shall worship Him, all the heathen shall serve Him.

*Righteousness shall spring forth, &c.*

Glory be to the Father, &c.

*Righteousness shall spring forth, &c. (go on (k) )*

#### SUNDAY 4.

*Lesson 4.*

*(From St. Leo.)*

If we understand truly and wisely, dearly beloved, the history of our creation, we shall find that man was therefore formed after the likeness of God, that he might imitate the Creator; and that the natural dignity of our race consists in the image of divine kindness shining within us as in a mirror. Towards which we are daily renewed by the grace of the Saviour, so that what fell in the first Adam, is raised again in the second.

*Response 4.*

*Unto us a child is born, and He shall be called the mighty God: He shall sit upon the throne of David His Father and shall reign: and the dominion shall be upon His shoulder.*

And in Him shall all tribes of the earth be blessed, and all nations shall serve Him.

*He shall sit, &c.*

Lesson 5.

The sole cause of our recovery is the pitifulness of God, whom we should not love, unless He first loved us, and scattered the darkness of our ignorance with the light of His truth; which the Lord declaring by holy Isaiah saith, I will bring the blind by a way that they know not, and paths of which they were ignorant will I make them tread; I will make their darkness light, and their crooked straight. This will I do to them, and not forsake them. And again, I am found of them who sought me not, and I am manifested to them that asked not for me.

Response 5.

*Behold the fulness of time is now come, in which God sent forth His Son upon the earth, born of a virgin, made under the Law: to redeem those that are under the Law.*

For His great love wherewith He loved us, God sent forth His Son in the likeness of sinful flesh.

*To redeem those, &c.*

Lesson 6.

How this was fulfilled the Apostle John teaches, saying, We know that the Son of God is come, and has given us an understanding that we may know Him that is true, and we are in His true Son. And again, We love God, because He first loved us. Therefore God, by loving us, restores in us His own image, and that He may find in us the likeness of His own goodness, He giveth whence we also may work what He worketh, by lighting the lamps of our minds, and kindling in us the flame of His own love, that we may love not Him only, but all that He loves.

Response 6.

*O Virgin of Israel, return to thy cities; how long wilt thou be put aside and be in sorrow? thou shalt conceive the Lord and Saviour, a new oblation in the earth: men shall go forward to salvation.*

I have loved thee with an everlasting love; therefore with loving kindness have I drawn thee.

*How long wilt thou be put aside and be in sorrow? thou shalt conceive thy Lord and Saviour, a new oblation in the earth: men shall go forward to salvation.*

Glory be to the Father, &c.

*Men shall go forward to salvation, &c.*

## NOCTURN III.

- (k) *Antiphon.* The Angel Gabriel : spake unto Mary, saying, Hail thou that art highly favoured, the Lord is with thee. Blessed art thou among women.
- (l) *Antiphon.* Mary said: What meaneth this salutation ? for my soul is troubled, and I shall bear my King, and yet remain a virgin.
- (m) *Antiphon.* Before the coming : of the great King, let the hearts of men be cleansed, to walk worthily to meet Him, for behold He will come, and will not tarry.
- (n) *Verse and Response.* The Lord will come forth of His holy place.  
*He will come to save His people.*

## SUNDAY 4.

*At that time Jesus said to his disciples.*

*Lesson 7.* There shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars; and upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity; the sea and the waves roaring;

*Luke xxi. 25—33.*

Men's hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth: for the powers of heaven shall be shaken.

And then shall they see the Son of man coming in a cloud with power and great glory.

And when these things begin to come to pass, then look up, and lift up your heads; for your redemption draweth nigh.

And he spake to them a parable: Behold the fig-tree, and all the trees;

When they now shoot forth, ye see and know of your own selves that summer is now nigh at hand.

So likewise ye, when ye see these things come to pass, know ye that the kingdom of God is nigh at hand.

Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass away, till all be fulfilled.

Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away.

*(Homily of Pope Gregory.)*

Our Lord and Redeemer, desirous of finding us ready, foretels what evils shall attend the ageing world, in order to sober us from the love of it. He makes known how great strokes shall precede its approaching end; that, if we will not fear God in prosperity, at least when afflicted by His strokes, we may dread His near judgment.



Response 7.

*Behold a virgin shall conceive and bear a Son, saith the Lord, and His name shall be called Wonderful, the mighty God.*

Upon the throne of David and over His kingdom shall He reign for ever.

*And his name shall, &c.*

Lesson 8.

Shortly before the passage of the holy Gospel, which my brethren have been hearing, the Lord had said, Nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and great earthquakes shall be in divers places, and pestilences and famines. Then after some additions, He says what you have heard: There shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars; and upon the earth distress of nations with perplexity; the sea and the waves roaring. Of all these signs certainly some we see fulfilled already, others we fear as soon coming.

Response 8.

*Hear the word of the Lord, O ye nations, and declare it in the ends of the earth; and say to the isles afar off, Our Saviour shall come.*

Declare it, and make it heard; speak, and cry out.

*And say to the isles, &c.*

Lesson 9.

For nation is rising against nation, and distress from them presses upon the countries, more in the events we see than in the books we read. You know too how often we hear from other parts of the world, of earthquakes overwhelming cities; pestilences we suffer without respite. We do not yet openly behold signs in the sun, moon, and stars: but the alteration of the atmosphere betokens that they are not far off.

Response 9.

*Behold the days come, saith the Lord, that I will raise up unto David a righteous Branch, and a King shall reign and prosper, and shall execute judgment and justice in the earth: and this is His name whereby He shall be called: The Lord our Righteousness.*

In his days Judah shall be saved and Israel shall dwell safely.

*And this is His name whereby He shall be called: The Lord our Righteousness.*

Glory be to the Father, &c.

*The Lord our Righteousness.*

*(End of Matins. The Te Deum is not sung in Advent.)*

## SUNDAY 2.

*Lesson 7.*  
*Matt. xi. 2—9.*

Now when John had heard in the prison the works of Christ, he sent two of his disciples.

And said unto Him, Art thou he that should come, or do we look for another?

Jesus answered and said unto them, Go and show John again those things which ye do hear and see:

The blind receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and the poor have the gospel preached to them.

And blessed is he, whosoever shall not be offended in me.

And as they departed, Jesus began to say unto the multitudes concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness to see? A reed shaken with the wind?

But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? behold, they that wear soft clothing are in king's houses.

But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? yea, I say unto you, and more than a prophet.

(*Homily of Pope Gregory.*)

So many signs and so many miracles, were to each beholder not an offence but a wonder. Yet the mind of unbelievers took this serious offence at Him, that after all His miracles He should be seen to die. Whence also Paul saith, We preach Christ crucified, to the Jews a stumbling-block, and to the Gentiles foolishness. For it seemed to man to be foolish, that for man the Source of life should die; and thus man took offence at Him for the very thing, whence he ought to have felt himself the more His debtor. For God is so much the more worthy of honour from men, by how much he has for men undergone dishonour.

*Response 7.*

*The Lord shall come from Samaria to the Eastern Gate, and shall come to Bethlehem, walking upon the waters of the redemption of Judah: then shall every man be saved, for behold He cometh.*

And his throne shall be prepared in mercy, and He shall sit on it in truth.

*Then shall every man, &c.*

*Lesson 8.*

What means His saying, that he is blessed whosoever is not offended in Him, but to mark, in plain words, the abject and degrading nature of His death? as if He openly said, I do what is marvellous, yet I submit to suffer what is abject. Since then I shortly follow thee in dying, men must specially beware, lest, though venerating My signs, they despise My death.

Response 8.

*Make haste and tarry not, O Lord: and deliver thy people.*

Come, O Lord, and do not tarry; absolve Thy people from their iniquities.

*And deliver Thy people.*

Lesson 9.

But let us hear what he said to the crowd concerning this same John, when He had dismissed John's disciples: What went ye out into the wilderness for to see? a reed shaken with the wind? which he means to be answered in negative. For as the wind takes it, a reed moves this way or that. And what is the reed, but the carnal mind? which, according as it falls in with popularity or reproach, at once inclines to the one side or the other.

Response 9.

*Behold the Lord shall come down with glory and His power with Him: to visit His people in peace, and to establish upon them everlasting life.*

Behold our Lord shall come with power.

*To visit His people, &c.*

Glory be to the Father, &c.

*To visit His people, &c.*

(*End of Matins.*)

SUNDAY 3.

Lesson 7.

John i. 19—28.

And this is the record of John, when the Jews sent priests and Levites from Jerusalem to ask him, Who art thou?

And he confessed, and denied not; but confessed, I am not the Christ.

And they asked him, What then? art thou Elias? And he saith, I am not. Art thou that prophet? And he answered, No.

Then said they unto him, Who art thou? that we may give an answer to them that sent us. What sayest thou of thyself?

He said, I am the voice of one crying in the wilderness, Make straight the way of the Lord, as said the prophet Esaias.

And they which were sent were of the Pharisees.

And they asked him, and said unto him, Why baptizest thou then, if thou be not that Christ, nor Elias, neither that prophet?

John answered them, saying, I baptize with water: but there standeth one among you, whom ye know not;

He it is, who coming after me is preferred before me, whose shoes' latchet I am not worthy to unloose.

These things were done in Bethabara beyond Jordan, where John was baptizing.

(*Homily of Pope Gregory.*)

From the words of this lesson, dearest brethren, we have proof of John's humility: who, whereas he had such grace that he was taken for the Christ, yet preferred to remain unmoveably in what he was, lest he should be carried away by human opinion into fancies above what he was. For he confessed and denied not, but confessed I am not the Christ. But in saying, I am not, he denied what he was not, not what he was: that by speaking truth he might become a member of Him, whose name he did not fraudulently appropriate. While then he is not ambitious of the name, he becomes a member of Christ; because in aiming at humbly confessing his own weakness, he was found worthy of truly possessing His majesty.

*Response 7.*

*Come, O Lord, and do not tarry; absolve Thy people from their iniquities: and bring back the scattered ones into their own land.*

Stir up, O Lord, Thy power, and come, and save us.  
*And bring back, &c.*

*Lesson 8.*

But when we recollect our Saviour's saying in another passage, the words of this passage raise a perplexing question. For elsewhere, when the Lord was asked by His disciples concerning the coming of Elias, He answered, Elias is already come, and they have done unto him whatsoever they listed, and, if ye will know, John himself is Elias. Yet John, when he was asked, said, I am not Elias. What means it, dearly beloved brethren, that what the truth affirms, the prophet of the truth denies? The two statements are very different; It is he, and, I am not he. How then is he the prophet of the truth, if he agrees not with the sayings of that truth itself?

*Response 8.*

*Behold, the root of Jesse shall come for the salvation of the people; unto Him shall the Gentiles seek: and His name shall be glorious.*

And the Lord God shall give unto Him the throne of His father David, and He shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever.

*And His name, &c.*

*Lesson 9.*

But if we inspect the matter minutely, what seems inconsistent, will be found consistent. For the angel said to Zacharias concerning John, He shall go before Him in the spirit and power of Elias. He then is said to be coming

in the spirit and power of Elias, inasmuch as he went before the first coming of the Lord, as Elias will go before His second coming. As he will be the forerunner of the Judge, so John was the forerunner of the Redeemer. John then was in the spirit of Elias, not in his person. What then the Lord declares of the spirit, John denies of the person.

*Response 9.*

*The Lord shall teach us His ways, and we will walk in His paths: for out of Zion shall go forth the law, and the word of the Lord from Jerusalem.*

Come ye, and let us go up into the mountain of the Lord, and to the house of the God of Jacob.

*For out of Zion, &c.*

Glory be to the Father, &c.

*For out of Zion, &c.*

*(End of Matins.)*

SUNDAY 4.

*Lesson 7.*

*Luke iii. 1—9.*

Now in the fifteenth year of the reign of Tiberius Cæsar, Pontius Pilate being governor of Judea, and Herod being tetrarch of Galilee, and his brother Philip tetrarch of Iturea and of the region of Trachonitis, and Lysanias the tetrarch of Abilene,

Annas and Caiaphas being the high priests, the word of God came unto John the son of Zacharias in the wilderness.

And he came into all the country about Jordan, preaching the baptism of repentance for the remission of sins;

As it is written in the book of the words of Esaias the prophet, saying, The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

Every valley shall be filled, and every mountain and hill shall be brought low; and the crooked shall be made straight, and the rough ways shall be made smooth;

And all flesh shall see the salvation of God.

Then said he to the multitude that came forth to be baptized of him, O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?

Bring forth therefore fruits worthy of repentance, and begin not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, That God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham.

And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees; every tree therefore which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.

(*Homily of Pope  
Gregory.*)

John said to the multitudes which went out to be baptized by him, O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come? For the wrath to come is the punishment of uttermost vengeance; which the sinner is not able then to flee, who has not now recourse to the laments of penitence. And it is observable, that evil offspring, imitating the conduct of evil parents, are called generation of vipers: for in envying and persecuting the good, repaying evil, injuring their neighbours, in all these ways following the doings of their carnal fathers, they are as though poisonous children of poisonous parents.

*Response 7.*

*I have sworn, saith the Lord, that I will no longer be wroth upon the earth; for the mountains and the hills shall receive My righteousness: and My covenant of peace shall be with Jerusalem.*

My salvation is near to come, and My righteousness to be revealed.

*And My covenant, &c.*

*Lesson 8.*

But since we have already sinned, since we are involved in the usage of bad habits, let him say what we must do, in order to flee from the wrath to come. It follows; Bring forth therefore fruits, worthy of repentance. In these words it is observable that the friend of the bridegroom enjoins not only fruits, but worthy fruits of repentance. It is one thing to bring forth the fruit, another worthy fruits of repentance. By way of explaining what is meant by worthy, it must be borne in mind, that whoso has committed nothing unlawful, he may lawfully use what is lawful; and do his works of charity without necessarily relinquishing the world.

*Response 8.*

*We will not depart from Thee, O Lord, Thou wilt quicken us, and we will call upon Thy name: show us Thy countenance, and we shall be whole.*

Remember me, O Lord, according to the favour that Thou bearest unto Thy people: O visit me with Thy salvation.

*Show us Thy countenance, &c.*

*Lesson 9.*

But if any one has incurred the guilt of fornication, or perchance, what is still more heinous, adultery, by so much the more should he deprive himself of things lawful, as he remembers he has committed what is unlawful. Nor should the fruit of a good work be the same, where a man has

sinned less, or sinned more, been betrayed into none, or into some crimes, or into many. In saying then "worthy fruits of penance," the conscience of every one is suitably addressed, that he may obtain by so much the more advantage of good works by penance, as he has incurred heavier loss by sinning.

**Response 9.**

*Behold ye, how great is He, who comes to save the nations. He is the king of righteousness; of whose generation there is no end.*

The Forerunner is for us entered, made for ever an high priest after the order of Melchizedek.

*Of whose generation, &c.*

Glory be to the Father, &c.

*Of whose generation, &c.*

---

**LAUDS.**
**SUNDAY 1.**

(o) *Antiphon.*  
(also at prime  
on the respec-  
tive Sundays and  
the rest of each  
week till Dec.  
17.)

In that day the mountain shall drop down new wine, and the hills shall flow with milk. Hallelujah.

**SUNDAY 2.**

Behold, the Lord shall come in the clouds of heaven with great power. Hallelujah.

**SUNDAY 3.**

The Lord will come and will not tarry, and will bring to light the hidden things of darkness, and manifest himself to all nations. Hallelujah.

**SUNDAY 4.**

Blow the trumpet in Sion, for the day of the Lord is at hand; behold, he shall come and save us. Hallelujah. Hallelujah.

**SUNDAY 1.**

(p) *Antiphon.*  
(also at Third  
till Dec. 17.)

Rejoice greatly, daughter of Sion: shout, O daughter of Jerusalem. Hallelujah.

**SUNDAY 2.**

We have a strong city; salvation will God appoint for walls and bulwarks. Open ye the gates, for God is with us. Hallelujah.

## SUNDAY 3.

Rejoice, O Jerusalem, with great joy, for the Saviour shall come unto thee. Hallelujah.

## SUNDAY 4.

Behold, the Desire of all nations shall come, and the house of the Lord shall be filled with glory. Hallelujah.

## SUNDAY 1.

(q) *Antiphon.*  
(also at sixth,  
till Dec. 17.)

Behold, the Lord shall come and all his saints with Him, and the light in that day shall be great. Hallelujah.

## SUNDAY 2.

Behold, the Lord shall appear, and will not lie; though He tarry, wait for Him, because He will surely come, He will not tarry. Hallelujah.

## SUNDAY 3.

I will give salvation to Sion, and my glory to Jerusalem. Hallelujah.

## SUNDAY 4.

The crooked shall be made straight, and the rough places plain; come, Lord, and do not tarry. Hallelujah.

## SUNDAY 1.

(r) *Antiphon.*

Ho, every one that thirsteth, come ye to the waters; seek ye the Lord while he may be found. Hallelujah.

## SUNDAY 3.

The mountains and the hills shall break forth before him into singing; and all the trees of the field shall clap their hands: for the Lord the king shall come to his everlasting kingdom. Hallelujah. Hallelujah.

## SUNDAY 3.

Every mountain and hill shall be made low, and the crooked shall be made straight, and the rough places plain: Come, O Lord, and do not tarry. Hallelujah.

## SUNDAY 4.

The Lord shall come: meet ye Him, and say, Great is His beginning, and of His kingdom shall be no end. The mighty God our king, the Prince of peace. Hallelujah. Hallelujah.



## SUNDAY 1.

(s) *Antiphon.*  
(also at Ninth,  
till Dec. 17.)

Behold the great Prophet shall come, and He shall rebuild Jerusalem. Hallelujah.

## SUNDAY 2.

Behold, our Lord shall come with power, and shall enlighten the eyes of His servants. Hallelujah.

## SUNDAY 3.

Let us live righteously and godly, waiting for the blessed hope and coming of the Lord.

## SUNDAY 4.

Thy Almighty word leaped down from heaven out of Thy royal throne. Hallelujah.

## SUNDAY 1.

(t) *Text.*  
(also at Third,  
and Vespers on  
the respective  
Sundays.)

Brethren, it is high time to wake out of sleep, for now is our salvation nearer than when we believed.

## SUNDAY 2.

Brethren, whatsoever things were written aforetime, were written for our learning, that we through patience and comfort of the Scriptures might have hope.

## SUNDAY 3.

Brethren, rejoice in the Lord always; and again I say, Rejoice. Let your moderation be known unto all men. The Lord is at hand.

## SUNDAY 4.

Brethren, let a man so account of us, as ministers of Christ, and stewards of the mysteries of God. Moreover, it is required of stewards, that a man be found faithful.

(u) *Hymn.*  
(v) *Verse and  
Response.*

En clara vox redarguit, &c.

The voice of one crying in the wilderness; Prepare ye the way of the Lord.

*Make his paths straight.*

## SUNDAY 1.

(w) (*Antiphon of  
the Benedictus.*)

The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, O Mary; fear not, thou shalt conceive in thy womb the Son of God. Hallelujah.

## SUNDAY 2.

When John had heard in the prison the works of Christ, he sent two of his disciples, and said unto Him, Art Thou He that should come, or do we look for another ?

## SUNDAY 3.

Upon the throne of David and upon his kingdom, He shall sit for ever. Hallelujah.

## SUNDAY 4.

Hail thou that art highly favoured; the Lord is with thee; blessed art thou among women. Hallelujah.

## SUNDAY 1.

(x) *Collect.*  
(also at *Third, Sixth, Ninth, and Vespers on the respective Sundays.*)

Raise up, we beseech Thee, O Lord, Thy power, and come, that we being found meet may be snatched from the perils of our sins by Thy succour, and may be saved by Thy deliverance, who livest and reignest with God the Father, &c.

## SUNDAY 2.

Stir up, O Lord, our hearts to prepare the ways of Thy only begotten Son, that by His coming we may be made meet to serve Thee with purified minds, who liveth with Thee, &c.

## SUNDAY 3.

Give ear, we beseech Thee, O Lord, to our prayers, and lighten the darkness of our mind by the grace of Thy visitation, who livest and reignest, &c.

## SUNDAY 4.

Raise up, we pray Thee, Thy power, and come among us, and with great might succour us, that by the aid of Thy grace, what our sins do hinder, the bounty of Thy propitiation may forward, who livest, &c.

## PRIME.

(bb) *Antiphon.*

Same as (o).

(ee) *Verse in Short Response.*

Thou that art now coming into the world.

(ii) *Short Lesson, Isa. xxxiii. 2.*

O Lord, be gracious unto us; we have waited for Thee: be Thou our arm every morning, our salvation also in the time of trouble.

### THIRD HOUR.

- (kk) *Antiphon.* The same as (p).  
 (ll) *Text.* The same as (t).  
 (mm) *Short Response.* *Come Thou and save us : O Lord God of hosts.*  
*Come Thou, &c. (Repeated.)*  
 Show the light of Thy countenance, and we shall be whole.  
*O Lord God of hosts.*  
 Glory be to the Father, and to the Son, and to the Holy Ghost, &c.  
*Come Thou and save us, O Lord God of hosts.*  
 The heathen shall fear Thy name, O Lord.  
*And all the kings of the earth Thy majesty.*  
 (nn) *Collect.* The same as (x).

---

### SIXTH HOUR.

- (pp) *Antiphon.* The same as (q).  
 (qq) *Text.* SUNDAY 1.  
 The night is far spent, the day is at hand, let us therefore cast away the works of darkness, and put upon us the armour of light.  
 SUNDAY 2.  
 Now the God of patience and consolation grant you to be like minded one toward another, according to Jesus Christ, that ye may with one mind and one mouth glorify God, even the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ.  
 SUNDAY 3.  
 Be careful for nothing ; but in every thing by prayer and supplication, with thanksgiving, let your requests be made known unto God.  
 SUNDAY 4.  
 But with me it is a very small thing that I should be judged of you, or of man's judgment ; yea I judge not myself.  
 (rr) *Short Response.* *Show us Thy mercy, O Lord.*  
*Show us, &c.*  
 And grant us Thy salvation,  
*O Lord.*

Glory be, &c.

*Show us Thy mercy, O Lord.*

Remember me, O Lord, according to the favour that thou bearest unto Thy people.

*O visit me with Thy salvation.*

(ss) *Collect.*

The same as (x.)

## NINTH HOUR.

(uu) *Antiphon.*

The same as (s).

### SUNDAY 1.

(vv) *Text.*

Let us walk honestly as in the day, not in rioting and drunkenness, not in chambering and wantonness, not in strife and envying: but put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ.

### SUNDAY 2.

Now the God of hope fill you with all joy and peace in believing, that ye may abound in hope, through the power of the Holy Ghost.

### SUNDAY 3.

And the peace of God which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds in Christ Jesus our Lord.

### SUNDAY 4.

Therefore judge nothing before the time, until the Lord come, who both will bring to light the hidden things of darkness and will make manifest the counsels of the heart, and then shall every man have praise of God.

(ww) *Short Response.*

*The Lord shall arise upon thee: O Jerusalem.*

*The Lord, &c.*

And His glory shall be seen upon thee.

*O Jerusalem.*

Glory be to, &c.

*The Lord shall arise upon thee: O Jerusalem.*

Turn us again, Lord God of hosts.

*Show the light of Thy countenance, and we shall be whole.*

(xx) *Collect.*

The same as (x).

VESPERS.

(yy) }  
 (zz) } Antiphon the same as { (o)  
 (aaa) } { (p)  
 (bbb) } { (q) respectively.  
 (ecc) } { (r)  
 { (s)

(ddd) *Text.* The same as (t).

(eee) *Hymn.* Creator alme siderum, &c.

(fff) *Verse and Response.* Drop down, ye heavens, from above, and let the skies pour down righteousness.

*Let the earth open, and let them bring forth salvation.*

SUNDAY 1.

(ggg) *Antiphon.* Fear not, Mary, for thou hast found favour with God: *of the Magnif.* and behold, thou shalt conceive, and shalt bear a son. Hallelujah.

SUNDAY 2.

Art Thou He that should come? or look we for another? Tell John the things which ye see. The blind receive their sight, the dead are raised, to the poor the Gospel is preached. Hallelujah.

SUNDAY 3.

Blessed art thou, O Mary, which believedst in the Lord: there shall be a performance in thee of those things which were said to thee of the Lord.

SUNDAY 4.

(being Dec. 18.) O Lord, and Ruler of the House of Israel, who appearedst unto Moses in the flame of a burning bush, and gavest to him the Law in Sinai, come to redeem us with a stretched out arm.

(hhh) *Collect.* The same as (x).

## § 9. SERVICE FOR WEEK DAYS IN ADVENT.

## MATINS.

O Lord, open, &amp;c. Glory be, &amp;c.

- (a) *Invitatory.* 1st and 2d week. O come, let us worship: the Lord our king approaching.  
 (the same as the respective Sundays.) 3d and 4th week. O come, let us worship: the Lord is close at hand.

(b) *Hymn.*

Verbum supernum prodiens, &amp;c.

(all four weeks.)

*Antiphon.*

	Monday.	Tuesday.	Wednesday.	Thursday.	Friday.	Saturday.
	The Lord is the	That I offend not.	O that the Lord would	Haste Thee: O Lord God	Sing we merrily:	For the Lord hath done:
(1) <i>Psalm</i>	27	39	53	69	81	98
(2) <i>Psalm</i>	28	40	55	70	82	99
<i>Antiphon.</i>	strength: of my life.	in my tongue.	deliver: His people out of captivity.	to deliver me.	unto God our strength.	marvellous things.
<i>Antiphon.</i>	Worship the Lord:	Heal: my soul, for	For my soul	Be thou:	Thou only, art the most	O be joyful: in
(3) <i>Psalm</i>	29	41	56	71	83	100
(4) <i>Psalm</i>	30	42	57	72	84	101
<i>Antiphon.</i>	with holy worship.	I have sinned against Thee.	trusteth in Thee.	my strong hold.	highest over all the earth.	the Lord all ye lands.
<i>Antiphon.</i>	Deliver me: in	My heart is inditing	Do ye judge the thing that	Think upon the tribe:	Lord, Thou art become	Let my crying:
(5) <i>Psalm</i>	31	44	58	73	85	102
(6) <i>Psalm</i>	32	45	59	74	86	103
<i>Antiphon.</i>	Thy righteousness.	of a good matter.	is right: O ye sons of men.	of Thine inheritance.	gracious: unto Thy land.	come unto Thee.
<i>Antiphon.</i>	It becometh well:	A very present help:	O be Thou: our	Unto Thee: do we	Her foundations: are	Praise the Lord.
(7) <i>Psalm</i>	33	46	60	75	87	104
(8) <i>Psalm</i>	34	47	61	76	88	105
<i>Antiphon.</i>	the just to be thankful.	in trouble	help in trouble.	give thanks.	upon the holy hills.	O my soul.
<i>Antiphon.</i>	Fight against them	Great is the Lord:	My soul truly	Thou art the God:	Praised be the Lord	O visit me: with
(9) <i>Psalm</i>	35	48	62	77	89	106
(10) <i>Psalm</i>	36	49	64	78	94	107
<i>Antiphon.</i>	that fight against me.	and highly to be praised.	waiteth still upon God.	that doest wonders.	for evermore.	Thy salvation.
<i>Antiphon.</i>	Commit thy way:	The Lord, even the most	O praise: our God	Be merciful:	Sing unto the Lord:	I will give great thanks:
(11) <i>Psalm</i>	37	50	66	79	96	108
(12) <i>Psalm</i>	38	52	68	80	97	109
<i>Antiphon.</i>	unto the Lord.	mighty God: hath spoken.	ye people.	unto our sins, O Lord.	and praise His name.	unto the Lord with my mouth.

(f) Verse and (as on the Out of Sion hath God appeared  
Response. Sundays.) In perfect beauty.  
The Lord's Prayer. Our Father, &c.

Absolution. M. T. W. Th. F. S.  
1.—2.—3. 1.—2.—3.

(These numbers answer to the numbers affixed to the Absolutions and Benedictions in § 2.)  
Monday.

Benediction 1.—1<sup>1</sup>.

Lesson 1. *Isaiah* i. 16—18<sup>2</sup>.

Response 1. *Cherish the Word, O Mary the Virgin, which is conveyed to thee from the Lord by the angel; thou shalt conceive in thy womb and bring forth God and man; that thou mayest be called blessed among all women.*

Yea, thou shalt bring forth a son, yet abide a virgin; thou shalt be with child and be a mother, yet know not a man.

*That thou mayest be blessed among all women.*

Benediction 2.—2.

Lesson 2. *Isaiah* i. 19—23.

Response 2. *Let the heavens rejoice, and let the earth be glad, let the hills be joyful together before the Lord, for He shall come, and shall have pity on the poor.*

In His time shall the righteous flourish, yea and abundance of peace.

*And He shall have pity on the poor.*

Benediction 3.—3.

Lesson 3. *Isaiah* i. 24—28.

Response 3. *Strangers shall not pass through Jerusalem any more, for in that day the mountains shall drop down new wine, and the hills shall flow with milk, saith the Lord.*

God shall come from Lebanon, and the Holy One from the woody mountain.

*For in that day the mountains, &c. (End of Matins.)*

<sup>1</sup> The Benedictions run as follows:

	M.	T.	W.	Th.	F.	S.
Benediction 1st.—1.		4.	7.	1.	4.	7.
2d.—2.		5.	8.	2.	5.	8.
3d.—3.		6.	9.	3.	6.	9.

<sup>2</sup> These lessons will illustrate the complaint in the preface of our Prayer Book, that "when any book of the Bible was begun," in the Breviary, "after 3 or 4 chapters were read out, all the rest were unread." No chapter is finished.

1st Tuesday.

*Benediction 1.—4.**Lesson 1. Isaiah ii. 1—3.**Response 1. Ye mountains of Israel, spread forth your branches, and bud into flower, and bear fruit; it is full time that the day of the Lord come.*

Drop down, ye heavens, from above, and let the skies pour down righteousness; let the earth open and bring forth salvation.

*It is full time that the day of the Lord come.**Benediction 2.—5.**Lesson 2. Isaiah ii. 4—6.**Response 2. Let the mountains break forth with joy, and the hills with righteousness, for the Lord, the light of the world, is come with power.*

Out of Zion shall go forth the law, and the word of the Lord from Jerusalem.

*For the Lord, the light, &c.**Benediction 3.—6.**Lesson 3. Isaiah ii. 7—9.**Response 3. Behold, I come, the Lord your God from Timon: to visit you in peace.*

I will look upon you, and make you to increase; ye shall be multiplied, and I will establish My covenant with you.

*To visit you in peace. (End of Matins.)*

1st Wednesday.

*Benediction 1.—7†<sup>1</sup>.**Lesson 1. Isaiah iii. 1—4.**Response 1. Christ our King shall come, whom John announced as the Lamb that was to come.*

Kings shall keep peace before Him, and the Gentiles shall supplicate Him.

*Whom John announced as the Lamb that was to come.**Benediction 2.—8.**Lesson 2. Isaiah iii. 5—7.**Response 2. Ezekiel prophesied long before, I saw a gate that was shut; behold, the everlasting God went forth from it for the salvation of the world: and again it was shut, figuring the Virgin, who after the birth remained a virgin.*


---

<sup>1</sup> Where the number of this Benediction is marked with a †, it runs thus: "May He bless us who liveth and reigneth world without end. Amen."



The gate which thou sawest, the Lord alone shall pass through it.

*And again it was, &c.*

*Benediction 3.—9.*

*Lesson 3. Isaiah iii. 8—11.*

(As Response 9  
of Sunday.)

*Response 3. Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that I will raise up unto David a righteous branch, and a king shall reign and prosper, and shall execute judgment and justice in the earth; and this is His name whereby He shall be called, The Lord our Righteousness.*

In His days Judah shall be saved, and Israel shall dwell safely.

*And this is His name, &c. (End of Matins.)*

1st Thursday.

*Benediction 1.—1.*

*Lesson 1. Isaiah iv. 1—3.*

(as on Monday.)

*Response 1. Cherish the Word, &c.*

*Benediction 2.—2.*

*Lesson 2. Isaiah v. 1—4.*

(As Response 2  
of Sunday.)

*Response 2. I saw in the night visions, and behold, one like unto the Son of man came with the clouds of heaven; and there was given Him dominion, and glory, and a kingdom: that all people, nations, and languages should serve Him.*

His dominion is an everlasting dominion, which shall not pass away, and His kingdom that which shall not be destroyed.

*That all people, &c.*

*Benediction 3.—3.*

*Lesson 3. Isaiah v. 5—7.*

(As Response 3  
of Sunday.)

*Response 3. The angel Gabriel was sent to Mary, a virgin espoused to Joseph, announcing to her the Word, and the virgin was troubled at the light: Fear not, Mary, thou hast found favour with the Lord: behold, thou shalt conceive and bring forth a Son, and He shall be called the Son of the Highest.*

The Lord God shall give unto Him the throne of His father David, and He shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever.

*Behold, thou shalt conceive, &c. (End of Matins.)*

1st Friday.

*Benediction 1.—4.*

Lesson 1. *Isaiah vi. 1—3.*

(As Response 4 of Sunday.) Response 1. *Hail thou that art highly favoured, the Lord is with thee ; the Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee, therefore that holy thing which shall be born of thee shall be called the Son of God.*

How shall this be, seeing I know not a man? And the Angel answered and said to her.

*The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, &c.*

## Benediction 2—5.

Lesson 2. *Isaiah vi. 4—7.*

(As Response 5 of Sunday.) Response 2. *We wait for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto His glorious body.*

Let us live soberly, righteously, and godly in this present world, looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God.

*Who shall change, &c.*

## Benediction 3.—6.

Lesson 3. *Isaiah vi. 8—10.*

(As Response 6 of Sunday.) Response 3. *O my Lord, send, I pray Thee, by the hand of him whom thou wilt send ; behold the affliction of thy people : as Thou hast spoken, come, and deliver us.*

Hear, O Thou Shepherd of Israel, Thou that leadest Joseph like a sheep, Thou that sittest between the cherubim.

*As Thou hast spoken, &c. (End of Matins.)*

## 1st Saturday.

## Benediction 1.—7†.

Lesson 1. *Isaiah vii. 1—3.*

(As Response 7 of Sunday.) Response 1. *Behold, a virgin shall conceive, and shall bring forth a Son, saith the Lord, and His name shall be called Wonderful, the Mighty God.*

Upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom He shall sit for ever.

*And His name shall be called Wonderful, the Mighty God.*

## Benediction 2.—8.

Lesson 2. *Isaiah vii. 4—6.*

(As Response 8 of Sunday.) Response 2. *Hear the Word of the Lord, O ye nations, and declare it in the ends of the earth ; and say to the isles afar off, our Saviour shall come.*

Declare it and make it heard ; speak and cry out.

*And say to the isles, &c.*

(As Response 9 of Sunday and Response 3 of Wednesday.)

Benediction 3.—9.

Lesson 3. *Isaiah vii. 10—15.*

Response 3. *Behold the day is come, &c. (End of Matins.)*

2d Monday.

Benediction 1.—1.

Lesson 1. *Isaiah xiii. 1—4.*

Response 1. *Cherish the Word, &c.*

Benediction 2.—2.

(The Response as on 1st Monday.)

Lesson 2. *Isaiah xiii. 4—8.*

Response 2. *Let the heavens rejoice, &c.*

Benediction 3.—3.

Lesson 3. *Isaiah xiii. 9—11.*

Response 3. *Strangers shall not pass, &c. (End.)*

2d Tuesday.

Benediction 1.—4.

Lesson 1. *Isaiah xiv. 1—4.*

Response 1. *Ye mountains of Israel, &c.*

ponses  
as on 1st Tuesday.)

Benediction 2.—5.

Lesson 2. *Isaiah xiv. 3—6.*

Response 2. *Let the mountains, &c.*

Benediction 3.—6.

Lesson 3. *Isaiah xiv. 12—15.*

Response 3. *Behold, I come, &c. (End.)*

2d Wednesday.

Benediction 1—7 †.

Lesson 1. *Isaiah xvi. 1—4.*

Response 1. *Christ our king, &c.*

Benediction 2.—8.

(As on 1st Wednesday.)

Lesson 2. *Isaiah xvi. 4—6.*

Response 2. *Ezekiel prophesied, &c.*

Benediction 3.—9.

Lesson 3. *Isaiah xvi. 7, 8.*

(As Response 9 of Sunday.)

Response 3. *Behold, the Lord shall come, descending in glory, and His power with Him; to visit His people in peace, and establish upon them everlasting life.*

Behold our Lord shall come with power.

*To visit His people, &c. (End.)*

2d Thursday.

Benediction 1.—1.

Lesson 1. *Isaiah xix. 1, 2.*

(As Response 1  
of Sunday.)

Response 1. *O Jerusalem, thy salvation shall come quickly; wherefore art thou consumed with grief? is there any counsellor in thee? because sorrow hath changed thee. I will save thee and deliver thee, fear not.*

For I am the Lord thy God, the Holy one of Israel, thy Redeemer.

*I will save thee and deliver thee, fear not.*

Benediction 2.—2.

Lesson 2. *Isaiah xix. 3—6.*

(As Response 2  
of Sunday.)

Response 2. *The Lord my God shall come and all the Saints with Thee, and in that day there shall be great light; and it shall be in that day that living waters shall go out from Jerusalem, and the Lord shall be king for ever: over all the earth.*

Behold, the Lord shall come with power, and His kingdom shall be in His hand, and dominion and sovereignty.

*Over all the earth.*

Benediction 3.—3.

Lesson 3. *Isaiah xix. 11—13.*

(As Response 3  
of Sunday.)

Response 3. *City of Jerusalem, weep thou not, for the Lord has sorrowed for thee; and He shall take from thee all tribulation.*

Behold, the Lord shall come in strength, and His arm shall rule.

*And He shall take, &c.*

(End.)

2d Friday.

Benediction 1—4.

Lesson 1. *Isaiah xxiv. 1—3.*

(As Response 4  
of Sunday.)

Response 1. *Behold, the Lord shall come, our defender, the Holy one of Israel, having the crown of His kingdom upon Him.*

And He shall reign from sea to sea, and from the river even unto the ends of the earth.

*Having the crown of His kingdom upon Him.*

Benediction 2.—5.

Lesson 2. *Isaiah xxiv. 4—6.*

(As Response 5  
of Sunday.)

Response 2. *As a mother comforteth her sons, so will I comfort you, saith the Lord; and from Jerusalem, the city I have chosen, shall succour come to you; and you shall see and your heart shall rejoice.*

I will give to Zion salvation, and to Jerusalem, My glory, *And you shall see, &c.*

*Benediction 3.—6.*

*Lesson 3. Isaiah xxiv. 7—15.*

(*As Response 6  
of Sunday.*)

*Response 3. O Jerusalem, thou shalt plant thy vine upon thy mountains; leap for joy, for the day of the Lord shall come; arise, O Zion, be turned unto the Lord thy God; rejoice and be glad, O Jacob: for thy Saviour shall come in the midst of the nations.*

Rejoice greatly, O daughter of Zion, shout, O daughter of Jerusalem.

*For thy Saviour, &c.*

(*End.*)

*2d Saturday.*

*Benediction 1.—7 †.*

*Lesson 1. Isaiah xxv. 1—4.*

(*As Response 7  
of Sunday.*)

*Response 1. The Lord shall come from Samaria to the eastern gate, and shall come to Bethlehem, walking upon the waters of the redemption of Judah; then shall every man be saved, for, behold, He cometh.*

And His throne shall be prepared in mercy, and He shall sit on it in truth.

*Then shall every man be saved, for, behold, He cometh.*

*Benediction 2.—8.*

*Lesson 2. Isaiah xxiv. 4.—7.*

(*As Response 8  
of Sunday.*)

*Response 2. Make haste, and tarry not, O Lord: and deliver Thy people.*

Come, O Lord, and do not tarry: absolve thy people from their iniquities.

*And deliver Thy people.*

(*As Response 9  
of Sunday and 3 of  
Wednesday.*)

*Benediction 3.—9.*

*Lesson 3. Isaiah xxv. 8—12.*

*Response 3. Behold, the Lord shall come, &c. (End.)*

*3d Monday*

*Benediction 1.—1.*

(*As Response 1  
of Sunday.*)

*Lesson 1. Isaiah xxviii. 1.—3.*

*Response 1. Behold the Lord shall appear, &c.*

*Benediction 2.—2.*

(*As Response 2  
of Sunday.*)

*Lesson 2. Isaiah xxviii. 4—7.*

*Response 2. O Bethlehem, city, &c.*

*Benediction 3.—3.*

*Lesson 3. Isaiah xxviii. 16.—18.*

(As Response 3  
of Sunday.)

Response 3. *He that shall come, will come, &c. (End.)*

3d Tuesday.

Benediction 1.—4.

Lesson 1. *Isaiah xxx. 18—20.*

(As Response 4  
of Sunday.)

Response 1. *Weep not, O Egypt, &c.*

Benediction 2.—5.

(As Response 5  
of Sunday.)

Lesson 5. *Isaiah xxx. 22—25.*

Response 2. *Her time is well nigh, &c.*

Benediction 3.—6.

(As Response 6  
of Sunday.)

Lesson 3. *Isaiah xxx. 26—28.*

Response 3. *The Lord shall descend as the rain, &c. (End.)*

3d Wednesday.

Benediction 1.—7.

Lesson 1. *Luke i. 26—38.*

Homily of St.  
Ambrose.

(Lib. 2 in Lu-  
cam.)

(for Ember day.)

Divine mysteries lie hid, nor is it easy, as the prophet says, for any one among men to know the purpose of God. Yet, from the other deeds and precepts of the Lord and Saviour, we are able to understand that it was a matter of solicitous purpose that she should be chosen above others to bear the Lord, who was already betrothed to a husband.

For why did she not conceive before she was betrothed? probably, lest it should be said that she had conceived in adultery.

Response 1. *O Jerusalem, that bringest good tidings, lift up thy voice, be not afraid; say unto the cities of Judah, Behold your God! Behold the Lord God will come whom we did wait for.*

O Sion, which bringest good tidings; get thee up into the high mountains, lift up thy voice with strength.

*Say unto the cities of Judah, Behold your God! Behold, the Lord God will come whom we did wait for.*

Benediction 2.—8.

Lesson 2.

(Homily con-  
tinued.)

And the angel came in unto her. Recognize the virgin in her behaviour, in her modesty, in the annunciation, in the mystery. To be frightened belongs to virgins; and to dread the approach, to feel abashed at the address of man. Let woman learn to imitate the settled resolve of modesty herein displayed. Alone was she in the inner chamber, seen by no man, found by the angel alone. Alone without companion,

alone without witness, lest she should be insulted by any unworthy voice, she is saluted by the angel.

*Response 2. There shall come a star out of Jacob, and a sceptre shall arise out of Israel, and shall smite through the princes of Moab: and all the earth shall be His possession.*

All kings shall fall down before Him, all nations shall do Him service.

*And all the earth, &c.*

*Benediction 3.—9.*

*(Homily continued.)*

*Lesson 3.* For the mystery of so high a message was to be divulged by the mouth, not of man, but of an Angel. To-day is it first heard; The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee. It is heard, it is believed. Lastly she says, Behold the handmaid of the Lord; be it unto me according to thy word. Observe her humility, observe her devotion. She calls herself the handmaid, who is chosen to be the mother of the Lord; nor is she elated by the sudden promise.

*Response 3. The Lord Almighty shall soon come; and His name shall be called Emmanuel.*

Righteousness shall arise in His days, and abundance of peace.

*And His name, &c.*

*(End.)*

*3d Thursday.*

*Benediction 1—1.*

*Lesson 1. Isaiah xxxiii. 1, 2.*

*Response 1. The Lord shall go forth and fight against the nations; and His feet shall stand in that day upon the mount of Olives, towards the east.*

And He shall be exalted above the hills, and all nations shall flow unto Him.

*And His feet, &c.*

*Benediction 2.—2.*

*Lesson 2. Isaiah xxxiii. 3—6.*

*Response 2. The forerunner is for us entered, a Lamb without spot; made an high priest for ever and ever, after the order of Melchizedek.*

He is the king of righteousness, and of His generation there is no end.

*Made an high priest, &c.*

*Benediction 3.—3.*

*Lesson 3. Isaiah xxxiii. 14—17.*

*Response 3. The Gentiles shall see Thy righteousness,*

*and all kings Thy glory : and Thou shalt be called by a new name, which the mouth of the Lord shall name.*

Thou shalt also be a crown of glory in the hand of the Lord, and a royal diadem in the hand of thy God.

*And Thou shalt be called, &c. (End.)*

*3d Friday.*

*Homily of St.*

*Ambrose, Lib.*

*2 in Luc.*

*(For Ember day.)*

*Benediction 1.—7.*

*Lesson 1. Luke i. 39—45.*

Those who exact faith, are used to give grounds for it. Accordingly the angel when announcing what was hidden to give grounds for faith, by the precedent of the elder and barren woman, announced the conception of the Virgin, by way of declaring that with God all is possible whatsoever He will. Mary, on hearing this, not as incredulous at the heavenly voice, nor as uncertain as to the message, nor as doubtful of the precedent, but as joyful from her resolve, religious by her calling, speedy for joy, proceeded into the mountainous country. Whither indeed should she hasten, who was filled with God, but to what is upward ?

*Response 1. Send ye the Lamb to the Ruler of the land, from Sela to the wilderness, unto the mount of the daughter of Sion.*

O Lord, show Thy mercy upon us, and grant us Thy salvation.

*From Sela to the wilderness, unto the mount of the daughter of Sion.*

*Benediction 2.—8.*

*(Homily continued.)*

*Lesson 2.* Learn hence also, ye holy women, what attention ye should pay to your relations who are with child. Mary, who before lived in solitude in the inner chambers, was not deterred from going abroad by her virgin modesty, nor from her eagerness by the mountainous journey, nor from her dutifulness by its length. A virgin leaves her home and goes into the mountains with haste, a virgin mindful of her duty, unmindful of the hardships, called not by her sex, but by affection. Learn hence, O virgins, not to go about from house to house, not to loiter in public places, not to talk freely in society. Mary, loitering at home, in haste when abroad, abode for three months with her kinswoman.

*Response 2. Drop down ye heavens from above, and let the skies pour down righteousness ; let the earth open and bring forth salvation.*



Send ye the Lamb to the Ruler of the land, from Sela to the wilderness, unto the mount of the daughter of Sion.

*Let the earth, &c.*

*Benediction 3.—9.*

*Homily con-  
tinued.*

*Lesson 3.* Ye have been taught, O virgins, the modesty of Mary, observe the humility. She came as kinswoman to her next of kin, as junior to her elder; nor came alone, but first saluted her. For it beseems a virgin, the purer she is, to be the more humble also. Let her be used to defer to her seniors. Let her be a pattern of humility, who has taken the profession of chastity. Here too is a rule of doctrine, as well as a pattern of piety. For let it be considered that the superior comes to the inferior that the inferior may be aided: Mary to Elizabeth, Christ to the Baptist.

*Response 3.* *The fields of the desert have brought forth the plant of the odour of Israel, for behold, our God shall come with strength: and His brightness with Him.*

Out of Sion the perfection of beauty our God shall manifest Himself.

*And His brightness with Him. (End.)*

*3d Saturday.*

*Benediction 1.—7.*

*Lesson 1.* *Luke iii. 1—3.*

*Homily of Pope  
Gregory in  
Evang. 20.  
(For Ember  
day.)*

The time when the forerunner of our Redeemer received the office of preaching, is marked by mention of the Roman Emperor, and the Kings of Judea. For, whereas he came to proclaim Him, who was to redeem some from Judea and many from the heathen, therefore, the date of his preaching is marked by the ruler of the Gentiles and the governor of the Jews. And whereas heathenism was to be brought in, and Judea scattered for the guilt of its misbelief, the very description of the earthly sovereign signifies this; the prince of the Roman state being described as one, of Judea as fourfold.

*Response 1.* *There shall come forth a rod out of the stem of Jesse, and a branch shall grow out of His roots; and righteousness shall be the girdle of His loins, and faithfulness the girdle of His reins.*

And the Spirit of the Lord shall rest upon Him; the spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and might.

*And righteousness shall be, &c.*

*Benediction 2.—8.*

*Homily continued.*

*Lesson 2.* And indeed, the voice our Redeemer has declared, Every kingdom divided against itself shall be brought to desolation. It is plain, therefore, that Judea had come to the end of its kingdom, being parted among so many kings. Also, it is suitably noted what priests, as well as what kings, were in power at the time: and, whereas John the Baptist was proclaiming Him who was at once king and priest, Luke the Evangelist marked the date of that proclamation by mention of the kingdom and the priesthood.

*Response 2.* *There shall be a root of Jesse, which shall rise to judge the Gentiles: on Him shall the Gentiles trust: and His name shall be blessed for evermore.*

The kings shall shut their mouths at Him; the Gentiles shall implore Him,

*And His name, &c.*

*Benediction 3.—9.*

*Homily continued.*

*Lesson 3.* And he came into all the regions of Jordan, proclaiming the baptism of repentance for the remission of sins. It is plain to every reader, that John not only proclaimed the baptism of repentance, but also administered it to some, yet he could not administer it for the remission of sins. For the remission of sins is imparted to us only in Christ's baptism. The words then are observable; *proclaiming* the baptism of repentance for the remission of sins. He proclaimed that cleansing Baptism which he could not administer: that, as he forerun the Incarnate Word of the Father by the word of proclamation, so he might forerun also the baptism of repentance, in which sins are forgiven, with his own baptism, by which sins could not be forgiven.

*Response 3.* *Come, O Lord, and do not tarry; absolve Thy people from their sins; and recover the scattered ones into their own land.*

O Lord raise up Thy power, and come to save us.

*And recover, &c. (End.)*

*4th Monday.*

*Benediction 1.—1.*

*Lesson 1.* *Isaiah xli. 8—10*

*(As Response 1 of Sunday.)*

*Response 1.* *Blow the trumpet, &c.*

*Benediction 2.—2.*

*Lesson 2.* *Isaiah xli. 11—13.*

*(As Response 2 of Sunday.)*

*Response 2.* *The sceptre shall not depart, &c.*

*Benediction 3.—3.*

*Lesson 3. Isaiah xli. 14—16.*

(*As Response 3  
of Sunday.*)

*Response 3. I must decrease, &c.*

(*End.*)

4th Tuesday.

*Benediction 1.—4.*

*Lesson 1. Isaiah xlii. 1—4.*

(*As Response 4  
of Sunday.*)

*Response 1. Unto us as a child, &c.*

*Benediction 2.—5.*

*Lesson 2. Isaiah xlii. 5—7.*

(*As Response 5  
of Sunday.*)

*Response 2. Behold the fulness of time, &c.*

*Benediction 3.—6.*

*Lesson 3. Isaiah xlii. 10—13.*

(*As Response 6  
of Sunday.*)

*Response 3. O virgin of Israel, &c.*

(*End.*)

4th Wednesday.

*Benediction 1.—7†.*

*Lesson 1. Isaiah li. 1—3.*

(*As Response 7  
of Sunday.*)

*Response 1. I have sworn, &c.*

*Benediction 2.—8.*

*Lesson 2. Isaiah li. 4—6.*

(*As Response 8  
of Sunday.*)

*Response 2. And so will not we, &c.*

*Benediction 3.—9.*

*Lesson 3. Isaiah li. 7, 8.*

(*As Response 9  
of Sunday.*)

*Response 3. Consider how great, &c.*

(*End.*)

4th Thursday.

*Benediction 1.—1.*

*Lesson 1. Isaiah lxiv. 1—4.*

(*As Response 1  
of Sunday and  
Response 1 of  
Monday.*)

*Response 1. Blow the trumpet, &c.*

*Benediction 2.—2.*

*Lesson 2. Isaiah lxiv. 5—7.*

(*As Response 2  
of Sunday and  
Response 2 of  
Monday.*)

*Response 2. The sceptre shall not depart, &c.*

*Benediction 3.—3.*

*Lesson 3. Isaiah lxiv. 8—11.*

(*As Response 3  
of Sunday and  
Response 3 of  
Monday.*)

*Response 3. I must decrease, &c.*

(*End.*)

4th Friday.

*Benediction 1.—4.*

(As Response 4  
of Sunday and  
Response 1 of  
Tuesday.)

Lesson 1. *Isaiah lxvi. 5—8.*

Response 1. *Unto us as a child, &c.*

Benediction 2.—5.

Lesson 2. *Isaiah lxvi. 9—12.*

Response 2. *Behold the fulness of time, &c.*

(As Response 5  
of Sunday and  
Response 2 of  
Tuesday.)

Benediction 3.—6.

Lesson 3. *Isaiah lxvi. 13—16.*

Response 3. *O virgin of Israel, &c.* (End.)

(As Response 6  
of Sunday and  
Response 3 of  
Tuesday.)

*Christmas Eve, &c. &c.*

*Christmas Day, &c. &c.*

---

## LAUDS.

O God, make speed, &c.

*O Lord, make haste, &c.*

Glory be, &c. Amen. Hallelujah.

*Antiphons and Psalms.*

1st, 2d, & 3d  
Monday.

4th Monday (the 19th.)

(o) Have mercy.

(o) Behold, the Lord will come, the King of the whole earth.

(1) *Psalm 51.*

(o) Have mercy  
on me, O God.

(o) Behold, the Lord will come, the King of the whole earth; blessed are they that are ready to meet Him.

(p) Consider.

(p) When the Son of man cometh.

(2) *Psalm 5.*

(p) Consider my  
meditation.

(p) When the Son of man cometh, will He find faith on the earth?

(q) O God, Thou  
art my God.

(q) Behold, the fulness of time is now come.

(3) *Psalm 63 & 67.*

(q) O God, Thou  
art my God,  
early will I seek  
Thee.

(q) Behold, the fulness of time is now come, in the which God sent forth His Son to the earth.

(r) Thine anger.

(r) With joy shall ye draw water.

(4) Song of *Isaiah. (Isaiah xii.)*

(r) Thine anger  
is turned away,  
and Thou com-  
fortedst me.

(r) With joy shall ye draw water out of the wells of sal-  
vation.

- (s) O praise the Lord. (s) The Lord shall go forth of His holy place.  
 (5) *Psalm* 148—150.
- (s) O praise the Lord of heaven. (s) The Lord shall go forth of His holy place, He shall come to save His people. (go on (t) )

1st, 2d & 3d Tuesday. 4th Tuesday, (the 20th.)

- (o) Cleanse me. (o) Drop down, ye heavens.  
 (1) *Psalm* 51.
- (o) Cleanse me from my sin. (o) Drop down, ye heavens, from above, and let the skies pour down righteousness; let the earth open and bring forth salvation.

- (p) The help. (p.) Send ye the Lamb.  
 (2) *Psalm* 43.
- (p) The help of my countenance and my God. (p) Send ye the Lamb to the Ruler of the land, from Sela in the wilderness, unto the mount of the daughter of Zion.

- (q) Early. (q) That Thy way may be known.  
 (3) *Psalm* 63 & 67.
- (q) Early will I seek Thee, my God. (q) That Thy way may be known upon earth, Thy saving health among all nations.

- (r) Save us O Lord. (r) Reward, O Lord.  
 (4) *Song of Hezekiah.* (Isaiah xxxviii.)
- (r) Save us, O Lord, all the days of our life. (r) Reward, O Lord, them that wait for Thee, that Thy prophets be found faithful.

- (s) Praise Him. (s) The Law was given by Moses.  
 (5) *Psalm* 148—150.
- (s) Praise Him, all ye angels of His. (s) The Law was given by Moses, but grace and truth came by Jesus Christ. (go on (t) )

1st, 2d & 3d Wednesday. 4th Wednesday, (the 21st, St. Thomas's.)

- (o) Wash me thoroughly. (o) This is My commandment, that ye love one another as I have loved you.
- (1) *Psalm* 51. (1) *Psalm* 94.
- (o) Wash me thoroughly from my wickedness. (o) This is My commandment, that ye love one another as I have loved you.

(p) Thou, O  
Lord.

(2) *Psalm 65.*

(p) Thou, O  
Lord, art prais-  
ed in Sion.

(q) My lips  
shall praise  
Thee.

(3) *Ps. 63 & 67.*

(q) My lips  
shall praise  
Thee as long as  
I live, my God.

(r) The Lord  
shall judge.

(4) *Song of  
Hannah* (1 Sam.  
ii.)

(r) The Lord  
shall judge the  
ends of the  
earth.

(s) Praise Him.

(5) *Ps. 148-150.*

(s) Praise Him,  
all ye heavens.

1st, 2d & 3d  
*Thursday.*

(o) Against  
Thee only have  
I sinned.

(o) Against  
Thee only have  
I sinned, have  
mercy upon me,  
O Lord.

(p) Lord.

(p) Lord, Thou  
hast been our  
refuge.

(q) Have I not  
thought.

(q) Have I not  
thought upon  
Thee when I  
was waking.

(r) I will sing.

(r) I will sing  
unto the Lord,  
for he hath tri-  
umphed glori-  
ously.

(p) Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay  
down his life for his friends.

(2) *Psalm 100.*

(p) Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay  
down his life for his friends.

(q) Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command  
you, saith the Lord.

(3) *Psalm 63 & 67.*

(q) Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command  
you, saith the Lord.

(r) Blessed are the peace-makers, blessed are the pure in  
heart, for they shall see God.

(4) *Song of the Three Children. (Benedicite Omnia Opera.)*

(r) Blessed are the peace-makers, blessed are the pure in  
heart, for they shall see God.

(s) In your patience possess ye your souls.

(5) *Psalm 148-150.*

(s) In your patience possess ye your souls.

4th *Thursday* (the 22d.)

(o) The Lord Almighty shall come.

(1) *Psalm 51.*

(o) The Lord Almighty shall come to save His people.

(p) Turn Thee, Lord.

(2) *Psalm 90.*

(p) Turn Thee, Lord, a little while, and delay not to come  
to Thy servants.

(q) The Lord who is to reign.

(3) *Psalm 63 & 67.*

(q) The Lord who is to reign shall come from Sion;  
Emmanuel is His mighty name.

(r) He is my God.

(4) *Song of Moses. (Exod. xv.)*

(r) He is my God, and I will prepare him an habitation;  
my father's God, and I will exalt Him.

- (s) O praise God. (s) The Lord is our lawgiver.  
 (5) *Psalm* 148—150.
- (s) O praise God in His holiness. (s) The Lord is our lawgiver, the Lord is our king: He will come and save us.

1st, 2nd, & 3rd Friday. 4th Friday, (the 23d.)

- (o) Stablish me. (o) Stand still.  
 (1) *Psalm* 51.
- (o) Stablish me with Thy free spirit. (o) Stand still, and ye shall see the salvation of the Lord.
- (p) Harken unto me. (p) To Thee, O Lord, have I lift up my soul.  
 (2) *Psalm* 143.
- (p) Harken unto me for Thy truth and righteousness' sake. (p) To Thee, O Lord, have I lift up my soul; come, O Lord, and deliver me, for I flee unto thee.
- (q) Shew us the light. (q) Come, O Lord, and do not tarry.  
 (3) *Psalm* 63 and 67.
- (q) Shew us the light of Thy countenance. (q) Come, O Lord, and do not tarry: absolve Thy people Israel from their iniquities.

- (r) O Lord. (r) God shall come from Lebanon.  
 (4) *Song of Habakkuk* (Hab. iii.)
- (r) O Lord, I have heard Thy speech, and was afraid. (r) God shall come from Lebanon, and His brightness shall be as a stream.
- (s) Praise Him. (s) But I will look towards the Lord.  
 (5) *Psalm* 148—150.
- (s) Praise Him in the cymbals and dances. (s) But I will look towards the Lord, and will wait for God my Saviour.

1st and 2nd Saturday. 3rd Saturday (the 17th.)

- (o) O be favourable. (o) The prophets announced.  
 (1) *Psalm* 51.
- (o) O be favourable and gracious. (o) The prophets announced that the Saviour should be born of the Virgin Mary.
- (p) It is a good thing. (p) The Spirit of the Lord.  
 (2) *Psalm* 92.
- (p) It is a good thing to give thanks unto the Lord. (p) The Spirit of the Lord is upon me; He hath sent me to preach good tidings to the poor.

- (q) All the ends of the world. (q) For Sion's sake will I not hold my peace, until the righteousness thereof goeth forth as brightness.
- (q) All the ends of the world shall fear Him. (q) For Sion's sake will I not hold my peace, until the righteousness thereof goeth forth as brightness.
- (r) Ascribe ye greatness. (r) My speech shall drop as the rain.
- (r) Ascribe ye greatness unto our God. (r) My speech shall drop as the rain, and our God shall come down upon us as the dew.
- (s) Praise Him. (s) Tell the people, and say.
- (s) Praise Him upon the well-tuned cymbals. (s) Tell the people, and say, Behold God our Saviour shall come.
- (t) *Text.*  
*Isa. ii. 3.*  
(for every day.) Come ye, and let us go up to the mountain of the Lord, to the house of the God of Jacob; and He will teach us of His ways, and we will walk in His paths; for out of Zion shall go forth the law, and the Word of the Lord from Jerusalem.
- (u) *Hymn.*  
(v) *Verse and Response.*  
(for every day.) En clara vox redarguit.  
The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord.  
*Make his paths straight.*
- (w) *Antiphon of the Benedictus.*  
1st Monday. The angel of the Lord made announcement to Mary, and she conceived of the Holy Ghost. Hallelujah.  
1st Tuesday. Before they came together, Mary was found with child of the Holy Ghost. Hallelujah.  
1st Wednesday. Out of Sion shall go forth the law, and the Word of the Lord from Jerusalem.  
1st Thursday. Blessed art thou among women, and blessed is the fruit of thy womb.  
1st Friday. Behold God and man of the house of David shall come to sit on the throne. Hallelujah.  
1st Saturday. O Sion, be not afraid: behold thy God shall come. Hallelujah.  
2nd Monday. The Almighty Lord shall come from heaven, and in His hand is honour and dominion.  
2nd Tuesday. The Lord shall arise upon thee, O Jerusalem; and His glory shall be seen in thee.  
2nd Wednesday. Behold I send My messenger, who shall prepare My way before Thee.



*2nd Thursday.* Thou art He that should come, O Lord, whom we look for, to save Thy people.

*2nd Friday.* Say ye, strengthen the weak-hearted; behold our Lord God shall come.

*2nd Saturday.* The Lord shall lift up an ensign among the nations, and shall gather together the dispersed of Israel.

*3rd Monday.* A rod shall go forth out of the root of Jesse, and all the earth shall be filled with the glory of the Lord; and all flesh shall see the salvation of God.

*3rd Tuesday.* Thou, Bethlehem, in the land of Judah, art not the least among the princes of Judah; for out of thee shall come forth a governor, that shall rule my people Israel.

*3rd Wednesday.* The Angel Gabriel was sent to a Virgin, Mary, who was espoused to Joseph.

*3rd Thursday.* Watch ye in heart, for the Lord our God is at hand.

*3rd Friday.* As soon as the voice of thy salutation sounded in mine ears, the babe leaped in my womb for joy. Hallelujah.

*3rd Saturday.* How shall this be, Angel of God, seeing I know not a man? Hear thou, Mary the Virgin, the Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow thee.

*4th Monday.* The Lord saith, Repent ye, for the kingdom of heaven is at hand.

*4th Tuesday.* Awake, awake, put on strength, O arm of the Lord.

*4th Wednesday.* Be afraid, for on the fifth day our Lord shall come to you.  
(the 21st.)

*4th Thursday.* I will place salvation in Sion, and in Jerusalem my glory.

*4th Friday.* Behold all things are accomplished, which were said by the Angel concerning Mary the Virgin.

*Christmas Eve, &c.*

(x) *Collect.* 1st Week. Raise up we beseech Thee, &c.

(the same as in the four Sundays respectively.) 2nd Week. Stir up, O Lord, &c.

(Except on the three Ember days, when it is as follows:) 3rd Week. Give ear, we beseech Thee, &c.

4th Week. Raise up, we beseech Thee, &c.

(x) *Collect for Ember*

*Wednesday.*

Grant to us, we beseech Thee, Almighty God, that when the festival of our redemption cometh, it may both furnish us with aids for this present life, and impart to us the rewards of everlasting bliss, through the Lord, &c.

*Friday.* Raise up, we beseech Thee, O Lord, Thy power, and come, that they who rely upon Thy mercy may be speedily delivered from all adversity, who livest and reignest, &c.

*Saturday.* O God, who seest that we are afflicted by our own corruption, mercifully grant that we may be consoled by Thy visitation, who livest, &c.

## PRIME, THIRD, SIXTH, NINTH.

*The Service is the same as on the respective Sundays, except that from the 17th inclusive, the Antiphons in the four Services are taken successively from the 1st, 2d, 3d, and 5th Antiphons at Lauds, on the same day ;*

(o) (p) (q) (s)

*That in Prime, there is a Psalm according to the day of the week, instead of the Benedicite, (vid. § 1. supra.) the Athanasian Creed is omitted, and the Text (c) is Love the truth and peace, saith the Lord of Hosts, instead of To the King, &c.*

*And in the Third, Sixth, and Ninth, the Collect (nn, ss, xx) is the same as at the Lauds (x) of each day ; and that the Text for every day is as follows :*

*At the Third*

(ll)

Behold the days come, saith the Lord, that I will raise unto David a righteous branch, and a king shall reign and prosper, and shall execute judgment and justice in the earth.

*At the Sixth*

(qq)

In his days Judah shall be saved and Israel shall dwell safely ; and this is His name whereby He shall be called, the Lord our righteousness.

*At the Ninth*

(vv)

*(and on the 21st at Prime also, instead of the Lectio Brevis.)*

Her time is near to come, and her days shall not be prolonged ; for the Lord will have mercy on Jacob, and will yet choose Israel.

## VESPERS.

	<i>Monday.</i>	<i>Tuesday.</i>	<i>Wednesday.</i>	<i>Thursday.</i>	<i>Friday.</i>	<i>Saturday.</i>
(yy) <i>Ant.</i>	He hath inclined.	We will go into	They shall not be ashamed when they speak	And all	Even before the gods will	Blessed is the
<i>Psalm</i> (1) (yy) <i>Ant.</i>	116 ( <i>part</i> ) His ear unto me.	122 the house of the Lord.	127 with their enemies in the gate.	132 his trouble.	138 I sing praise unto Thee.	144 Lord my strength.
(zz) <i>Ant.</i>	I believed: and therefore	O thou that dwellest	Blessed are all they	Behold how good and joyful a thing it is,	O Lord, thou hast	Every day will I
<i>Psalm</i> (2) (zz) <i>Ant.</i>	116 ( <i>part</i> ) will I speak.	123 in the heavens have mercy upon us.	128 that fear the Lord.	133 brethren, to dwell together in unity.	139 searched me out and known me.	145 give thanks unto Thee.
(aaa) <i>Ant.</i>	Praise the Lord	Our help is in the	Many a time have	Whatever the Lord	Preserve me from	While I live will
<i>Psalm</i> (3) (aaa) <i>Ant.</i>	117 all ye heathen.	124 name of the Lord.	129 they fought against me from my youth up.	135 pleased, that did He.	140 the wicked man.	146 I praise the Lord.
(bbb) <i>Ant.</i>	I called upon the Lord,	Do good, O Lord, unto	Out of the deep have I	For His mercy	Lord, I call upon Thee:	A joyful and pleasant thing
<i>Psalm</i> (4) (bbb) <i>Ant.</i>	120 and He heard me.	125 those who are good, and turn our hearts.	130 called unto Thee, O Lord.	136 endureth for ever.	141 haste Thou unto me.	147 ( <i>part</i> ) it is to be thankful.
(ccc) <i>Ant.</i>	From whence cometh	Then were we like	O Israel, trust	Sing us one of	Thou art my portion	Praise the Lord,
<i>Psalm</i> (5) (ccc) <i>Ant.</i>	121 my help.	126 unto them that dream.	131 in the Lord.	137 the songs of Sion.	142 in the land of the living.	147 ( <i>part</i> ) O Jerusalem.

(ddd) *Text.*  
(On Saturdays the Text is that of Lauds and Vespers of the following Sundays.)

The Sceptre shall not depart from Judah, nor a lawgiver from between his feet, until Shiloh come, and unto Him shall the gathering of the people, &c.

(eee) *Hymn.*

Creator alme siderum, &c.

(fff) *V. & R.*

Drop down, ye heavens, from above, and let the skies pour down righteousness.

*Let the earth open and bring forth salvation.*

(ggg)

*Antiphon of the Magnificat.*

*1st Monday.*

Lift up thine eyes, O Jerusalem, and behold the greatness of thy King. Behold thy Saviour cometh to loose thee from thy chains.

*1st Tuesday.*

Seek ye the Lord while He may be found; call upon Him while He is near. Hallelujah.

*1st Wednesday.*

One that is mightier than I shall come after Me, whose shoes' latchet I am not worthy to unloose.

*1st Thursday.*

I will wait for the Lord my Saviour, and will attend upon Him while He is near. Hallelujah.

*1st Friday.*

Out of Egypt have I called My Son. He shall come to save His people.

*1st Saturday.*

Come, O Lord, to visit us in peace, that we may rejoice before Thee with a perfect heart.

*2nd Monday.*

Behold the king, the Lord of the earth shall come; and He shall take away the yoke of our captivity.

*2nd Tuesday.*

The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make the paths of our God straight.

*2nd Wednesday.*

O Sion, thou shalt be renewed, and thou shalt see thy Holy One, who is to come unto thee.

*2nd Thursday.*

He who shall come after me, was in being before me: whose sandals I am not worthy to unloose.

*2nd Friday.*

O sing unto the Lord a new song, His praise is from the ends of the earth.

*2nd Saturday.*

There was no God made before Me, neither shall there be after Me; for every knee shall bow to Me, and every tongue confess to God.

*3rd Monday.*

All generations shall call me blessed; because God hath regarded the low estate of His handmaiden.

*3rd Tuesday.*

Awake, awake, stand up, O Jerusalem, loose the chains off thy neck, O captive daughter of Sion.

*3rd Wednesday.*

Behold the handmaid of the Lord; be it unto me according to thy word.

*3rd Thursday.*

Rejoice ye with Jerusalem, and leap for joy in her all ye that love her for ever.

*3rd Friday.*

This was the witness of John; He that cometh after me, was in being before me.

*3rd Saturday,*

(the 17th.)  
[*O Sapientia.*]  
(*This is the first of a series of*

O eternal Wisdom, which proceedest from the mouth of the Most High, reaching from one end of creation unto the other, mightily and harmoniously disposing all things, come Thou to teach us the way of understanding.

*Majores Antiphonæ, beginning on this day. They are said whole both before and after the Magnificat.)*

4th Monday (19) O Root of Jesse, who art placed for a sign of the people, before whom kings shall shut their mouths, whom the Gentiles shall supplicate; come Thou to deliver us, do not tarry.

(Vide 4th Sunday for the intervening Antiphon.)

4th Tuesday (20) O Key of David and Sceptre of the house of Israel, who openest and none shutteth, who shuttest and none openeth, come Thou, and bring forth the captive from the house of bondage, who sitteth in darkness and in the shadow of death.

4th Wed. (21) O rising Brightness of the Everlasting Light and Sun of Righteousness, come Thou and enlighten those who sit in darkness and in the shadow of death.

4th Thurs. (22) O King and the Desire of all nations, and chief Cornerstone, who makest two to be one, come Thou and save man whom Thou formedst from the clay.

4th Friday (23) O Emmanuel, our King and Lawgiver, the gatherer of the people and their Saviour, come Thou to save us, O Lord our God.

*Christmas Eve, &c.*

(hhh) Collect.)  
(The same as on  
the respective  
Sundays: each  
Saturday be-  
longing to the  
Sunday follow-  
ing.)

1st week. Raise up, we beseech Thee, &c.

2d week. Stir up, O Lord, &c.

3d week. Give ear, we beseech Thee, &c.

4th week. Raise up, we beseech Thee, &c.

OXFORD,

*The Feast of St. John the Baptist.*

---

ERRATUM.

In pages 35, 36, 41, 42, 45, 46, 63, 82, the words "Jube, Domine, benedicere" are translated by mistake, "Sir, pray for a blessing," *instead of*, "Sir, be pleased to bless us."

---

[FOURTH EDITION.]

*These Tracts are sold at the price of 2d. for each sheet, (except No. 75) or 7s. for 50 copies.*

LONDON: PRINTED FOR J. G. F. & J. RIVINGTON,  
ST. PAUL'S CHURCH YARD, AND WATERLOO PLACE.

1840.

---

GILBERT & RIVINGTON, Printers, St. John's Square, London.

*The following Works, all in single volumes, or pamphlets, and recently published, will be found more or less to uphold or elucidate the general doctrines inculcated in these Tracts:—*

- Bp. Taylor on Repentance, by Hale.—*Rivingtons*.  
Bp. Taylor's Golden Grove.—*Parker, Oxford*.  
Vincentii Lirinensis Commonitorium, with translation.—*Parker, Oxford*.  
Pusey on Cathedrals and Clerical Education.—*Roake and Varty*.  
Hook's University Sermons.—*Talboys, Oxford*.  
Pusey on Baptism (*published separately*).—*Rivingtons*.  
Newman's Sermons, 4 vols.—*Rivingtons*.  
Newman on Romanism, &c.—*Rivingtons*.  
The Christian Year.—*Parker, Oxford*.  
Lyra Apostolica.—*Rivingtons*.  
Perceval on the Roman Schism.—*Leslie*.  
Bishop Jebb's Pastoral Instructions.—*Duncan*.  
Dodsworth's Lectures on the Church.—*Burns*.  
Newman on Suffragan Bishops.—*Rivingtons*.  
Keble's Sermon on Tradition.—*Rivingtons*.  
Memoir of Ambrose Bonwick.—*Parker, Oxford*.  
Hymns for Children on the Lord's Prayer.—*Rivingtons*.  
Law's first and second Letters to Hoadly.—*Rivingtons*.  
Bp. Andrews' Devotions. Latin and Greek.—*Pickering*.  
Hook's Family Prayers.—*Rivingtons*.  
Herbert's Poems and Country Pastor.  
Evans's Scripture Biography.—*Rivingtons*.  
Le Bas' Life of Archbishop Laud.—*Rivingtons*.  
Jones (of Nayland) on the Church.  
Bp. Bethell on Baptismal Regeneration.—*Rivingtons*.  
Bp. Beveridge's Sermons on the Ministry and Ordinances.—*Parker, Oxford*.  
Bp. Jolly on the Eucharist.  
Fulford's Sermons on the Ministry, &c.—*Rivingtons*.  
Rose's Sermons on the Ministry.—*Rivingtons*.  
A Catechism on the Church.—*Parker, Oxford*.  
Russell's Judgment of the Anglican Church.—*Baily*.  
Poole's Sermons on the Creed.—*Grant, Edinburgh*.  
Sutton on the Eucharist.—*Parker, Oxford*.  
Leslie on the Regale and Pontificate.—*Leslie*.  
Pusey's Sermon on November 5.—*Rivingtons*.  
Bishop Wilson's Sacra Privata.—*Parker, Oxford*.  
The Cathedral, a Poem.—*Parker, Oxford*.  
Palmer's Ecclesiastical History.—*Burns*.

*Larger Works which may be profitably studied.*

- Bishop Bull's Sermons.—*Parker, Oxford*.  
Bishop Bull's Works.—*University Press*.  
Waterland's Works.—*Do*.  
Wall on Infant Baptism.—*Do*.  
Pearson on the Creed.—*Do*.  
Leslie's Works.—*Do*.  
Bingham's Works.—*Straker, London*.  
Palmer on the Liturgy.—*University Press*.  
Hooker, ed. Keble.—*Do*.  
Palmer on the Church.—*Rivingtons*.

## TRACTS FOR THE TIMES.

## CATENA PATRUM.

## No. II.

TESTIMONY OF WRITERS IN THE LATER ENGLISH CHURCH TO  
THE DOCTRINE OF BAPTISMAL REGENERATION.

---

CONSIDERING the confidence and zeal with which modern and unscriptural views on the subject of Christian Baptism are put forth at the present time, it will not be unseasonable to present the reader with some testimonies from the writings of Anglican Divines in behalf of the doctrine of Baptismal Regeneration. By this doctrine is meant, first, that the Sacrament of Baptism is not a mere *sign* or *promise*, but actually a *means* of grace, an *instrument*, by which, when rightly received, the soul is admitted to the benefits of CHRIST'S Atonement, such as the forgiveness of sin, original and actual, reconciliation to GOD, a new nature, adoption, citizenship in CHRIST'S kingdom, and the inheritance of heaven,—in a word, Regeneration. And next, Baptism is considered to be rightly received, when there is no positive obstacle or hindrance to the reception in the recipient, such as impenitence or unbelief would be in the case of an adult; so that infants are necessarily right recipients of it, as not being yet capable of actual sin. So much as these two positions is certainly held by every one of the authors of the following passages, though it is impossible to bring out their full meaning in such brief extracts, however carefully selected.

There is a variety of questions connected with the subject beyond the two positions above set down, on which the writers under review differ more or less from each other, but not so as in the slightest degree to interfere with their clear and deliberate maintenance of these. Such, for instance, as the following :—

Whether grace be given in and through the water, or only contemporaneously with it. Again, whether Baptism, strictly speaking, *conveys* the blessings annexed to it, or simply *admits* into a state gifted with those blessings, as being the initiatory rite of the covenant of mercy. Or, again, whether or not Baptism, besides washing away past sin, admits into a state in which, for sins henceforth committed, Repentance stands in place of a Sacrament, so as to ensure forgiveness without specific ordinance ; or whether the Holy Eucharist is that ordinance ; or whether the full and explicit absolution of sin after Baptism is altogether put off till the day of judgment. Or, again, there may be difference of opinion as to the state of infants dying unbaptized. Or, again, whether Regeneration is an instantaneous work completed in Baptism, or admits of degrees and growth. Or, again, whether or not the Holy Spirit can utterly desert a soul once inhabited by Him, except to quit it for ever. Or, whether the change in the soul made by Baptism is indelible, for good or for evil ; or may be undone, as if it had never been. Or, how far the enjoyment of the grace attached to it is suspended on the condition of our doing our part in the covenant. All these are questions, far from unimportant, but which do not at present come into consideration ; the one point, maintained in the following extracts, being, that infants are by and at baptism unconditionally translated from a state of wrath into a state of grace and acceptance for CHRIST's sake.



*List of Authors cited.*

- |                |                  |
|----------------|------------------|
| 1. Jewell.     | 22. Scott.       |
| 2. Hooker.     | 23. Jenkin.      |
| 3. Andrews.    | 24. Sherlock.    |
| 4. Donne.      | 25. Wall.        |
| 5. Field.      | 26. Potter.      |
| 6. Jackson.    | 27. Nelson.      |
| 7. Laud.       | 28. Waterland.   |
| 8. Bramhall.   | 29. Kettlewell.  |
| 9. Hammond.    | 30. Hickes.      |
| 10. Taylor.    | 31. Johnson.     |
| 11. Heylin.    | 32. Leslie.      |
| 12. Allestrie. | 33. Wilson.      |
| 13. Barrow.    | 34. Bingham.     |
| 14. Thorndike. | 35. Skelton.     |
| 15. Pearson.   | 36. Horne.       |
| 16. Bull.      | 37. Jones.       |
| 17. Comber.    | 38. Heber.       |
| 18. Ken.       | 39. Jebb.        |
| 19. Patrick.   | 40. Van Mildert. |
| 20. Beveridge. | 41. Mant.        |
| 21. Sharp.     |                  |

N. B. It would be easy to extend this list, were it necessary :  
vid. Cosin's Devotions, Stanhope's Boyle Lectures, &c.

JEWELL, BISHOP.—*Treatise on Sacraments.*

“They (the sacraments) are not bare signs; it were blasphemy so to say. The grace of God doth always work with His sacraments; but we are taught not to seek that grace in the sign, but to assure ourselves by receiving the sign, that it is given us by the thing signified. We are not washed from our sins by the water, we are not fed to eternal life by the bread and wine, but by the precious blood of our Saviour CHRIST, that lieth hid in these sacraments.” p. 263.

For this cause are infants baptized, because they are born in sin, and cannot become spiritual but by this new birth of the water and the Spirit. They are the heirs of the promise; the covenant of God's favour is made unto them. God said to Abraham, “I will establish my covenant between me and thee, and thy seed after thee.” “Therefore,” saith the Apostle, “If the root be holy, so are the branches.” And again, “The unbelieving husband is sanctified by the wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified by the husband; else were your children unclean; but now are they holy.” When the disciples rebuked those that brought little children to CHRIST, that he might touch them, he said, “Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not, for of such is the kingdom of God.” And again, “Their angels always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven,” p. 265.

“The water wherein we are baptized doth not cleanse the soul;” but, “the blood of JESUS CHRIST his Son doth cleanse us from all sin.” Not the water, but the blood of CHRIST reconcileth us unto God, strengtheneth our conscience, and worketh our redemption. We must seek salvation in CHRIST alone, and

not in any outward thing. Hereof saith Cyprian, "Remissio peccatorum, sive per baptismum, sive per alia sacramenta doneatur, proprie Spiritus Sancti est. Verborum solemnitas," &c. "The remission of sins, whether it be given by baptism, or by any other sacraments, does properly appertain to the Holy Ghost. The solemnity of the words, and the invocation of GOD's holy Name, and the outward signs appointed to the ministry of the priest by the institution of the Apostles, work the visible outward sacrament. But touching the substance thereof, it is the Holy Ghost that worketh it." St. Ambrose also saith, "Vidisti fontem, vidisti sacerdotem," &c. "Thou hast seen the water, thou hast seen the priest, thou hast seen those things which thou mightest see with the eyes of thy body, and with such sight as man hath : but those things which work and do the deed of salvation, which no eye can see, thou hast not seen."

"Such a change is made in the sacrament of baptism. Through the power of GOD's working the water is turned into blood. They that be washed in it receive the remission of sins ; their robes are made clean in the blood of the Lamb. The water itself is nothing ; but by the working of GOD's Spirit, the death and merits of our Lord and Saviour CHRIST are thereby assured unto us.

"A figure hereof was given at the Red Sea. The children of Israel passed through in safety ; but Pharaoh and his whole army were drowned. Another figure hereof was given in the ark. The whole world was drowned, but Noah and his family were saved alive. Even so in the fountain of baptism, our spiritual Pharaoh, the devil, is choked : his army, that is, our sins are drowned, and we are saved. The wicked of the world are swallowed in concupiscence and vanities, and we abide safe in the ark : GOD hath chosen us to be a peculiar people to Himself ; we walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit, therefore we are in CHRIST JESUS, and there is now no condemnation unto us.

"Now touching the minister of this sacrament, whether he be a good man or an evil man, godly or godless, an heretic or a Catholic, an idolater or a true worshipper of GOD : the effect is

all one, the value or worthiness of the sacrament dependeth not of man, but of GOD. Man pronounceth the word, but GOD setteth our hearts with grace ; man toucheth or washeth us with water, but GOD maketh us clean by the cross of CHRIST. It is not the minister, but CHRIST Himself which is the Lamb of GOD that taketh away the sins of the world." p. 266.

*Ibid.*—*Reply to M. Harding's Censure*, p. 249.

And forasmuch as these two sacraments, being both of force like, these men [thé Romanists] to advance their fantasies in the one, by comparison so much abase the other : and specially for the better opening of Chrysostom's mind, I think it good, briefly and by the way, somewhat to touch what the old Catholic Fathers have written of God's invisible working in the Sacrament of Baptism. Dionysius generally of all mysteries writeth thus : "Angeli Deum," &c. "The angels being creatures spiritual, so far forth as it is lawful for them, behold GOD, and his godly power. But we are led as we may, by sensible outward tokens," (which he calleth images) "unto the contemplation of heavenly things." The Fathers, in the Council of Nice, say thus : "Baptism must be considered, not with our bodily eyes, but with the eyes of our mind. Thou seest the water ; think thou of the power of GOD, that in the water is hidden. Think thou that the water is full of heavenly fire, and of the sanctification of the Holy Ghost." Chrysostom, speaking likewise of baptism, saith thus : "Ego non aspectu judico ea, quæ videntur, sed mentis oculis," &c. "The things that I see, I judge not by sight, but by the eyes of my mind. The heathen, when he heareth the water of baptism, taketh it only for plain water : but I see not simply, or barely, that I see ; I see the cleansing of the soul by the Spirit of GOD." So likewise saith Nazianzenus : "Mysterium baptismi) majus est, quam ea quæ videntur ;" "The mystery of baptism is greater than it appeareth to the eye." So St. Ambrose : "Aliud est, quod visibiliter agitur ; aliud quod invisibiliter celebratur : " "In baptism there is one thing done visibly to the eye ; another thing is wrought invisibly to the mind."

Again he saith, "Believe not only the bodily eyes (in this sacrament of baptism): the thing that is not seen, is better seen: the thing that thou seest is corruptible; the thing that thou seest not is for ever." To be short, in consideration of these invisible effects, Tertullian saith, "The Holy Ghost cometh down and halloweth the water." St. Basil saith, "The kingdom of heaven is there set open." Chrysostom saith, "God Himself in baptism, by his invisible power, holdeth thy head." St. Ambrose saith, "The water hath the grace of CHRIST; in it is the presence of the Trinity." St. Bernard saith, "Let us be washed in his blood."

"By the authorities of thus many ancient Fathers, it is plain, that in the sacrament of baptism, by the sensible sign of water, the invisible grace of God is given unto us."

HOOKE, PRESBYTER AND DOCTOR.—*On Ecclesiastical Polity.*

Book v. 60.

Unless as the Spirit is a necessary inward cause, so water were a necessary outward mean, to our regeneration, what construction should we give unto those words wherein we are said to be new born, and that ἐξ ὕδατος, even of water? Why are we taught, that with water God doth purify and cleanse His Church? Wherefore do the Apostles of CHRIST term baptism a bath of regeneration? What purpose had they in giving men advice to receive outward baptism, and in persuading them it did avail to remission of sins? If outward baptism were a cause in itself possessed of that power, either natural or supernatural, without the present operation whereof no such effect could possibly grow, it must then follow, that seeing effects do never prevent the necessary causes out of which they spring, no man could ever receive grace before baptism: which being apparently both known, and also confessed to be otherwise, in many particulars, although in the rest we make not baptism a cause of grace; yet the grace which is given them with their baptism, doth so far forth depend on the very outward sacrament, that God will have it embraced, not only as a sign or token what we receive, but

also as an instrument or means whereby we receive grace, because baptism is a sacrament which GOD hath instituted in His Church, to the end that they which receive the same might thereby be incorporated into CHRIST; and so through His most precious merit obtain, as well that saving grace of imputation which taketh away all former guiltiness, as also that infused divine virtue of the Holy Ghost which giveth to the powers of the soul their first disposition towards future newness of life. There are that elevate too much the ordinary and immediate means of life, relying wholly upon the bare conceit of that eternal election, which notwithstanding includeth a subordination of means, without which we are not actually brought to enjoy what GOD secretly did intend; and therefore, to build upon GOD's election, if we keep not ourselves to the ways which He hath appointed for men to walk in, is but a self-deceiving vanity. When the Apostle saw men called to the participation of JESUS CHRIST, after the Gospel of GOD embraced, and the sacrament of life received, he feareth not then to put them in the number of elect saints; he then accounteth them delivered from death, and clean purged from all sin. Till then, notwithstanding their preordination unto life, which none could know of, saving GOD, what were they, in the Apostle's own account, but children of wrath, as well as others, plain aliens, altogether without hope, strangers, utterly without GOD in this present world? So that by sacraments, and other sensible tokens of grace, we may boldly gather, that He whose mercy vouchsafeth now to bestow the means, hath also sithence intended us that whereunto they lead. But let us never think it safe to presume of our own last, and by bare conjectural collections of his first intent and purpose, the means failing that should come between. Predestination bringeth not to life without the grace of eternal vocation, wherein our baptism is implied. For as we are not naturally men without birth, so neither are we Christian men in the eye of the Church of GOD but by new birth; nor according to the manifest ordinary course of divine dispensation new born, but by that baptism which both declareth and maketh us Christians.

In which respect, we justly hold it to be the door of our actual entrance into GOD's house, the first apparent beginning of life, a seal perhaps to the grace of election before received : but to our sanctification here, a step that hath not any before it.

*Ibid.* 64.

Were St. Augustine now living, there are which would tell him for his better instruction, that to say of a child, it is elect, and to say, it doth believe, are all one ; for which cause, sith no man is able precisely to affirm the one of any infant in particular, it followeth that precisely and absolutely we ought not to say the other. Which precise and absolute terms are needless in this case. We speak of infants as the rule of piety alloweth both to speak and think. They that can take to themselves in ordinary talk, a charitable kind of liberty to name men of their own sort GOD's dear children, (notwithstanding the large reign of hypocrisy,) should not, methinks, be so strict and rigorous against the Church, for presuming as it doth of a Christian innocent. For when we know how CHRIST in general hath said, Of such is the kingdom of heaven, which kingdom is the inheritance of GOD's elect ; and do withal behold how His providence hath called them unto the first beginnings of eternal life, and presented them at the well-spring of new birth, wherein original sin is purged, besides which sin there is no hindrance of their salvation known to us, as themselves will grant ; hard it were that having so many fair inducements whereupon to ground, we should not be thought to utter, at the least, a truth as probable and allowable in terming any such particular infant an elect babe, as in presuming the like of others whose safety, nevertheless, we are not absolutely able to warrant.

ANDREWS, BISHOP AND DOCTOR.—*On the Holy Ghost.* Serm. viii.

Now CHRIST is baptized. And no sooner is He so, but He falls to His prayers, *Indigentia mater orationis*, (we say) want begets prayer : therefore, yet there wants somewhat—a part and that a chief part of baptism is still behind.

There goes more to baptism, if it be as it should be, than

*baptismus fluminis*, yea, (I may boldly say,) there goes more to it, if it be as it should, than *baptismus sanguinis*. CHRIST "came in water and blood, not in water only, but in water and blood:" that is not enough, except the "Spirit also bear witness." So *baptismus flaminis* is to come too. There is to be a Trinity beneath,—1. water, 2. blood, and 3. the Spirit, to answer to that above: but (the Spirit's baptism coming too) in the mouth of all three, all is made sure, all established thoroughly. This is it, He prays for, as man.

For the baptism of blood that was due to every one of us, (and each of us to have been baptized in his own blood, to have had three such immersions,) that hath CHRIST quit us of when he was asked by the prophet, "How his robes came so red?" He says, "He had been in the wine press;" but there He had been, and that "He had trod alone, and not one of the people with Him;" none but He there; in that, spare us in that.

But the other two parts He sets down precisely to Nicodemus (and in him, to us all,)—1. water, 2. and the Holy Ghost. . . .

St. Paul tells us (Col. ii.) that besides the circumcision, that was the manufacture, there was another made without hands. There is so in baptism, besides the hand seen, that casts on the water, the virtue of the Holy Ghost is there, working, without hands, what here was wrought.

And for this CHRIST prays; that then it might, might then, and might ever, be joined to that of the water. Not in his baptism only, but in the people's; and (as he afterwards enlarges His prayer) in all others that "should ever after believe in His name:" that what in His (here) was, in all theirs might be: what in this first, in all following; what in CHRIST's, in all Christians; heaven might open, the Holy Ghost come down, the Father be pleased to say over the same words, *toties quoties*, so oft as any Christian man's child is brought to his baptism. CHRIST hath prayed, now,

See the force of His prayer. Before it heaven was mured up, no dove to be seen, no voice to be heard, *Altum silentium*. But straight upon it (as if they had but waited the last word of His prayer) all of them follow immediately.



Heaven opens, first. For, if when the lower heaven was shut three years, Elias was able with his prayer to open it, (it is our Saviour in the next chapter following,) and bring down rain; the prayer of CHRIST (who is more of might than many such as Elias) shall it not be much more of force, to enter the Heaven of heavens, the highest of them all, and to bring down thence the waters "above the heavens," even the heavenly graces of the Holy Spirit?

For, so when our Saviour cried, (John vii.) "If any thirst," &c. "This (saith St. John) He spake of the Spirit." For the Spirit and His graces are the very supercelestial water; one drop whereof, infused into the waters of Jordan, will give them an admirable power to pierce even into the innermost parts of the soul: and to baptize it, (that is) not only to take out the stains of it, and make it clean; but further, give it a tincture, lustre, or gloss; for so is baptism properly of βάπτω, taken from the dyer's fat, and is a dyeing or giving a fresh colour, and not a bare washing only.

Always, the opening of heaven, opens unto us, that no baptism without heaven open: and so, that baptism is *de cælo non ab hominibus*, from heaven, not of men. So it was here; so is it to be holden for ever. 2. And from heaven; not *clanculum* (as Prometheus is said to get his fire), but ἀνεωχθῆναι, orderly, by a fair door set open, in the view of much people; for all that were present saw the impression in the sky. Which door was not mured up again; for we find it still open, (Apoc. iii.) and we find that keys were made, and given of it, after this. 3. And all this, that there might not only be a passage for these down, but for us up. For heaven gate, *ab hoc exemplo*, doth ever open at baptism; in sign, he that new cometh from the fount hath then right of entrance in thither. Then (I say) when by baptism he is cleansed; for before, *Nihil inquinatum*, nothing defiled can enter there.

## DONNE, PRESBYTER.—Serm. xxxi. p, 309.

The water of Baptism, is the water that runs through all the Fathers; all the Fathers that had occasion to dive or dip in these waters (to say anything of them) make these first waters, in the creation, the figure of baptism. Therefore Tertullian makes the water, *Primam sedem Spiritus Sancti*, the progress, and the settled house, the voyage, and the harbour, the circumference, and the centre of the Holy Ghost. And therefore St. Hierome calls these waters, *Matrem mundi*, the Mother of the world: and this in the figure of baptism. The waters brought forth the whole world, were delivered of the whole world, as a mother is delivered of a child; and this, *in figura baptismi*, to foreshew that the waters also should bring forth the Church; that the Church of God should be born of the Sacrament of Baptism. So says Damascen, and he establishes it with better authority than his own. The divine Basil saith (saith he) “The Spirit of God wrought upon the waters in the creation, because he meant to do so after, in the regeneration of man. And therefore, *Pristinam sedem, recognoscens conquiescit*, till the Holy Ghost have moved upon our children in baptism, let us not think all done that belongs to those children; and when the Holy Ghost hath moved upon those waters, so in baptism, let us not doubt of His power and effect upon all those children that die so. We know no means how those waters could have produced a minnow, a shrimp, without the Spirit of God had moved upon them; and by this motion of the Spirit of God, we know they produce whales, and leviathans. We know no ordinary means of any saving grace for a child but baptism; neither are we to doubt of the fulness of salvation, in them that have received it. And for ourselves, *mergimur et emergimus*, in baptism we are sunk under water, and then raised above the water again; which was the manner of baptizing in the Christian Church, by immersion and not by aspersion, till of late times: *Affectus et amores*, (says he,) our corrupt affections, and our inordinate love of this world is that, that is to be drowned in us; *Amor securitatis*, a love of

peace, and holy assurance, and acquiescence in GOD's ordinance, is that that lifts us above water.

Therefore that Father puts all upon the due consideration of our baptism: and as St. Jerome says, Certainly he that thinks upon the last Judgment advisedly, cannot sin thus; so he that says with St. Augustine, Let me make every day to GOD, this confession: *Domine, &c.* O Lord my GOD, O holy, holy, holy Lord my GOD; I consider that I was baptized in thy name, and what thou promised me, and what I promised thee then, and can I sin this sin? can this sin stand with those conditions, those stipulations which passed between us then? The Spirit of GOD is motion, the Spirit of GOD is rest too; and in due consideration of baptism, a true Christian is moved, and settled too; moved to a sense of the breach of his conditions, settled in the sense of the mercy of his GOD, in the merits of his CHRIST, upon his godly sorrow. So these waters are the waters of baptism.

FIELD, PRESBYTER.—*Of the Church*, book i. chap. xii.

This was the fault of sundry in the Primitive Church; and which was yet more to be condemned, many did therefore defer and put off their baptism, that so whatsoever evil things they did in the mean time, might in that laver of new birth be washed away, thereby taking greater liberty to offend, for that they had so present means of full remission, and perfect reconciliation; so making that which was ordained against sin, and for the weakening and overthrow of it, to be an encouragement thereunto, and to give life and strength unto it.

JACKSON, PRESBYTER AND DOCTOR.—*On Christ's exercise of his everlasting Priesthood*, ch. i. (vol. iii. p. 271.)

It is no part of our Church's doctrine or meaning, that the washing, or sprinkling infants' bodies with consecrated water, should take away sins by its own immediate virtue. To affirm thus much implies, as I conceive, a contradiction to that apostolical doctrine. "The like figure whereunto even Baptism doth also now save us (not the putting away the filth of the

flesh, but the answer of a good conscience toward God) by the resurrection of JESUS CHRIST, who is gone into heaven," &c. 1 Pet. iii. 21. The meaning of our Church intends no further than thus : That if this sacrament of Baptism be duly administered, the blood, or bloody sacrifice of CHRIST, or (which is all one) the influence of His Spirit doth always accompany, or is *concurrent* to this solemn act. But whether this influence of His Spirit or virtual presence of His body and blood be either immediately or only terminated to the soul and spirit of the party baptized, or have some virtual influence upon the water of Baptism as a mean to convey the Grace of Regeneration unto the soul of the party baptized, whilst the water is poured upon him, is too nice and curious a question, in this age, for sober Christians to debate or contend about. It may suffice to believe that this sacramental pledge hath a virtual presence of CHRIST'S Blood, or some real influence from His Body, concomitant, though not consubstantiated to it, which is prefigured or signified by the washing or sprinkling the body with water.

But it will be, or rather is objected, but only by private or some saucy spirits, That if the doctrine of our Church were true and sound, then all that be rightly baptized should be undoubtedly saved, being once washed or cleansed from their sins. The objection were of some force, if the Church of England did hold or maintain such doctrine or tenets as they do which make or favour it ; to wit, That the sins of the elect only are remitted by Baptism, or by Sacrament of CHRIST'S Body and Blood ; or, that sins once remitted cannot be remitted afresh ; or, that the party which is once pardoned for his sins, before committed, cannot afterwards be condemned. The orthodoxal truth is, That albeit the original sin of children truly baptized in the name of CHRIST, or the actual sins of young or elder men so baptized, and the sins of their forefathers (so far as it concerns men of riper years to repent of them both) be so truly remitted in Baptism, that neither young men nor old may be baptized again ; yet the stipulation of a good conscience, wherein the internal Baptism (as St. Peter tells) doth consist, may and ought, by the law of GOD and of CHRIST'S Church, to be reiterated.

And this stipulation of every Christian, male or female, though baptized after they have passed their nonage for civil contracts, ought to be resumed or reacknowledged as often as they intend to receive the sacramental pledges of CHRIST'S Body and Blood, either privately or in the public congregation. But for all such as have been baptized in their infancy, the personal resumption or ratification of that vow, which their fathers and mothers in GOD did make for them at the sacred laver, is to be exacted of them *ore tenus*, in some public congregation, before they can be lawfully admitted to be public communicants of CHRIST'S Body and Blood.

*Ibid.*—Ch. lv. (p. 298.)

If either the actual sins of all men, or the sins of the elect in special, had been so remitted by CHRIST'S death, as some conceive they were, that is, absolutely pardoned before they were committed, there had been no end or use of CHRIST'S Resurrection in respect of us; no need of Baptism: yet was Baptism, from the hour of His resurrection, necessary unto all that did believe in His death and resurrection. The urgent and indispensable necessity of Baptism, especially in respect of actual believers, is not anywhere more emphatically intimated than in St. Peter's answer to the Jews, whose hearts were pierced with sorrow that they had been the causes of CHRIST'S death. They in this stound or sting of conscience demand, "Men and brethren, what shall we do? And Peter answered them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you, in the name of JESUS CHRIST for the remission of sins. And they that gladly received the word were baptized the same day." Acts ii. 37, 38. 41. These men had been deeply tainted with sin, not original only, but with sins actual of the worst kind; guilty they were, in a high degree, of the death of the SON of GOD, yet had they as well their actual as their original sins remitted by baptism. It is then unsound and imperfect doctrine, that sin original only is taken away or remitted by Baptism; for whatsoever sins are remitted or taken away by CHRIST'S death, the same sins are in the same manner remitted and taken away by Baptism into His death;

actual sins are remitted, in such as are guilty of actual sins when they are baptized, though only sin original be actually remitted in those which are not guilty of actual sins, as in infants. Now man's sins are actually remitted before he be actually guilty of them.

The question is, how either sin original is remitted, or how any work of Satan is dissolved by Baptism; and this question, in the general, is rightly resolved, by saying, "They are remitted by faith." But this general resolution sufficeth not, unless we know the object of our faith in this particular. Now the particular object of our faith, of that faith by which sins (whether by Baptism or otherwise) are remitted, is not our general belief in CHRIST; even our belief in CHRIST dying for us in particular, will not suffice, unless it include our belief of the everlasting virtue of His bloody sacrifice, and of His everlasting priesthood for purifying and cleansing our souls. No sins be truly remitted unless they be remitted by the office or exercise of His priesthood; and whilst so remitted they are not remitted by any other sacrifice than by the sole virtue of His body and blood, which He "once offered for all," for the sins of all. It is not the virtue or efficacy of the consecrated water in which we were washed, but the virtue of His blood which was once shed for us, and which, by Baptism, is sprinkled upon us, or communicated unto us, which immediately cleanseth us from all our sins. From this everlasting virtue of this His bloody sacrifice, faith, by the ministry of Baptism, is immediately gotten in such as had it not before. And in such as have faith before they be baptized, the guilt of actual sins is remitted by the exercise or act of faith, as it apprehends the everlasting efficacy of this sacrifice, and by the prayer of faith, and supplication unto our High Priest. Faith, then, is as the mouth or appetite by which we receive this food of life, and is a good sign of health; but it is the food itself received, which must continue health and strengthen spiritual life in us; and the food of life is no other than CHRIST's body and blood; and it is our High Priest Himself which must give us this food.

Baptism, saith St. Peter, (1 Pet. iii. 20.) doth save us. What

Baptism doth save us? not the putting away the filth of the flesh, (yet this is the immediate effect of the water in Baptism,) but the answer (or stipulation) of a good conscience towards GOD! But how doth this kind of Baptism, or this concomitant of Baptism save us? The Apostle, in the same place, tells us, "by the resurrection of JESUS CHRIST." "The answer or stipulation of a good conscience," includes an illumination of our spirits by the Spirit of GOD; a qualification by which we are made sons of light, being before the sons of darkness. But, that by this qualification we become the sons of light; that this qualification is, by Baptism, wrought in us; that by this qualification, however wrought in us, we are saved from our sins; all this is immediately from the "virtue of CHRIST'S Resurrection." That is, as you have heard before, he was consecrated by the sufferings of death to be an everlasting Priest, and by his resurrection from death, his body and blood became an everlasting propitiation for sins, an inexhaustible fountain of grace by which we are purified from the dead works of sin.

*Ibid.*—*Of Christ's session at the right hand of God.* ch. xvii. p. 170.

[St. Paul] saith, "that all that are baptized are dead to sin;" that is, first, they are "dead unto it by solemn vow or profession." Secondly, they are said to be "dead unto sin, or sin to be dead in them," inasmuch as they in Baptism receive an antidote from GOD by which the rage and poison of it might easily be assuaged or expelled, so they would not either receive that grace or means which GOD in Baptism exhibits unto them in vain, or use it amiss. So we may say that any popular disease is quelled or taken away, after a sovereign remedy be found against it, which never fails; so men will seek for it, reasonably apply for it, and observe that diet which the physician, upon the taking of it, prescribes unto them. Some in our times there be (and more, I think, than have been in all the former) which deny all baptismal grace. Others there be which grant some grace to be conferred by Baptism, even unto infants; but yet these restrain it only to infants elect. And this they take to be the meaning of our Church's Catechism, wherein children are taught to believe

[That as CHRIST, the second person in the Trinity, did redeem them and all mankind; so the Holy Ghost (the third person) doth sanctify them and all the elect people of GOD.]

But can any man be persuaded that it was any part of our Church's meaning, to teach children when they first make profession of their faith, to believe, that they are of the number of the elect; that is, of "such as cannot finally perish?" This were to teach them their faith backwards, and to seek the kingdom of heaven not *ascendendo*, by ascending, but *descendendo*, by descending from it. For higher than thus St. Paul himself, in his greatest perfection, could not possibly reach; no, nor the blessed angels, which have kept their first station almost these 6000 years. Yet certain it is, that our Church would have every one, at the very first profession of his faith, to believe that he is one of the elect people of GOD.

LAUD, ARCHBISHOP AND MARTYR. *Conference with Fisher*, § 15.

First, that Baptism is necessary to the salvation of infants (in the ordinary way of the Church, without binding GOD to the use and means of that sacrament, to which he hath bound us) is expressed in St. John iii. "Except a man be born of water," &c. So, no baptism, no entrance. Nor can infants creep in any other ordinary way. And this is the received opinion of all the ancient Church of CHRIST.

And, secondly, That infants ought to be baptized, is first plain by evident and direct consequence out of Scripture. For if there be no salvation for infants in the ordinary way of the Church but by Baptism, and this appear in Scripture, as it doth, then out of all doubt, the consequence is most evident out of that Scripture, that infants are to be baptized, that their salvation may be certain. For they which cannot help themselves, must not be left only to extraordinary helps, of which we have no assurance, and for which we have no warrant at all in Scripture, while we, in the mean time, neglect the ordinary way and means commanded by CHRIST. Secondly, it is very near an expression in Scripture itself. For when St. Peter had ended that great Sermon of his, Acts ii., he applies two comforts unto them, verse 38,



“Amend your life,” &c. And then, v. 39, he infers, “For the promise is made,” &c. The promise; what promise? What? why the promise of sanctification by the Holy Ghost. By what means; Why, by Baptism. For it is expressly, “Be baptized, and ye shall receive.” And as expressly, “This promise is made to you and to your children.”

BRAMHALL, ARCHBISHOP AND CONFESSOR.—*Of persons dying without Baptism*, p. 979.

The discourse which happened the other day, about your little daughter, I had quite forgotten till you were pleased to mention it again last night. If any thing did fall from me, which gave offence to any there present, I am right sorrowful, but I hope there did not; as, on the other side, if any occasion of offence had been given to me, I should readily have sacrificed it to that reverend respect, which is due to the place your table, anciently accounted a sacred thing, and to the lord of it, yourself. This morning, lying musing in my bed, it produced some trouble to me, to consider how passionately we are all wedded to our own parties, and how apt we are all to censure the opinions of others before we understand them, while our want of charity is a greater error in ourselves, and more displeasing to Almighty God, than any of those supposed assertions which we condemn in others, especially when they come to be rightly understood. And to show this particular breach is not so wide, nor the more moderate of either party so disagreeing, as is imagined, I digested these sudden meditations, drawn wholly, in a manner from the grounds of the Roman schools; and so soon as I was risen, I committed them to writing.

First, there is a great difference to be made between the sole want of Baptism upon invincible necessity, and the contempt or wilful neglect of Baptism when it may be had. The latter we acknowledge to be a damnable sin, and, without repentance and God's extraordinary mercy, to exclude a man from all hope of salvation. But yet if such a person, before his death, shall repent and deplore his neglect of the means of grace, from his heart, and desire, with all his soul, to be baptized, but is de-

barred from it invincibly, we do not, we dare not pass sentence of condemnation upon him ; nor yet the Roman Catholics themselves. The question then is, whether the want of Baptism, upon invincible necessity, do evermore infallibly exclude from heaven ?

Secondly, we distinguish between the visible sign, and the invisible grace ; between the exterior sacramental ablution, and the grace of the sacrament, that is, interior regeneration. We believe that whosoever hath the former, hath the latter also, so that he do not put a bar against the efficacy of the sacrament by his infidelity or hypocrisy, of which a child is not capable. And therefore our very Liturgy doth teach, that a child baptized, dying before the commission of actual sin, is undoubtedly saved.

Thirdly, we believe that without baptismal grace, that is, regeneration, no man can enter into the kingdom of God. But whether God hath so tied and bound himself to His ordinances and sacraments that He doth not or cannot confer the grace of the sacraments, extraordinarily, where it seemeth good to His eyes, without the outward element : this is the question between us.

HAMMOND, PRESBYTER, CONFESSOR, AND DOCTOR.—*Sermon XV.*  
—*A New Creature.*

It is observable, that our state of nature and sin is, in Scripture, expressed ordinarily by old age, the natural sinful man ; that is, all our natural affections that are born and grow up with us, are called the old man ; as if, since Adam's fall, we were decrepit and feeble, and aged as soon as born, as a child begotten by a man in a consumption never comes to the strength of a man, is always weak, and crazy, and puling, hath all the imperfections and corporal infirmities of age before he is out of his infancy. And, according to this ground, the whole analogy of Scripture runs ; all that is opposite to the old decrepit state, to the dotage of nature, is new. The new covenant, Mark i. 27. The language of believers, new tongues, Mark xvi. 17. A new commandment, John xiii. 34. A new man, Eph. ii. 15. In sum, the state of grace is expressed by *πάντα καινά*, all is become new, 2 Cor. v. 17. So that old and new, as it divides



displacing of it, than a stone in the street could do : but now, let an omnipotent power be annexed to this man, let a supernatural spirit be joined to this soul, and then will it be able to overcome the proudest, stoutest difficulty in nature. You have heard, in the Primitive Church, of a grain of faith removing mountains ; and believe me, all miracles are not yet outdated. The work of regeneration, the bestowing of a spiritual life on one dead in trespasses and sins, the making of a carcass walk, the natural old man to spring again, and move spiritually, is as great a miracle as that . . . . .

For the third question, when this new principle enters : first you are to know, that it comes into the heart in a threefold dition ; first, as an harbinger ; secondly, as a private secret guest ; thirdly, as an inhabitant or housekeeper. As it is an harbinger, so it comes to fit and prepare us for itself ; trims up, and sweeps, and sweetens the soul, that it may be readier to entertain him when he comes to reside ; and that he doth (as the ancient gladiators had their *arma prælusoria*) by skirmishing with our corruptions, before he comes to give them a pitched battle ; he brandishes a flaming sword about our ears, and as by a flash of lightning, gives us a sense of a dismal, hideous state ; and so somewhat restrains us from excess and fury ; first, by a momentary remorse, then by a more lasting, yet not purifying flame, the spirit of bondage. In sum, every check of conscience, every sigh for sin, every fear of judgment, every desire of grace, every motion or inclination toward spiritual good, be it ever so short-winded, is *prælude spiritus*, a kind of John Baptist to CHRIST, something that God sent before "to prepare the ways of the LORD." And thus the Spirit comes very often ; in every affliction, every disease, (which is part of God's discipline, to keep us in order,) in brief, at every sermon that works upon us at the hearing : then, I say, the lightning flashes in our eyes ; we have a glimpse of his Spirit, but cannot come to a full sight of it : and thus he appears to many, whom he will never dwell with. Unhappy men, that cannot lay hold on him, when he comes so near them ! and yet somewhat more happy than they that never came within ken of him ; stopt their ears when he spake to them

even at this distance. Every man in the Christian Church hath frequently, in his life, a power to partake of God's ordinary preparing graces : and it is some degree of obedience, though no work of regeneration, to make good use of them ; and if he without the inhabitation of the Spirit, cannot make such use as he should, yet to make the best he can : and thus, I say, [i. e. in a *parallel* way] the Spirit appears to the unregenerate, almost every day of our lives. 2ndly, when this Spirit comes a guest to lodge with us, then he is said to enter ; but till by actions and frequent obliging works, he makes himself known to his neighbours, as long as he keeps his chamber, till he declare himself to be there, so long he remains a private secret guest, and that is called the introduction of the form, that makes a man to be truly regenerate ; when the seed is sown in his heart, when the habit is infused, and that is done sometimes discernibly, sometimes not discernibly, but seldom, as when Saul was called in the midst of his madness, Acts ix., he was certainly able to tell a man the very minute of his change, of his being made a new creature. Thus they which have long lived in an enormous Antichristian course, do many times find themselves stricken on a sudden, and are able to date their regeneration, and tell you punctually how old they are in the Spirit. Yet because there be many preparations to this Spirit, which are not this Spirit, many presumptions in our hearts false grounded, many tremblings and jealousies in those that have it, great affinity between faith natural and spiritual : seeing it is a Spirit that thus enters, and not as it did light on the Disciples, in a bodily shape, it is not an easy matter for any one to define the time of his conversion. Some may guess somewhat nearer than others, as remembering a sensible change in themselves ; but, in a word, the surest discerning of it is in its working, not at its entering. I may know that now I have the Spirit, better than at what time I came to it. Undiscernibly God's supernatural agency interposes sometimes in the mother's womb, as in John Baptist springing in Elizabeth at Mary's salutation, (Luke i. 41.) and perhaps in Jeremy, (Jer. i. 5.) " Before thou camest out of the womb, I sanctified thee," and (in Isa. xlix. 5.) " The LORD that formed me from the womb to be his servant." But

this divine address attends most ordinarily till the time of our Baptism, when the Spirit, accompanying the outward sign, infuses itself into their hearts, and there seats and plants itself, and grows up with the reasonable soul, keeping even their most luxuriant years within bounds ; and as they come to an use of their reason, to a more and more multiplying this habit of grace into holy spiritual acts of faith and obedience ; from which it is ordinarily said, that infants baptized have habitual faith, as they may be also said to have habitual repentance, and habits of all other graces, because they have the root and seed of those beautiful, healthful flowers, which will actually flourish there when they come to years. And this, I say, is so frequent to be performed at Baptism, that ordinarily it is not wrought without that means, and in those means we may expect it, as our Church doth in our Liturgy, where she presumes, at every Baptism, that it hath pleased God to regenerate the infant by his Holy Spirit. And this may prove a solemn piece of comfort to some, who suspect their state more than they need, and think it impossible that they should be in a regenerate condition, because they have not as yet found any such notable change in themselves, as they see and observe in others. These men may as well be jealous they are not men, because they cannot remember when their soul came to them : if they can find the effects of spiritual life in themselves, let them call it what they will, a religious education, or a custom of well-doing, or an unacquaintedness with sin ; let them comfort themselves in their estate, and be thankful to God who visited them thus betimes ; let it never trouble them that they were not once as bad as other men, but rather acknowledge God's mercy, who hath prevented such a change, and by uniting them to Him in the cradle, hath educated and nursed them up in familiarity with the Spirit.

TAYLOR, BISHOP, CONFESSOR, AND DOCTOR.—*Life of Christ*,  
sect. 9.—*On Baptism*, part ii. 16.

Thirdly, in baptism we are born again ; and this infants need in the present circumstances, and for the same great reason that men of age and reason do. For our natural birth is either of

itself insufficient, or is made so by the fall of Adam, and the consequent evils, that nature alone, or our first birth, cannot bring us to heaven, which is a supernatural end, that is, an end above all the power of our nature as now it is. So that if nature cannot bring us to heaven, grace must, or we can never get thither; if the first birth cannot, a second must: but the second birth spoken of in Scripture is baptism; "a man must be born of water and the Spirit." And therefore baptism is *λουτρὸν παλιγγενεσίας*, "the laver of a new birth." Either then infants cannot go to heaven any way that we know of, or they must be baptized. To say they are left to God, is an excuse, and no answer; for when God hath opened the door, and calls that the "entrance into heaven," we do not leave them to God, when we will not carry them to Him in the way which He hath described, and at the door which Himself hath opened: we leave them indeed, but it is but helpless and destitute: and though God is better than man, yet that is no warrant to us; what it will be to the children, that we cannot warrant or conjecture. And if it be objected, that to the new birth are required dispositions of our own, which are to be wrought by and in them that have the use of reason; besides that, this is wholly against the analogy of a new birth, in which the person to be born is wholly a passive, and hath put into him the principle that in time will produce its proper actions; it is certain that they that can receive the new birth, are capable of it. The effect of it is a possibility of being saved, and arriving to a supernatural felicity. If infants can receive this effect, then also the new birth, without which they cannot receive the effect. And if they can receive salvation, the effect of the new birth, what hinders them but they may receive that, that is in order to that effect, and ordained only for it, and which is nothing of itself, but in its institution and relation, and which may be received by the same capacity, in which one may be created, that is, a passivity, or a capacity obediential?

Fourthly; concerning pardon of sins, which is one great effect of baptism, it is certain that infants have not that benefit, which men of sin and age may receive. He that hath a sickly stomach,

drinks wine, and it not only refreshes his spirits, but cures his stomach : he that drinks wine, and hath not that disease, receives good by his wine, though it does not minister to so many needs ; it refreshes, though it does not cure him : and when oil is poured upon a man's head, it does not always heal a wound, but sometimes makes him a cheerful countenance, sometimes it consigns him to be a king, or a priest. So it is in baptism : it does not heal the wounds of actual sins, because they have not committed them ; but it takes off the evil of original sin : whatsoever is imputed to us by Adam's prevarication, is washed off by the death of the second Adam, into which we are baptized.

HEYLIN, PRESBYTER AND CONFESSOR.—*On the Apostles' Creed.*  
Art. x. Chap. vi.

In which, [Article the 27th] lest any should object, as Dr. Harding did against Bishop Jewell, that we make baptism to be nothing but a sign of regeneration, and that we dare not say, as the Catholic Church teacheth, according to the Holy Scriptures, "That in and by baptism, sins are fully and truly remitted, and put away," we will reply with the said most reverent and learned prelate, (a man who well understood the Church's meaning), That we confess, and have ever taught, that in the Sacrament of Baptism, by the death and blood of CHRIST, is given remission of all manner of sins ; and that not in half, or in part, or by way of imagination and fancy, but full, whole, and perfect of all together ; and that if any man affirm, that "Baptism giveth not full remission of sins," it is no part nor portion of our doctrine. To the same effect also saith judicious Hooker, "Baptism is a Sacrament," &c. [quoted above] . . . . . But because these were private men, neither of which, for aught appears, had any hand in the first setting out of the Book of Articles, (which was in the reign of King Edward the Sixth,) though Bishop Jewell had in the second edition, when they were reviewed and published in Queen Elizabeth's time ; let us consult the Book of Homilies, made and set out by those who composed the Articles ; and there we find, that by GOD's mercy and the virtue of that sacrifice which our High Priest and SAVIOUR CHRIST JESUS, the Son



of GOD, once offered for us upon the cross, we do obtain GOD's grace, and remission, as well of our original sin in baptism, as of all actual sin committed by us after baptism, if we truly repent and turn unfeignedly unto Him again. Which doctrine of the Church of England, as it is consonant to the Word of GOD in Holy Scripture, so is it also most agreeable to the common and received judgment of pure antiquity. For in the Scripture it is said expressly by St. Peter, &c. &c. This also was the judgment of the ancient writers, and that too long before the starting of the Pelagian heresies, to which much is ascribed by some as to the advancing of the efficacy and fruit of baptism, by succeeding Fathers. For thus Tertullian; "Now (saith he) do the waters daily preserve the people of GOD, death being destroyed and overthrown by the washing away of sins; for where the guilt is taken away, there is the punishment remitted also." St. Cyprian thus; "That the remission of sins, whether given in baptism, or by any other of the sacraments, is properly to be ascribed to the Holy Ghost." The African Fathers in full Council do affirm the same, and so doth Origen also for the Alexandrian, of both which we shall speak anon in the point of Pædobaptism. Thus Nyssen for the Eastern churches: "Baptism (saith he) is the expiation of our sins, the remission of our offences, the cause of our new birth and regeneration." Thus do the Fathers in the Constantinopolitan Council profess their faith in one baptism (or being only once baptized) "for the remission of sins." And finally, that this was the doctrine of the Church in general, before Augustine's time, who is conceived to be the first that did advance the power and efficacy of baptism to so great a height, in opposition to the Pelagian heresies, appears by a byword grown before his time into frequent use; the people being used to say, when they observed a man to be too much addicted to his lusts and pleasures, Let him alone to take his pleasure, "for as yet the man is not baptized." More of this we shall see anon in that which follows. Nor is this only *Primitive*, but good *Protestant* doctrine, as is most clear and evident by that of Zanchius, whom only I shall instance in, of the later writers. "When the minister baptizeth, I believe

that CHRIST with his own hand reacheth as it were from heaven, besprinkleth the infant with his blood to the remission of sins, by the hand of that man whom I see besprinkling him with the waters of baptism." So that I cannot choose but marvel how it comes to pass, that it must now be reckoned for a point of Popery, that the "Sacraments are instrumental causes of our justification," or of the "remission of our sins," or that it is a point of learning, of which neither the Scriptures, nor the reformed religion, have taught us anything. So easy a thing it is to flast that with Popery, which any way doth contradict our own private fancies.

ALLESTRIE, PRESBYTER.—Serm. ii. p. 23.

In our Israel by our covenant there is as much of this required, for we were all initiated into our profession by washing, "re-generated in a laver," and "born again of water," becoming so *Tertullian's sanctitatis designati*, set aside for holiness, consecrated to cleanness, and made the votaries of purity: how clean a thing then must a Christian be who must be washed into the name? nor is he thus washed only in the font, there was a more inestimable "fountain opened for sin and uncleanness." (Apoc. xi. 5.) "JESUS CHRIST hath washed us in his own blood;" and Heb. ix. 14. "The blood of CHRIST did purge our consciences from dead works to serve the living God." How great is our necessity of being clean, when to provide a means to make us so, GOD opens his Son's side, and our laver is drawn out of the heart of CHRIST. Yet we have more effusions to contribute to it. (1 Cor. vi. 11.) "But ye are washed," &c. and we must "be baptized with the Holy Ghost and with fire." A laver of flame also to wash away our scurfe as well as sallages, and beyond all these, some of us have been purged too with the fiery trial, and molten in the furnace of affliction, to separate our dross and purify us from alloy, that we may be clean and refined too, may become Christians of the highest *correct*.

BARROW, PRESBYTER AND DOCTOR.—*Of the Holy Ghost.*

Serm. xlv. vol. iii. p. 370.

The memorial therefore of that most gracious and glorious dispensation, [of the Holy Ghost at Pentecost, &c.] the Christian Church wisely and piously hath continually preserved, obliging us at this time peculiarly to bless GOD for that incomparable and inestimable gift conferred then most visibly upon the Church, and still really bestowed upon every particular member duly incorporated therinto.

I say bestowed upon every particular member of the Church, for the evangelical covenant doth extend to every Christian; and a principal ingredient thereof is the collation of this Spirit, which is the finger of GOD, whereby (according to the Prophet Jeremy's description of that covenant) "GOD'S law is put into their inward parts, and written in their hearts!" inscribed (as St. Paul allusively speaketh) not with ink, but by the Spirit, &c.; not only as the Jewish law, represented from without to the senses, but impressed within upon the mind and affections; whence GOD'S Spirit is called the Spirit of promise, the donation thereof being the peculiar promise of the Gospel; and the end of our SAVIOUR'S undertaking is by St. Paul declared, "that we might receive the promise of the Spirit by faith;" that is, by embracing Christianity might partake thereof, according to GOD'S promise; and the apostolical ministry or exhibition of the Gospel is styled "the ministration of the Spirit," and tasting "of the heavenly gift, and participation of the Holy Ghost," is part of a Christian's character; and the inception of Christianity is described by St. Paul, "But we are bound to give thanks," &c. (2 Thess. ii. 13.) and our SAVIOUR instructed Nicodemus, that no man can enter into the kingdom of GOD (that is, become a Christian, or subject of GOD'S spiritual kingdom,) without being regenerated by water, and by the Spirit, that is, without baptism, and the spiritual grace attending it, according as St. Peter doth in the words adjoining to our text imply, that the reception of the Holy Spirit is annexed to Holy baptism: "Repent (saith he) and be baptized every one," &c. . . . "for the promise (that great promise of

the Holy Ghost) is unto you," &c. . . . . that is, the Holy Spirit is promised to all, how far soever distant in place and time, whoever shall be invited unto, and shall embrace the Christian profession. St. John also maketh it to be a distinctive mark of those, in whom CHRIST abideth, and who dwell in CHRIST, that is, of all true Christians, to have this Spirit; "Hereby [saith he] we know that he abideth in us by the Spirit," &c. . . . . and St. Paul denieth him to be a good Christian who is destitute thereof. "Now (saith he) if any man have not the Spirit," &c. . . . . "and know ye not, (saith he to the Corinthians) that ye are the temple," &c. . . . . that is, Do ye not understand this to be a common privilege of all Christians, such as ye profess yourselves to be? And the conversion of men to Christianity he thus expresseth, "After the kindness and love of GOD our SAVIOUR," &c. (Tit. iii. 4.) . . . . And all pious dispositions qualifying us for entrance into heaven and happiness (faith, charity, devotion, every grace, every virtue) are represented to be the fruits of the Holy Spirit. And the union of all Christians into one body; the Catholic society of all truly faithful people, doth according to St. Paul, result from this one Spirit, as a common soul animating and actuating them: "For (saith he) by one Spirit are they all baptized," &c. . . . .

In fine, whatever some few persons, or some petty sects (as the Pelagians of old, the Socinians now) may have deemed, it hath been the doctrine constantly, and with very general consent delivered in the Catholic Church, that to all persons by the holy mystery of baptism duly initiated to Christianity, or admitted into the communion of CHRIST'S body, the grace of GOD'S Holy Spirit certainly is bestowed, enabling them to perform the conditions of piety and virtue then undertaken by them; enlightening their minds, rectifying their wills, purifying their affections, directing and assisting them in their practice; the which holy gift (if not abused, ill treated, driven away, or quenched by their ill behaviour) will perpetually be continued, improved, and increased to them; it is therefore by Tertullian (in his prescriptions against heretics,) reckoned as part of that fundamental rule which was grounded upon the general tradition

and consent of the Christian Church, that "CHRIST had sent the virtue of the Holy Ghost, in his room, which doth act believers;" to which that article doth answer of the Apostolical creed, in which we profess to believe the Holy Ghost, meaning, I suppose, thereby, not only the bare existence of the Holy Ghost, but also its gracious communication and energy.

THORNDIKE, PRESBYTER.—Book iii. Chap. viii.

It is demanded in the second place, what is that regeneration by the Holy Ghost, and wherein it consists, whereof infants that are baptized can be thought capable. For the wild conceits of those that imagine them to have faith in CHRIST (which without actual motion of the mind, is not), require miracles to be wrought of course, by baptizing, that the effect thereof may come to pass. And if the state of grace (which the habitual grace of GOD'S Spirit either supposeth or inferreth) is not to be attained but by the resolution of embracing the covenant of grace, (as, by all the premises, it is not otherwise attended), it will be every whit as hard to say what is that habitual grace, that is said to be poured into the souls of infants that are baptized, being nothing else but a facility in doing what the Covenant of Grace requireth. But, if we conceive the regeneration of Infants that are baptized to consist in the habitual assistance of GOD'S Spirit, the effects whereof are to appear, in making them able to perform that which their Christianity requires at their hands, so soon as they shall understand themselves to be obliged by it; we give reason enough of the effect of their baptism, whether they die or live, and yet become not liable to any inconvenience. For supposing the assistance of GOD'S Spirit assigned them by the promise of baptism, to take effect when their bodily instruments enable the soul to act as Christianity requireth; if the soul, by death, come to be discharged of them, can any thing be said why original concupiscence, which is the law of the members, should remain any more, to impeach the subjection of all faculties to the law of GOD'S Spirit? Or will it be any thing strange, that when they come to be taught Christianity, the same Spirit of GOD should be thought to sway them, to embrace it of their own

choice, and not only in compliance with the will of their parents? Yet is this no more, than the regeneration of infants by water and the Holy Ghost importeth; that the Spirit of God should be habitually present, to make those reasons which God hath given to convince the world, that they ought to be Christians, both discernible to the understanding, and weighing down the choice; whereas, those that are converted from being enemies to God, (that is to say, at those years, when no man can be converted to God, that is not His enemy before), though the Spirit of God knock at their hearts without, striving to cast out the strong man that is within doors, and to make a dwelling for itself in the heart, are possessed by a contrary principle, till they yield God's Spirit that entertainment which God requireth.

PEARSON, BISHOP AND DOCTOR.—*Exposition of the Creed,*  
Article ix.

Being therefore we are that the preaching remission of sins belongeth not only certainly, but in some sense peculiarly, to the Church of CHRIST, it will be next considerable how this remission is conferred upon any person in the Church.

It is certain that forgiveness of sins was promised to all who were baptized in the name of CHRIST; and it cannot be doubted but all persons who did perform all things necessary to the receiving the ordinance of baptism, did also receive the benefit of that ordinance, which is *remission of sins*. "John did baptize in the wilderness, and preach the baptism of repentance for the remission of sins." (Mark i. 4.) And St. Peter made this exhortation of his first sermon, "Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of JESUS CHRIST, for the remission of sins." (Acts ii. 38.) In vain doth doubting and fluctuating Socinus endeavour to evacuate the evidence of this Scripture; attributing the remission either to repentance without consideration of baptism, or else to the public profession of faith made in baptism; or if any thing must be attributed to baptism itself, it must be nothing but a declaration of such remission. For how will these shifts agree with that which Ananias said unto Paul, without any mention either of repentance or confession,

“Arise and be baptized, and wash away thy sins:” (Acts xxii. 16.) and that which St. Paul, who was so baptized, hath taught us concerning the Church, that CHRIST doth “sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water.” (Eph. v. 26.) It is therefore sufficiently certain that baptism, as it was instituted by CHRIST after the pre-administration of St. John, wheresoever it was received with all qualifications necessary in the person accepting, and conferred with all things necessary to be performed by the person administering, was most infallibly efficacious, as to this particular, that is, to the remission of all sins committed before the administration of this sacrament.

BULL, BISHOP AND DOCTOR.—Sermon vii.

“And besides this,” &c. (2 Pet. i. 5.) As if he had said, You have now, GOD be thanked, escaped the pollutions of the world, and are truly, I hope, converted to Christianity, and in baptism have been regenerated by the Holy Ghost (that he means by their being *made partakers of the divine nature*). This indeed is a very great achievement, and an invaluable mercy of GOD, vouchsafed to you; yet I beseech you, rest not here: but *besides this, giving all diligence, add to your faith, virtue, &c.*

COMBER, PRESBYTER.—Part iii. sect. iii. p. 201.

We must not presently turn our backs upon GOD so soon as the holy rite [baptism] is finished, but complete the solemnity by thanksgiving and prayer; and that we may do both, not only with the spirit, but with understanding, the minister doth here teach us what must be the subjects of our praises and petitions. I. Our praises must look back upon the grace already showed, and the benefits which are already given to this infant, which are principally two: 1. Internally it is regenerated; 2. Externally it is grafted into CHRIST’S Church, for which we must give hearty thanks to Almighty GOD. To which we must add, II. Our prayers, which must look forward upon the grace which will be needful to enable it to live answerable to this estate into which it is admitted; and this we must beg of Almighty GOD also, or else the former blessings will be altogether in vain. Now all this is plain, that no more would need to be added, but only

that some with Nicodemus are apt to say, "How can these things be?" (John iii. 9.) Judging it impossible that so great a matter as regeneration can be effected so soon, and by so mean an instrument as they account it; whereas the effect is to be ascribed to the divine power of the Author, not to the intrinsic efficacy of the outward means: yet in regard we can never bless God heartily for a mercy unless we believe He hath bestowed it, we must labour to remove these scruples by a fuller account of this baptismal regeneration, that we may not withhold the divine praises, by our doubting and unbelief. The word regeneration is but twice (that I know of) used in Scripture; first, Matt. xix. 28, "Ye that have followed me in the regeneration;" where though (by altering the point—"followed me, in the regeneration when the Son of Man," &c.) it may signify the resurrection; yet as we read, it signifies the renewing of men by the Gospel and baptism. Secondly, (Tit. iii. 5.) "He saved us by the laver of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost," which is a paraphrase upon that of our Saviour, (John iii.) "Except a man be born of water," &c. And, because persons, come to age before their conversion, are first taught and persuaded by the Word of God, the language of Holy Writ enlarges the metaphor, and saith, Such as are begotten by the Word of God, (1 Cor. iv. 15.) and then born again or regenerated in baptism. In like manner speak the Fathers, who do constantly and unanimously affirm, that we are regenerated in, or by baptism. So that we must next enquire wherein this regeneration doth consist. And first, whereas both children and those of riper years are by nature dead in sin, so that they lie under the guilt and power thereof: our gracious Father doth here in baptism seal a covenant with us, wherein He promiseth to pardon us; and when this deadly load is removed, the soul receives as it were a new life, and takes new hopes and courage, being restored to the divine favour, and being set free from the sad expectations of unavoidable condemnation for former sin, original in infants, and both it and actual in those of riper years. Before this covenant we were dead in law, and by the pardon of our sins we are begotten again to a lively hope; and herein stands the first particular of our



regeneration, viz. in the remission of sins, wherefore both Scripture and antiquity teach us, that baptism is the means for remission of sin, and hence they join pardon and regeneration commonly together, because this forgiveness puts us into a new estate, and an excellent condition in comparison of that which our natural birth had left us in.

Secondly ; But further, by baptism we gain new relations, and old things being done away all things become new, &c..... Thirdly ; Our corrupt nature is changed in baptism, and there is a renovation effected thereby, both as to the mortification of the old affections, and the quickening of the new, by the Holy Spirit, which is hereby given to all that put no bar or impediment unto it. This was the Ancients' doctrine, who affirmed a real change to be wrought, and believed the Spirit to be therein bestowed as God had promised, (Ezek. xxxvi. 25, 26.) "That he would sprinkle clean water," &c..... And it is manifest that in the first ages of the Church there were abundant of gifts and graces miraculously bestowed upon Christians in their baptism, and no doubt if the catechumens of our days who are at age, would prepare themselves as strictly by repentance, fasting, and prayer, as they of old did, they should find incomparable effects of this sacred laver, if not in as miraculous measures, yet to as real purposes ; that is, they should be truly regenerated, and their hearts changed by the influence of the Divine Spirit. But some may doubt whether infants be regenerate in this sense, because they are not capable of giving any evidences of their receiving the Spirit, nor doth there any immediate effects of their regeneration appear ; hence the Pelagians denied it, but they are therefore condemned by the Milevitan Council, Can. ii. and confuted by St. Aug. ad Bon. lib. iii. It is confessed they can show no visible signs of spiritual life in the operations thereof, no more can they of their having a rational soul, for some time, and yet we know they have the power of reason within them ; and since all infants are alike, either all do here receive a principle of new life, or none receive it ; wherefore I see no reason why we may not believe as the ancients did, that God's grace (which is dispensed according to the capacity of the

suscipient) is here given to infants to heal their nature, and that He bestowed on them such measures of His Spirit as they can receive; for the malignant effects of the first Adam's sin are not larger than the free gift obtained by the second Adam's righteousness. (Rom. v. 15, 18.) And if it be asked how it comes to pass then, that so many children do afterwards fall off to all impurity? I answer, so do too many grown persons also, and neither infants nor men are so regenerated in this life, as absolutely to extinguish the concupiscence: for the flesh still will lust against the Spirit: but thus God gives the Spirit also to lust against the flesh. (Gal. v.)

KEN, BISHOP AND CONFESSOR.—*Exposition of Church Catechism*,  
p. 136.

Glory be to thee, O most indulgent Love, who in our baptism dost give us the Holy Spirit of Love, to be the principle of new life, and of love in us, to infuse into our souls a supernatural, habitual grace, and ability to obey and love thee, for which all love, all glory be to thee.

Glory be to thee, O compassionate Love, who, when we were conceived and "born in sin," of sinful parents, when we sprang from a root wholly corrupt, and were all "children of wrath," hast in our baptism "made us children" of thy own heavenly Father by adoption and grace; when we were heirs of hell, hast made us heirs of heaven, even joint heirs with thy own self, of thy own glory; for which, with all the powers of my soul, I adore and love thee.

PATRICK, BISHOP.—*On Baptism*, p. 441.

The sum of all is, that hereby we are regenerated and born again. It is the sacrament of the new birth, by which we are put into a new state, and change all our relations: so that whereas before we were only the children of Adam, we are now taken to be the children of God; such of whom He will have a fatherly care, and be indulgent and merciful unto. We have now a relation likewise to CHRIST as our Head, and to the Holy

Ghost as the Giver of life and grace. Yea, herein He grants remission of sin, and we are sanctified, and set apart to His uses. We being hereby given to Him, and He accepting of us, do become His possession and proper goods, and cannot without being guilty of the foulest robbery, sin against God. We are made hereby the temples of the Holy Ghost, the place where He, and nothing else is to inhabit; and being by this consecrated to Him, He likewise then enters upon His possession, and we are said thereby to receive the Holy Ghost; so that if we run into sin, we defile His house, and commit the greatest profaneness and impiety, and may be said very truly to do despite to the Spirit of God whereby we were sanctified.

BEVERIDGE, BISHOP AND DOCTOR.—*On admission into the Church by Baptism.* Vol. i. Serm. xxxv. p. 304.

But what he means by being “born of water and the Spirit,” is now made a question: I say now, for it was never made so till of late years. For many ages together none doubted of it, but the whole Christian world took it for granted, that our Saviour, by these words, meant only that except a man be baptized according to His institution, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God; this being the most plain and obvious sense of the words, forasmuch as there is no other way of being born again of water, as well as of the Spirit, but only in the Sacrament of Baptism.

To understand what He means by being born again, we must call to mind what He saith in another place, “My kingdom is not of this world;” (John xviii. 36.) though it is in this world, it is not of it; it is not a secular or earthly kingdom, but a kingdom purely spiritual and heavenly: “It is not meat and drink, but righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost;” (Rom. xiv. 17.) And therefore when a man is born into this world, he is not thereby qualified for the kingdom of God, nor hath any right or title to it, no more than as if he had not been born at all; but before he enter into that, he must be born again, he must undergo another kind of birth than he had before: he was before born of the flesh, he must now be born of

the Spirit ; otherwise he cannot be capable of entering into such a kingdom as is altogether spiritual. Thus our Lord himself explains his own meaning in my text, by adding immediately in the next words, " That which is born of the flesh, is flesh," &c. . . .As if He had said, He that is born, as all men are at first, only of the flesh, such a one is altogether carnal and sensual ; and so can be affected with nothing but the sensible objects of this world. But he that is born of the Spirit of God, thereby becomes a spiritual creature, and so is capable of those spiritual things of which the kingdom of God consisteth, " even of righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost." And he whose mind is changed, and turned from darkness to light, and from the power of Satan unto God, is truly said to be born again ; because he is quickened with another kind of life than he had before ; and to be born of the Spirit of God, because it is by it that this new and spiritual life is wrought in him. So that he is now born into another world, even into the kingdom of God, where he hath God himself, of whom he is born, for his Father, and the kingdom of God for his portion and inheritance. And therefore it is, that except a man be thus born of the Spirit, it is impossible he should enter into the kingdom of God, seeing he can enter into it no other way, than by being born of the Spirit.

But that we may thus be born of the Spirit, we must be born also of water, which our Saviour here puts in the first place. Not as if there was any such virtue in water, whereby it could regenerate us, but because this is the rite or ordinance appointed by CHRIST, wherein to regenerate us by his Holy Spirit ; our regeneration is wholly the act of the Spirit of CHRIST. But there must be something done on our parts in order to it, and something that is instituted and ordained by CHRIST himself, which in the Old Testament was circumcision ; in the New, baptism, or washing with water ; the easiest that could be invented, and the most proper to signify His cleansing and regenerating us by his Holy Spirit. And seeing this is instituted by CHRIST himself, as we cannot be born of water without the Spirit, neither can we, in an ordinary way, be born of the Spirit without

water, used or applied in obedience and conformity to His institution. CHRIST hath joined them together; and it is not in our power to part them : he that would be born of the Spirit, must be born of water too . . . . .

As baptizing necessarily implies the use of water, so our being made thereby disciples of CHRIST, as necessarily implies our partaking of His Spirit : For all that are baptized, and so made the disciples of CHRIST, are thereby made the members of His body ; and are therefore said to be baptized into CHRIST, (Rom. vi. 5. Gal. iii. 27.) But they who are in CHRIST, members of His body, must needs partake of the Spirit that is in Him their Head. Neither doth the Spirit of CHRIST only follow upon, but certainly accompanies the Sacrament of Baptism, when duly administered according to His institution. For as St. Paul saith, "By one Spirit we are all baptized into one body." (1 Cor. xii. 13.) So that in the very act of baptism, the Spirit unites us unto CHRIST, and makes us members of His body ; and if of His body, then of His Church and kingdom, that being all His body. And therefore all who are rightly baptized with water, being at the same time baptized also with the Holy Ghost, and so born of water and the Spirit, they are, *ipso facto*, admitted into the kingdom of GOD, established upon earth, and if it be not their own fault, will as certainly attain to that which is in heaven.

*Ibid.* p. 306.—This I would desire all here present to take special notice of, that you may not be deceived by a sort of people risen up among us, who being led, as they pretend, by the light within them, are fallen into such horrid darkness, and damnable heresies, that they have quite laid aside the Sacrament of Baptism, and affirm, in flat contradiction to our Saviour's words, that they may be saved without it. I pray GOD to open their eyes, that they may not go blindfold into eternal damnation. And I advise you all, as you desire not to apostatize from the Christian religion, and as you tender your eternal salvation, take heed that you be never seduced by them, under any pretence whatsoever ; but rather, if you be acquainted with any of them, do what you can to turn them from darkness to light, from the power of Satan unto GOD

again ; that they may obtain forgiveness of their sins, and inheritance among them who are sanctified by faith in Him, who saith, " Except a man be born of water," &c.

Not only a man, in contradiction to a child, or a woman, but as it is in the original, *ἐὰν μὴ τις*, except any one, any human creature whatsoever, man, woman, or child, " except he be born of water," &c. . . . So that our Lord is so far from excluding children from baptism, that He plainly includes them, speaking in such general terms, on purpose that we may know that no sort of people, old or young, can ever be saved without it. And so He doth too, where He commands, as was observed before, that " All nations should be made disciples by being baptized in the name of," &c. . . . For, under all nations, children must needs be comprehended, which make a great, if not the greatest part of all nations. And although these general expressions be sufficient to demonstrate the necessity of Infant Baptism, yet foreseeing that ignorant and unlearned people would be apt to wrest the Scriptures to their own destruction, He elsewhere commands children particularly to be brought unto Him, saying, " Suffer the little children," &c. (Mark x. 14.) But if the kingdom of God consist of children, as well as other people, they must of necessity be baptized, or born of water and the Spirit ; for otherwise, He Himself saith, " They cannot enter into the kingdom."

Hence it is, that we find the Apostles baptizing whole families, children, if any, as well as others : and the whole Catholic Church, in all places and ages ever since, hath constantly admitted the children of the believing parents into the Church, by baptizing them according to the institution and command of our Saviour ; none ever making any question of it, but all Christians, all the world over, taking it for granted that it ought to be done, till of late years.

SHARP, ARCHBISHOP.—Vol. v. Sermon v. p. 71.

There is the same relation between CHRIST and Christians, that there is between the vine and the branches ; the same necessity of communication of vital influences from the root to

the branch in the one as in the other : which communication of influences is made by the Holy Spirit of God, derived from CHRIST, and diffusing Himself into every particular member of the whole body of Christians. Hence it is Christians are so frequently called the Temples of the Holy Ghost. " Know ye not," saith St. Paul, " that ye are," &c. ; and, again, " Know ye not, that your bodies are the members, &c. which he explains presently after thus : " Know ye not that your bodies are the Temples," &c. And the same St. Paul, in the eighth to the Romans, lays the foundation of our relation to CHRIST, and our hopes of eternal life, in the very thing, viz. the Spirit of God his dwelling in us ; as may be there seen more at large.

This, then, being the privilege of all Christians, that by their being consecrated to CHRIST, they have a right to the continual presence of the Holy Ghost in their souls ; or, if you will, God hath so great a right and property in them, that He sends down His Holy Spirit to take possession of them, in order to the securing and sealing them for His own in the other world ; we may easily, from hence, gather what it is to *grieve the Holy Spirit*, (which is the thing we are now enquiring into,) viz. We then grieve Him, when being already Christians in profession, we either will not vouchsafe Him a lodging in our hearts, which He doth desire ; and, in order to the obtaining it, makes frequent applications to our souls by His holy motions ; or, when we have already given Him entertainment, we carry ourselves so unbecomingly towards Him, as to tempt Him to forsake us. We then grieve the Holy Spirit, when, having taken upon ourselves the covenant of Baptism, and thereby consecrated and consigned ourselves to GOD, we either refuse to admit the Spirit to take possession of us, or having admitted Him, do not show that respect, nor observe that decency, nor express that kindness, that is due to so worthy a guest ; but by our rude, and unmannerly, and ill-natured behaviour towards Him, put such affronts upon Him as highly provoke Him to quit his habitation.

SCOTT, PRESBYTER.—*Christian Life*, chap. ii. sect. i. p. 354.

Second sort of the Holy Ghost's operations, viz. that which

He ordinarily doth, and always hath done, and will always continue to do; for, upon the cessation of these His miraculous operations, the Holy Ghost did not wholly withdraw Himself from mankind, but He still continues mediating with us under CHRIST, in order to the reconciling our wills and affections to GOD, and subduing that inveterate malice and enmity against Him, which our degenerate nature hath contracted. For it is by this blessed Spirit that CHRIST hath promised to be with us to the end of the world. (Matt. xxviii. 20.) And CHRIST Himself hath assured us, that upon His ascension into heaven He would "pray His Father, and He should give us another Comforter," meaning this Holy Ghost, "that he might abide with us for ever;" (John xiv. 16.) and, accordingly, the Holy Ghost is vitally united to the Church of CHRIST, even as souls are united to their bodies. For as there is one Body, the Church, so here is one Spirit, *i. e.* the Holy Ghost, which animates that Body, (Eph. iv. 4,) and hence the unity of the Church is in the foregoing verse called the unity of the Spirit: because as the soul by diffusing itself through all the parts of the body, unites them together, and keeps them from flying abroad, and dispersing into atoms; so the Holy Spirit, by diffusing Himself throughout this mystical Body, joins and unites all its parts together, and makes it one separate and individual corporation. So that, when by Baptism we are once incorporated into this body, we are entitled to, and do at least, *de jure* participate of the vital influences of the Holy Ghost, who is the soul of it; and accordingly, as Baptism joins us to that body, of which this Divine Spirit is the soul; so it also conveys that Divine Spirit to us. So that, as in natural bodies, those ligaments which unite and tie the parts to one another, do also convey life and spirit to them all; so also in this mystical body, those federal rites of Baptism and the Lord's Supper, which are, as it were, its nerves and arteries, that join and confederate its members to one another, are also the conveyance of that spiritual life from the Holy Ghost, which moves and actuates them all. And hence the "washing of regeneration," and "the renewing of the Holy Ghost," the "being born of water and of the Holy Ghost," are put together as concurrent things; and in



Acts ii. 38. Baptism is affirmed to be necessary to our receiving the Holy Ghost ; and if by baptism we receive the Holy Ghost, that is a right and title to His grace and influence, then must the Holy Ghost be still supposed vitally united to the Church, whereof we are made members by our Baptism, and, like an omnipresent soul, to be diffused all through it, and to move and actuate every part of it by His heavenly grace and influence.

JENKIN, PRESBYTER.—*On Christian Religion*, vol. ii. p. 427.

Baptism is very agreeable to the nature of the Christian Religion, being a plain and easy rite, and having a natural significancy of that purity of heart, which it is the design of the Gospel to promote and establish in the world ; and it is fitted to represent to us the cleansing of our souls by the Blood of CHRIST, and the grace of purity and holiness, which is conveyed in this sacrament, and the spirit of regeneration which is conferred by it. Tit. iii. 5.

SHERLOCK, BISHOP.—Vol. ii. Disc. vii.

You see the power of Baptism, and the blessings that are annexed to it, to which all are entitled who partake in the Baptism of CHRIST : for Himself He was neither born nor baptized but for our sakes ; that the blessings of both might descend on us, who, through faith, are heirs together with Him of the promises of GOD.

By Baptism the gates of heaven are set open to us, and the way paved for our return to our native country. By Baptism we are declared to be such sons of GOD in whom He will delight, and whom He will appoint to be heirs of His kingdom. By Baptism we receive the promise of the Spirit, by which we cry, Abba, Father.

Are not these great privileges ? And is not here room for mighty expectations ? And yet how unsuitable to these claims do the circumstances of a Christian's life often appear ? He is upon the road to heaven, you say, and the gates stand open to receive him ; but how does he stumble and fall like other men, and sometimes lose his way, and wander long, bewildered in night and darkness ? Or, if he keeps the road, how lazily does

he travel, as if he were unwilling to come to his journey's end, and afraid to see the country which he is going to possess? The Christian only, of all men, pretends to supernatural power and strength, and an intimate acquaintance with the Spirit of God; and yet how hardly does he escape the pollutions of the world, and how often look back, with languishing eyes, upon the pleasures, riches, and honours of this life? And though he boasts of more than human strength, yet how does he sometimes sink below the character and dignity even of a man? Ye sons of God, for such ye are, how do ye die like the children of men, and how like is your end to theirs?

And what must we say of these things? Is the promise of God become of none effect? Is Baptism sunk into mere outward ceremony, and can no longer reach to the purifying the heart and mind? The fact must not be disputed; it is too evident, at least in these our days, that the lives of Christians do not answer to the manifold gifts and graces bestowed on them.

WALL, PRESBYTER.—*On Infant Baptism*, part ii. chap. vi.

I believe Calvin was the first that ever denied this place (John iii. 5.) to mean Baptism. He gives another interpretation, which he confesses to be new. This man did, indeed, write many things in defence of Infant Baptism. But he has done ten times more prejudice to that cause, by withdrawing (as far as in him lay) the strength of this text of Scripture (which the ancient Christians used as a chief ground of it) by that forced interpretation of his, than he has done good to it by all his new hypotheses and arguments. What place of Scripture is more fit to produce, for the satisfaction of some plain and ordinary man, (who, perhaps, is not capable of apprehending the force of the consequences by which it is proved from other places,) that he ought to have his child baptized, than this, (especially if it were translated in *English*, as it should be,) where our SAVIOUR says, that no *person* shall come to heaven without it? meaning, at least in God's *ordinary* way.

POTTER, ARCHBISHOP.—*Of Church Government*, chap. i.  
p. 14.

Whoever wilfully neglects to be made a member of the Christian Church, does, by necessary consequence, deprive himself of all the privileges which belong to it; just as in any civil corporation they who are not members of it can plead no right to any of its privileges. This has already been shown to be the sense of CHRIST, and the same is constantly affirmed by the Christian writers of all ages. "They who do not come into the Church [saith Irenæus] do not partake of the Spirit, but deprive themselves of life." For where the Church is, there is the Spirit of God. And in St. Cyprian's opinion, he cannot have God for his Father who has not the Church for his Mother.

Hence the privileges of the Christian Church, such as Remission of Sins, the Grace of the Holy Spirit, and Eternal Life, are commonly said to be annexed to Baptism, this being the constant rite of initiation into the Church. Thus, in Ananias's exhortation to St. Paul, "Arise, and be baptized," &c. . . . . St. Barnabas expressly affirms, that "Baptism procures remission of sins;" and proves, from the Scriptures, that they who are baptized, are received into God's favour, whereas all the rest of mankind lie under His displeasure. Peter thus exhorts his new converts: "Repent, and be baptized every one of you," &c. . . . . Our blessed SAVIOUR joins Faith and Baptism together, as necessary conditions of salvation: "Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit," &c. . . . . And in another place, "He that believes, and is baptized, shall be saved." From these, and like passages of Scripture, the Primitive Church constantly inferred, that where the Gospel had been sufficiently propounded, no man could be saved, without Baptism actually obtained, or earnestly desired. Whence Tertullian calls it the "happy sacrament of water, whereby we are washed from the sins of our former blindness, and delivered into eternal life." And Cyprian gives this reason, why the Baptism of infants should not be delayed so long as the eighth day after their birth, that

(since it is said in the Gospel, that “the Son of Man came not to destroy men’s souls, but to save them”) it is our duty, as far as in us lies, to take care that no soul shall be destroyed.

NELSON, CONFESSOR.—*Festivals and Fasts*, p. 115.

By this means [by Baptism] the children of believers are entered into covenant with GOD under the Gospel, as they were under the Law by circumcision; and that infants are capable of this federal relation, is plainly declared by Moses; (Deut. xxix. 11;) and since they are the offspring of Adam, and consequently obnoxious to death by his fall, how can they be made partakers of that redemption which CHRIST hath purchased for the children of GOD, if they do not enjoy the advantage of that method which is alone appointed by CHRIST for them to become members of GOD’s kingdom? For JESUS himself has assured us, “Except one be born of water,” &c. . . . . And therefore it was the constant custom of the Primitive Church to administer Baptism to infants for the remission of sins. And this practice was esteemed, by the best tradition, to be derived from the Apostles themselves.

WATERLAND, PRESBYTER.—*On Regeneration*. 2.

The second is the case of infants. Their innocence and incapacity are to them instead of repentance, which they do not need, and of actual faith, which they cannot have. They are capable of being savingly born of water and the Spirit, and of being adopted into sonship with what depends thereupon; because, though they bring no virtues with them, no positive righteousness, yet they bring no obstacle, no impediment. They stipulate, they enter into contract, by their sureties, upon a presumptive and interpretative consent: they become consecrated in solemn form to Father, Son, and Holy Ghost; pardon, mercy, and other covenant privileges are made over to them; and the Holy Spirit translates them out of their state of nature (to which a curse belongs) to a state of grace, favour, and blessing; this is their regeneration.

KETTLEWELL, PRESBYTER AND CONFESSOR.—*On the Creed—*  
 Article, *Forgiveness of Sins*, p. 685.

*Ques.*—For whose sake doth ALMIGHTY GOD allow us all this benefit of forgiveness ?

*Ans.*—For JESUS CHRIST, who, as you have seen, died for our sins, and gave His blood a ransom, to purchase for us this pardon of them. “He is set forth a propitiation,” &c. (Rom. iii. 25.) And thus we shall receive all this mercy for His sake, when, with the disposition before expressed, we devoutly pray to GOD for it in His name.

*Ques.*—By the promises of the Gospel, I see that this forgiveness is assured to all Christians upon the terms which you have described. But is it in any signs and tokens outwardly dispensed to them ?

*Ans.*—Yes ; both in the Holy Sacraments and in the sacerdotal Absolution. Which ways of ministering this forgiveness, as well as the forgiveness itself, are noted in some ancient Creeds : this article being thus professed in St. Cyprian’s Form at Baptism : “I believe the Remission of Sins by the Church.”

*Ques.*—Is this forgiveness dispensed to us in the Sacrament of Baptism ?

*Ans.*—Yes ; and that most amply, the water of Baptism washing off the stain of all former sins. “Be baptized, and wash away thy sins,” said Ananias to Saul ; “Repent, and be baptized for the Remission of Sins,” said St. Peter to the Jews ; and “He hath saved us by the Laver of Regeneration ;” *i. e.* the Water of Baptism, and the renewing of the Holy Ghost. (Tit. iii. 5.) So that whatever pollutions men had upon them, if they come to Baptism with true faith and repentance, they are thereby made clean again.

HICKES, BISHOP AND CONFESSOR.—*Christian Priesthood.*

It belonged to the Apostles and Presbyters, by virtue of their sacerdotal office and ministry, to be advocates and intercessors with GOD . . . . I need not insist upon their power of baptizing for the remission of sins with fasting and prayer, which was a

most solemn act of expiation for washing away all the past sins of the baptized.

JOHNSON, PRESBYTER.—*Unbloody Sacrifice*.—Vol. i. ch. ii.  
sect. 1. p. 165.

I think the only immediate effect of the Spirit in Baptism, is the remission of all sin, and removing our natural disability to the worship and service of GOD, and the sentence of condemnation under which we were all born: (Rom. v. 16.) and that other graces are wrought in us by that Holy Spirit, which by Baptism receives us under its protection, gradually, and according to the capacity of the recipient: and this doctrine I learned from those words of St. Barnabas, in his Epistle, cap. vi.: "After, therefore, that CHRIST had renewed us by the remission of our sins, he made us [in] another shape, so as to have an infant-like soul, even as he himself reformed us:" where he plainly makes renovation to consist in forgiving sins; and makes the new moulding, or reformation of our minds, to be not performed at the same time with the other, or all at once, but to be consequent upon the former renovation: and CHRIST is always thus reforming us, from our Baptism to our death. And I look on these words of St. Barnabas to be a better explication of the renovation, or regeneration of Christians by Baptism, than whole volumes of modern writers upon the same subject. And I may here very reasonably observe, that as the Holy Spirit is present in our Baptism, to seal the remission of sins, and to infuse the beginnings of Christian Life; for He is present in confirmation, to shed further influences on them that receive it, for the further suscitation of the gift of GOD bestowed in Baptism and in the Eucharist, as will hereafter appear at large for our further progress and increase in grace.

LESLIE, PRESBYTER AND CONFESSOR.—*On Water Baptism*, § 5.

The end of CHRIST'S Baptism was, to instate us into all the unconceivable glories, and high eternal prerogatives which belong to the members of His body, of His flesh, and of His bones, (Eph. v. 30.) that we might receive the adoption of sons. (Gal. iv. 5.)

Henceforth no more servants, but sons of God, and heirs of heaven! These are ends so far transcendent above the ends of all former Baptisms, that, in comparison, other Baptisms are not only less, but none at all; like the glory of the stars in presence of the sun, they not only are a lesser light, but when he appears they become altogether invisible.

And as a pledge or foretaste of these future and boundless joys, the gift of the Holy Ghost is given upon earth, and is promised as an effect of the Baptism of CHRIST: as Peter preached (Acts ii. 38.), "Repent, and be baptized," &c. And (Gal. iii. 27.) "As many of you as have been baptized into CHRIST have put on CHRIST."

This of the gift of the Holy Ghost was not added to any Baptism before CHRIST's, and does remarkably distinguish it from all others.

WILSON, BISHOP, CONFESSOR, AND DOCTOR.—*Maxims of Piety*,  
Vol. i. p. 310.

The Holy Spirit at Baptism takes possession of us, and keeps possession, till men grieve Him; then He forsakes us, and an evil spirit succeeds.

By Baptism we contract and oblige ourselves, all our life long, to complete and perfect the image of JESUS CHRIST in ourselves. The blessings and excellencies of Baptism:—It separates us from Adam, and engrafts us into CHRIST.—It is a resurrection from sin to grace.—It discharges us from the debt owing to the justice of God, by our sins, now fully satisfied by faith in the suffering and death of CHRIST.—It cancels the law of death and malediction which was against us.—In Baptism our sins did indeed die, and were buried; but the seed and root remain in us. These we are to mortify all our lives long.

BINGHAM, PRESBYTER.—*On Lay Baptism*, part. ii. ch. vi.

... What it [indelible character] was taken to signify in Baptism? For an indelible character was always supposed to be imprinted as much in Baptism as in ordination; though I do not remember that any ancient Council expressly used that term about

either, but only say something that may be reckoned equivalent to it ; and that is this, as it relates to Baptism : that a man, who is once truly baptized, can never do any thing that can so far erase or cancel his Baptism, as that he shall need, upon any occasion, to be re-baptized with a second Baptism. Thus far the ancients believed an indelible character in Baptism. Though a man turns his back on Christianity, and totally apostatize and fall away from the profession of it ; though he turn heretic or schismatick ; though he excommunicate himself, or be excommunicated by the Church ; though he embrace Paganism or Judaism, or any other opposite Religion ; though he curse and blaspheme CHRIST in a synagogue or in a temple, as many of the old apostates did ; though he become a *Julian* or an *Ecebolius*, and “trample under foot the Son of God, and count the Blood of the Covenant an unholy thing, and do despite to the Spirit of Grace ;” yet, after all, if this man turn again to Christianity, he was not to be received by a second Baptism. His repentance, and the Church’s absolution was sufficient in that case to re-instate him in his ancient profession, and he was not to be re-baptized to be made again a Christian. The Church had but one Baptism for the remission of sins, and the virtue of that was so far indelible, that it would always qualify the man that had received it, to be admitted to communion again after the greatest apostasy, only by a true repentance and reconciliatory imposition of hands, without re-baptizing. This was what the ancients understood by what we now call the indelible character of Baptism. But they were far from thinking, that a man who was such an apostate had any right or authority whilst he was an apostate, to challenge any of the common privileges of a Christian. They did not think, whilst he was a Pagan or a Jew, that he was properly a member of the Christian Church still, because of his Baptism ; or that he had any right to be called Christian, or to be admitted to the prayers of the Church, and much less to the communion with other faithful laymen : and yet, after all, there was so much of a *Christian* in him, by virtue of his Baptism, that he needed not to be baptized again as a mere *Jew* or *Pagan*. His Baptism was such as nothing could obliterate ; it would remain with him when he was an



apostate, and either go to hell with him to his condemnation, or bring him back to heaven and the Church by way of repentance, not re-baptization. Now, if any one should ask whether such an apostate, while he continued an apostate, was a Christian? the answer must be in the negative; but yet there is something of a Christian in this apostate, that is, his Baptism; in respect of which he is not so perfectly a no-Christian, as one that never was baptized.

SKELTON, PRESBYTER.—Vol. ii. Disc. xxi.

Our blessed Saviour and Mediator, who hath procured the benefit of this covenant for us by the “sacrifice of His Blood,” hath appointed the Sacrament of Baptism as the means whereby the contracting parties, God and the new Christian, solemnly plight their promises to each other; and hath likewise made the other Sacrament, that of His Last Supper, the seal which renews and confirms the covenant with every penitent transgressor. In both He communicates the assistance of the Holy Spirit, which “helps our infirmities,” and enables us, if we are not shamefully wanting to ourselves, to observe and perform the conditions promised on our part.

We have already seen, in general, what we are to expect as the fruits of peace with God; namely, eternal life, eternal happiness and glory. Our present assurance of this is represented in various lights by the Scriptures. We are made one with CHRIST, as He is one with the Father. We are united into one Church, or Spiritual Body, whereof “He is the head.” All together “we are the body of CHRIST, and members in particular.” Thus joined to Him, who is by nature the Son of God, we also become, by a “new birth in Baptism,” the adopted sons or children of God. “We have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba, Father:” and being taken into the family of God, are made His children by “faith in JESUS CHRIST.” The provision made for us is suitable to the grandeur of our new relation; no less than an eternal kingdom, “which it is the Father’s good pleasure to give us,” as His beloved children, and, consequently, “heirs of God, and joint heirs with CHRIST:” inso-

much that being one with Him, "where He is there shall we be also," partakers both of His nature, and of His inheritance in happiness and glory. We need not say, since these are the promises of God, that they cannot possibly fail of performance, provided we do our utmost to fulfil the promises made on our part.

HORNE, BISHOP AND DOCTOR.—Vol. ii. Disc. xviii.

The first portion of sanctifying grace is given at Baptism, which is the seal of justification, and the beginning of sanctification; inasmuch as the sinner being thus sacramentally buried with CHRIST into His death, arises with Him in the power of His resurrection, justified from the guilt of sin through repentance and faith in His blood, and renewed unto holiness by the operation of His Spirit. This total renewal, at first conferred by the baptismal laver, is styled *regeneration*, and answers in things natural to the birth of an infant. But then, as an infant, though born complete in all its parts, yet comes to its full stature and strength by slow and imperceptible degrees; by being supplied with proper kinds of food for its nourishment when in health, and proper medicines for its recovery when otherwise; so is it with the regenerate spirit of a Christian: while it is (as St. Peter calls it) a babe in CHRIST, it must be fed with the milk of the word; when it is more grown in grace, with the strong meat of its salutary doctrines; when it is infirm, it must be strengthened by the comforts of its promises; and when sick, or wounded by sin, it must be recovered and restored by godly counsel and wholesome discipline, by penance and absolution, by the medicines of the word and sacraments as duly and properly administered in the Church, by the lawfully and regularly appointed delegates and representatives of the Physician of souls. This gradual and complex work of our sanctification is carried on, through our lives, by the Spirit of God, given, in due degree and proportion, to every individual for that purpose. And it is marvellous to behold, as the excellent Bishop Andrews observes, how, from the laver of regeneration, to the administration of the *viaticum*, this good Spirit helpeth us, and poureth His benefits upon us,

having a grace for every season. When we are troubled with erroneous opinions, He is the Spirit of truth; when assaulted with temptations, He is the Spirit of holiness; when dissipated with worldly vanity, He is the Spirit of compunction; when broken with worldly sorrow, He is the Holy Ghost the Comforter. It is He who, after having regenerated us in our baptism, confirms us by the imposition of hands; renews us to repentance, when we fall away; teaches us, all our life long, what we know not; puts us in mind of what we forget; stirs us up when we are dull; helps us in our prayers; relieves us in our infirmities; consoles us in our heaviness; gives us songs of joy in the darkest night of sorrow; seals us to the day of our redemption; and raises us up again in the last day; when that which was sown in grace shall be reaped in glory, and the work of sanctification, in spirit, soul, and body, shall be completed.

JONES, PRESBYTER.—*On the figurative Language of the Holy Scriptures.* Lect. vi. p. 156.

As the Ark was prepared by Noah, so hath CHRIST prepared His Church, to conduct us in safety through the waves of trouble and the perils of the world, in which so many are lost. And as the waters of the flood carried Noah and his family into a new world after the old was drowned; so do the waters of baptism carry us into a new state with JESUS CHRIST, who passed over the waves of death, and is risen from the dead. And this practical inference is to be made in favour of the ordinance of the Church, that as the ark could not be saved but by water, so must all the Church of CHRIST be baptized.

*Ibid.* p. 167.—We know that Satan has not that sovereignty over baptized Christians as he hath over men in the state of nature. After baptism a Christian is no longer the subject of that tyrant, but the child of GOD, who undertakes thenceforth to conduct him through all the trials and dangers of this life to the inheritance promised to the fathers.

HEBER, BISHOP.—*Sermons in England.* xviii.

It (justification) is the same with that regeneration of which baptism is the outward symbol, and which marks out, wherever it occurs, (that it ordinarily occurs in baptism, I am for my own part firmly persuaded,) our admission into the number of the children of God, and the heirs of everlasting happiness. It is the commencement of that state of salvation, in which, if a man continues, death has no power over him, in as much as the grave, which our nature so greatly fears, is to him no extinction of life, but a passage to a life more blessed and more glorious.

JEBB, BISHOP.—*Pastoral Instructions.* Disc. vi. p. 112.

But how, may it be asked, are the benefits and blessings of spiritual regeneration conferred upon infants in their tender years? To this inquiry we need not be careful to reply: we need only state, that in this, as in various other instances, it hath pleased Almighty God to set limits to the presumptuousness of human curiosity; and thus, at once to try our humility and our faith. It is enough for us, rest assured, that God is now, and ever, the same all-good and gracious Parent; that, as in times past, it was “out of the mouths of babes and sucklings he perfected praise:” and as “He revealed unto babes those things which were hidden from the wise and prudent,” so He is, at all times, abundantly able to pour forth the dew of His blessing upon infants who are faithfully brought to the baptism of his Son. It is enough for us to believe and cherish the prevalent sentiment of the universal Church, as it has been maintained from the age of the Apostles, that at the time of baptism, a new nature is divinely communicated, and gracious privileges are especially vouchsafed, in such measure and degree that, whosoever are clothed with this white garment, may, through God’s help, “keep their baptism pure and undefiled, for the remainder of their lives, never wilfully committing any deadly sin.”

VAN MILDERT, BISHOP.—*Bampton Lectures,* vi.

Regeneration is represented, by a certain class of interpreters,

as an instantaneous, perceptible, and irresistible operation of the Holy Spirit upon the heart and mind; which, whether the person have been baptized or not, affords the only certain evidence of his conversion to a saving and justifying faith. By others, it is regarded as a continued and progressive work of the Spirit, or as a state commencing in baptism, but not completed until, by perseverance to the end, the individual has "finished his course, and is about to enter upon his final reward." Others again, separating what the Scriptures state to be joined together in the work of the new birth, maintain a distinction between baptismal and spiritual regeneration; the former taking place in the Sacrament of Baptism; the latter subsequent to it, and, whether progressive or instantaneous in its operation, equally necessary with baptism to a state of salvation.

But here the analogy of faith seems to be violated throughout. For how can any of these views of regeneration consist with the plain and simple notion of it as an entrance upon a new state, or a sacramental initiation into the Christian covenant? Nay, how can they consist with the terms and conditions of the covenant itself? If the Gospel be a covenant, admission into which, on the terms of faith and repentance, gives an immediate title to its present privileges, with an assurance of the spiritual helps necessary for the attainment of salvation; and if baptism be the divinely-appointed means of admission into that covenant, and of a participation in those privileges; is not the person so admitted actually brought into a new state? Has he not obtained that thing which by nature he cannot have? "And being thus regenerated and born anew of water and of the Holy Ghost," to what subsequent part of his Christian life can a term so peculiarly expressive of his first entrance upon it be with propriety applied?

MANT, BISHOP.—*Bampton Lectures*, vi.

Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, &c. . . . It should appear, I say, that he was here alluding by anticipation to the Sacrament of Baptism, which he intended to ordain: and to that supernatural grace,

which was thereby to be conferred through the instrumentality of water, and by the Holy Ghost ; adopting, not only the ceremony itself, which he meant to exalt to more noble and spiritual purposes ; but also the very term, by which the Jews had described the change wrought in the baptized, although he undoubtedly employed it, in a similar sense indeed, but in an infinitely more dignified sense. To the proselyte from heathenism to the Jewish faith, baptism had been a death to his natural incapacities, and a new birth to the civil privileges of a Jew : to him, who should be admitted to a profession of the Christian faith, and who should be “ born not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh,” &c. . . . . it was to be a death unto sin, and a new birth unto those spiritual privileges, which should accompany his deliverance “ from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God.” The Jewish proselyte had been baptized with water : the Christian was to be baptized, not with water only, but with the Holy Ghost.

OXFORD.

*The Feast of St. Michael and all Angels.*

---

[NEW EDITION.]

*These Tracts are continued, and sold at the price of 2d. for each sheet, or 7s. for 50 copies.*

LONDON: PRINTED FOR J. G. & F. RIVINGTON,  
ST. PAUL'S CHURCH YARD, AND WATERLOO PLACE.

1839.

---

GILBERT & RIVINGTON, Printers, St. John's Square, London.













